



## Acerca de este libro

Esta es una copia digital de un libro que, durante generaciones, se ha conservado en las estanterías de una biblioteca, hasta que Google ha decidido escanearlo como parte de un proyecto que pretende que sea posible descubrir en línea libros de todo el mundo.

Ha sobrevivido tantos años como para que los derechos de autor hayan expirado y el libro pase a ser de dominio público. El que un libro sea de dominio público significa que nunca ha estado protegido por derechos de autor, o bien que el período legal de estos derechos ya ha expirado. Es posible que una misma obra sea de dominio público en unos países y, sin embargo, no lo sea en otros. Los libros de dominio público son nuestras puertas hacia el pasado, suponen un patrimonio histórico, cultural y de conocimientos que, a menudo, resulta difícil de descubrir.

Todas las anotaciones, marcas y otras señales en los márgenes que estén presentes en el volumen original aparecerán también en este archivo como testimonio del largo viaje que el libro ha recorrido desde el editor hasta la biblioteca y, finalmente, hasta usted.

## Normas de uso

Google se enorgullece de poder colaborar con distintas bibliotecas para digitalizar los materiales de dominio público a fin de hacerlos accesibles a todo el mundo. Los libros de dominio público son patrimonio de todos, nosotros somos sus humildes guardianes. No obstante, se trata de un trabajo caro. Por este motivo, y para poder ofrecer este recurso, hemos tomado medidas para evitar que se produzca un abuso por parte de terceros con fines comerciales, y hemos incluido restricciones técnicas sobre las solicitudes automatizadas.

Asimismo, le pedimos que:

- + *Haga un uso exclusivamente no comercial de estos archivos* Hemos diseñado la Búsqueda de libros de Google para el uso de particulares; como tal, le pedimos que utilice estos archivos con fines personales, y no comerciales.
- + *No envíe solicitudes automatizadas* Por favor, no envíe solicitudes automatizadas de ningún tipo al sistema de Google. Si está llevando a cabo una investigación sobre traducción automática, reconocimiento óptico de caracteres u otros campos para los que resulte útil disfrutar de acceso a una gran cantidad de texto, por favor, envíenos un mensaje. Fomentamos el uso de materiales de dominio público con estos propósitos y seguro que podremos ayudarle.
- + *Conserve la atribución* La filigrana de Google que verá en todos los archivos es fundamental para informar a los usuarios sobre este proyecto y ayudarles a encontrar materiales adicionales en la Búsqueda de libros de Google. Por favor, no la elimine.
- + *Manténgase siempre dentro de la legalidad* Sea cual sea el uso que haga de estos materiales, recuerde que es responsable de asegurarse de que todo lo que hace es legal. No dé por sentado que, por el hecho de que una obra se considere de dominio público para los usuarios de los Estados Unidos, lo será también para los usuarios de otros países. La legislación sobre derechos de autor varía de un país a otro, y no podemos facilitar información sobre si está permitido un uso específico de algún libro. Por favor, no suponga que la aparición de un libro en nuestro programa significa que se puede utilizar de igual manera en todo el mundo. La responsabilidad ante la infracción de los derechos de autor puede ser muy grave.

## Acerca de la Búsqueda de libros de Google

El objetivo de Google consiste en organizar información procedente de todo el mundo y hacerla accesible y útil de forma universal. El programa de Búsqueda de libros de Google ayuda a los lectores a descubrir los libros de todo el mundo a la vez que ayuda a autores y editores a llegar a nuevas audiencias. Podrá realizar búsquedas en el texto completo de este libro en la web, en la página <http://books.google.com>

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>





D. North 1756.  
Read.



B.

ce

(104 yrs)

not in ESTC!

NUC: NM only  
(6 pctive)

published in  
39 weekly  
parts

Sabin 52417











B. Cole sculp

A N E W  
Universal Collection  
O F  
VOYAGES and TRAVELS.

Consisting of the  
Most Esteemed Relations

Which have been hitherto Published  
In all LANGUAGES.

Containing every Thing Remarkable in the  
Various Parts of the KNOWN WORLD.

ALSO THE  
CUSTOMS and MANNERS  
O F T H E  
S E V E R A L I N H A B I T A N T S.

---

Illustrated with MAPS, PLANS, and other  
COPPER PLATES, neatly Engraved.

---

In THREE VOLUMES.

---

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for W. OWEN, at *Homer's Head*, in  
*Fleet-street*. 1755.

RB23. a. 10841





---

---

# THE INTRODUCTION.

**T**O introduce a work of this nature to the public, it should seem requisite to give some account of the general design; to point out, the several and respective uses, for which it is intended; and the great advantages that may arise from reading of it with attention.

The design of the undertaking we may venture to affirm, is more perfect in the kind, than the plan of any collection of voyages and travels hitherto published: They either treat of particular countries, are too voluminous and expensive; or not methodically disposed; whereas this includes all, and is digested in the best order which can possibly be invented.

Here the Reader will find a complete system of relations, drawn up by eye-witnesses, with necessary remarks upon the validity of each; the merit of these accounts; their errors and deficiencies; the means by which they have been corrected and supplied by others; also see, how far the moderns have improved the discoveries of former ages; how the spirit of industry in extending commerce, has ranged from kingdom to kingdom, now fixing its residence in one nation, then in another. Here he will find all the voluminous collections of different voyages, and travels, reduced within a reasonable compass, and at the same time, proper care taken to preserve the spirit and substance of those relations; when the superfluous

and unnecessary parts are thrown aside, and disregarded. Here the reader will have the pleasure of perusing all the most authentic European writers on these subjects, namely, Hackluit, Purchas, Churchill, Harris, Green, &c. in English; Thevenot, Labat, Abbe Provost, &c. in French; Alamandini, Carreri, Ramusio, &c. in Italian; Co-real, Oviedo, Herrera, &c. in Spanish; Maffeus, Grynæus, De Brye, &c. in Latin; with the voyages under the direction of the Portuguese and East-India company in Holland; all which, he sees at one view, and is hereby enabled to make as ready use of above five hundred volumes, as if he only put himself to the trouble of taking down that very author he intended to peruse; he may also observe that what relates to useful points in general, is here clearly set forth, explained, and insisted upon; and enough preserved of the lives, fortunes, and particular adventures of the most eminent persons, to gratify his curiosity; without leading him a wild-goose chase, after matters of little consequence, and of no manner of service to the public.

We may reasonably offer something further in behalf of this design; which is of no small importance to the community. All the most eminent philosophers among the ancients; as well as the best judges among the moderns, are clearly agreed, that useful and universal science is the most likely to be attained, by visiting distant nations, and seeing the world. For this reason, travel in these days is become a part of education, as it experimentally instructs those gentlemen, who have gained as much previous knowledge, as they were capable of retaining from the perusal of the classics; but this being a privilege peculiar, made the lot  
of

of a few, and of such only as have it in their power to indulge the emanations of the mind, by adding experience to what they were taught in the schools; while the far greater part of mankind, are disabled from this accomplishment, tho' they stand altogether in as much need of the same knowledge: we have in this scheme contrived matters so, that they who move in a lower orb, whose circumstances are cramped, and run counter to their inclinations, may improve in this sort of useful knowledge at a trifling expence, by travelling upon paper, and go into what company, and whither the fancy leads them, without the least difficulty, danger, or inconvenience; thro' all points of the world.

In order to do this more effectually, our design it not only to convey all the instruction we possibly can; but also to convey it in the easiest and plainest manner, desiring to adapt it to the meanest capacities, and make knowledge as familiar as possible; which plainly shews how much depends upon the judgment and care of the compiler, who, on the one hand, is to furnish such materials, as may entertain, and delight; and on the other, to communicate such only, as may contribute to the reader's profit and improvement: But as in travelling it is necessary, that the person who goes in search of more wisdom should carry with him a tincture of the sciences; so in perusing of voyages, there are certain things to be first understood, before the rest can be read with pleasure, or advantage.

It is no uncommon thing in books of this nature, to take it for granted, that he who reads it, is as well skilled as he who writes, in the several branches of science, necessary to be known, in order to a true

comprehension of the performance: But we rather chuse, within the compass of this introduction, to explain the meaning of such terms as are made use of in the composition of the treatise, that the common reader may be enabled cheerfully to proceed, and we may remain free from the danger of being misconstrued. Know therefore, that Cosmography is that science which describes this globe, and the other parts of the solar system; Geography teaches the knowledge of the earth; and Hydrography that of the water.

The chief thing in Geography is to give a thorough knowledge of the relation, which any empire, kingdom, city, &c. hath to any other place, or to the world; which knowledge, could never have been acquired, if a method had not been discovered, to mark every particular point upon the globe, so that it might be certainly found without any difficulty. This is done by knowing the longitude and latitude of places, without a clear understanding of which, it is impossible for the reader readily to comprehend the description of any country; and as the making this matter obvious to an ordinary capacity, concerns our undertaking in the highest degree; we shall in this place not only shew how to find the longitude and latitude on maps; but make the use of it so plain, that they may be able from thence, to know how all parts of the world lie from their latitude; and their longitude being known, which is the grand thing aimed at, the bare perusal of this work with attention, may make a perfect geographer, without farther trouble.

The latitude of any city, &c. is its distance from the equator, which is reckoned on the meridian, and as every circle is supposed to be divided into  
360°,

360°, 10' a fourth part of the meridian is 90°, and must necessarily be included between the equator and either of the poles; now from hence arises the difference between north and south latitude: The number of degrees counted on the meridian from the equator towards the arctic pole, being called north latitude; for which reason, London is said to lie in 51°. 32'. north, and on the other hand, the number of degrees counted on the meridian towards the antarctic, is stiled south, and thus Lima, capital of Peru, lies in 120° 6' south.

Now by knowing the latitude of a place, we know its distance from the equator, and from both poles; but it being very evident that this knowledge, doth not point out to us, the part of the globe in which it lies; because numerous places are situated at the same distance from the equator; or in the same degree of latitude, we must have recourse to some other means of distinction, and this is stiled the longitude, which is reckoned upon the equator itself from a first meridian. Here in England we generally reckon the city of London the first meridian, and instead of counting as the ancients did, from west to east, we reckon both ways. For example, we say Oxford lies in the longitude of 1° 17' west from London, whereas the city of Warsaw in Poland, lies in the longitude of 20° 55' east from London. In like manner the French geographers reckon their longitude from Paris. Having thus far explained the meaning of these terms with regard to their use, we presume the reader can never be in danger of falling into mistakes on that account\*.

\* For a fuller account of geography, see Salmon's Geographical Grammar, and Harris's Use of the Globes.

Again,

Again, the different temper of air, and the different length of days, in the several parts of the globe, have occasioned the distinctions of zones and climates, which are also of great use. The term *Zone*, signifies no more than a girdle, and the several zones are distinguished by circles, that pass round the earth; of which the geographers reckon five, viz. the torrid zone, the north temperate zone, the south temperate zone, the north frigid zone, and the south frigid zone. The torrid zone is that part of the terrestrial globe, which lies between the two tropics; the north temperate zone lies between the tropic of Cancer and the arctic circle; the south temperate zone lies between the tropic of Capricorn, and the antarctic circle; the north frigid zone lies within the arctic circle; and the south frigid zone within the antarctic circle.

The ancients reckoned but seven climates; but the moderns have corrected this error, and carried the distance of climates to its utmost perfection: they reckon twenty four between the equator and the arctic polar circle, each of which increases by half an hour in the longest day. Now, as the longest day under the line consists but of twelve hours, it is evident that in the twenty-fourth climate, or under the polar circle, the longest day must consist of twenty-four hours: from hence to the pole they reckon but six, each of which differ in the length of the longest day a month; so that if the globe was habitable under the pole, the day and the night would be of the same length, and each consist of six months. By this distinction of climates, the reader is enabled to judge, how far one country is preferable to another, in regard to the products and commodities

modities, with a multitude of other curious particulars, which must immediately occur to every man of a tolerable capacity: nay, a small degree of diligence will conquer all these difficulties, and open such a field of knowledge, as must necessarily attract the mind of the generous and inquisitive. But, perhaps, it may not here be amiss to give an easy rule to find the climate, in which any place lies, without the assistance of globes or tables; it is as follows; subtract twelve hours from the longest day, and double the remainder, it will give the climate the place is in. These are the climates distinguished by days; there are six other northern climates, which are distinguished by months, the knowledge of which is of little consequence: the reader will soon enter into the extent of all their uses, and apply them with pleasure in the perusal of this work.

Thus much may be sufficient on this head. We proceed to shew how experience has, by degrees, made all nations sensible of the importance of trade; and to observe with how much ardour it is pursued, in every corner of the European world; and if according to the present system, the source of power is wealth, and that cannot possibly be attained without a strict attention to commerce; whoever would have a true notion of the influence of any people or government must be well acquainted with their character, and circumstances, in regard to commerce, and yet almost all the writers, who have undertaken to give an account of the present state of kingdoms and commonwealths, have been very neglectful in this point, the knowledge of which, is of much more importance, than many of those trifling particulars, for which they are too apt to value themselves. To supply this defect,

defect, we have furnished necessary materials, for the proper application of which, in order to extract from this collection, a general history of trade, we shall here lay down such rules, as we are fully persuaded, will appear both useful and agreeable; being what the nature of commerce in general points out. First, we must carefully enquire what are the natural commodities of the country, whose trade we are about to consider; the value and demand for such commodities in other parts, and the manner in which they are disposed of by the natives. This done; we are to enumerate their manufactures, observing whether they are employed in commodities of their own growth, or in such as are imported from abroad; strictly to examine into the number of hands employed, the nature of their employments, and the advantages, which their industry affords either to themselves in particular, or to the nation in general. The third thing to be enquired after, is, the sea ports, harbours of the country to which we trade; and the convenience and inconvenience of each, in point of situation. The fourth head leads us to consider the number of seamen employed herein, on which the wealth and power of a nation, in a great measure depends. The last point to be considered is that of colonies and plantations; with respect to which, we are taught to examine, how far they contribute to the advantage of their mother-state, the true use of colonies being to feed and support that government from whence they are derived. Thus much for the trading part of the work. We next proceed to shew the original foundation of the government of every nation, and the subsequent changes that have happened in them; these are the subject of their general history; than



than which, there cannot be a more useful, or pleasant study: but as this requires much labour to attain, with any great degree of perfection, we shall treat of the ancient history so concisely, as to connect it with, but leave the most room for the modern; being of opinion, that it is of more advantage to the present age, to be perfectly acquainted with the transactions which have occurred within the last century; than with what was done a thousand years ago.

With this view, we have in the following work spared no pains, to set forth the present state and condition of all the trading companies in Europe, so as to render it not only as useful, and perfect as possible; but also by carefully digesting therein all that has hitherto been published of superior merit, it is to be hoped, that such as are possessed of this, need never be under the necessity of purchasing any other collection, falling within the same space of time; or, of having recourse to other books for instruction, with regard to the discoveries and descriptions of countries.

As to the properties and phænomena of the loadstone, by the help of which modern navigation is rendered so much superior to that of the ancients both in its accuracy, and extent; we shall refer the reader to that admirable discourse of the late learned and ingenious Dr. Halley on this subject; which has done great honour to the nation, and fully supported that character, which it had before attained, of having done more, in respect to magnetical discoveries, than any other nation in Europe: And if once a method be found to establish a certain knowledge of the period of the variation of the needle, the easiest way of discovering the longitude will be found; which is, of all others,

others, the thing we most want towards completing the science of navigation.

This however we can never hope, till the princes of Europe lay aside their animosities, and unite in the generous, and pious intention of promoting the common advantage of all their subjects, by encouraging the study of those SCIENCES, which when perfectly understood, would open a way to many latent branches of commerce that might make the inhabitants of their respective dominions, both rich, and happy. When ever this true and laudable ambition shall be enthroned, and that false ambition which now rules them, subside, we may expect to see such great events, and another golden age restored.

But we can never expect this, till such time, as the minds of some men, are, in some degree, cured of certain prejudices, which too generally prevail: For example, can it be possible for any nation vested with the power of improving commerce and maritime force, to be so infatuated as to imagine that any thing else is more worthy her care and regard? No, surely, we will venture to assert, that extensive commerce is the one thing necessary in politics, which if pursued with spirit and diligence, all things else will be added unto us: It is ridiculous for such a nation to complain, that her manufactures decay, her people are idle, and her poor increase, or that her condition grows worse and worse; because it is in her own power to remedy all these grievances, by consulting her own interest, and carefully applying to that one thing, which, if well attended to, must certainly soon cure them all.

For a nation, like a private family, changes its condition and recovers from the pressures it formerly laboured

laboured under, by prudent oeconomy, and industry rightly applied : by industry with regard to a state, we would be understood to mean a strict application to trade and commerce, as in private life, we mean a willing application to business ; for both in public and private life, people may be industrious, that is eager, diligent, and active, not only to no purpose, but to mischievous purposes. For instance, the usurer takes as much pains to acquire money, as the fair trader ; but with this difference ; the richer he grows, the worse he deserves : should it be asked, for what reason he deserves ill ? We answer, because he seeks wealth in a way, which tho' useful to himself, is destructive to his neighbours ; and prejudicial to the public : for if money can beget money, and men can grow rich by watching the necessity of states, &c. the idle will at length eat the bread of the industrious.

It remains we should say something concerning the method in which these voyages and travels are digested ; and it is but justice to own, we have in this point, very nearly pursued the same plan as is laid down by the ingenious Dr. Harris, which we think is so natural, plain, and easy, that it is impossible the reader should be mistaken. In the first place, as the tour of the world is one of the sublimest enterprizes within the compass of human ability, we give an account, in order of time, of the most remarkable voyages that have been made round the globe, which afford a spacious field for many useful and curious observations. We then proceed to a distinct recital of the voyages made by the Portuguese for discovering and settling the commerce of the East and West-Indies ; without which the following relations could not be so easily com-

B

prehended.

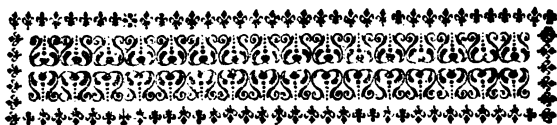
xiv      *The* INTRODUCTION.

prehended. We go on with the common division of the globe, beginning with the voyages that have been made to Greenland, and continue to recite all that has been observed in the northern parts of Europe, and so thro' the middle, southern, and eastern countries, to the borders of Asia. Then we proceed to give an account of that part of the world, as well of its maritime coasts as inland provinces. The same care is taken with regard to Africa, and therein the trade upon its several coasts is considered, with the manner in which it was formerly, and at present is, divided, among the European nations. Lastly, we pursue the same method with respect to America, shewing its first discovery, subsequent settlement, present condition, the commerce and importance of the Spanish, English, Portuguese, French, Dutch and Danish colonies in that country, and all that can be known, with any certainty, of those Indian nations, which have not yet been conquered. No more. Read, improve, and be delighted.

A New







A

# New Universal Collection

O F

## VOYAGES and TRAVELS.



**T**HAT the ancient sages, though very justly denominated the Fathers of Science, had no perfect knowledge of the terraqueous globe, is a truth, which may be incontestably proved: this wonderful discovery, with the bringing navigation almost to perfection, were reserved for the glory of the moderns, and are intirely owing to their superior skill in the mathematical sciences.

Many reasons may be produced, to prove the ancients were absolutely incapable of making any considerable discoveries at sea; but particularly the three following: 1. They had no true notion of the form, or figure of the earth. 2. They knew very little of the practical part of astronomy: and 3. They could make no long voyages, being ignorant of the wonderful properties of the loadstone.

With regard to the figure of the earth, all their learned men differed in opinion: from this variety of sentiment, they were unable to draw any just conclusions, with respect to the parts of the globe, which were then unknown, or of the manner of making any further discovery.

B 2

They

They were at a great loss likewise, with regard to their ignorance of the practical part of astronomy. Hipparchus, who lived about one hundred and fifty years before Christ, was the first who made any regular calculation of the fixed stars, and his tables were corrected by the famous Ptolemy three hundred years after: these tho' very erroneous continued in use for many centuries, and were at length, in part, rectified by Tycho Brahe, who flourished about one hundred and fifty years ago, without the help of the telescope, and yet these tables have not been found to err above two minutes.

But the greatest imperfection of ancient navigation, was their not knowing how to find, in any place, the four cardinal points, and the intermediate ones, as they became necessary, without which knowledge they could not possibly make any long voyages: for this reason they never durst venture into the main ocean, and therefore it is not to be wondered at, that America was to them unknown. Now, these defects are all remedied, and numerous other advantages gained, by the properties inherent to the loadstone, of turning its poles to the north and south: so that our mariners steer with courage and certainty; despise the old method of coasting, and fly to the remotest parts of the earth by the nearest road imaginable. By this assistant, the Portuguese made vast discoveries towards the East in the fifteenth century, which gave birth to that series of voyages and travels, by which the globe and all its parts, has been found out, and represented to us: from whence it is evident, that the whole is inhabited; and that the produce of the torrid and frigid zones are more valuable than those of the temperate.

In treating of the bold adventurers, to whom we stand indebted for these discoveries, it is but just that we should give the preference to the circum-navigators: in order to this we shall first take notice of that illustrious Genoese, who framed an idea of the possibility of the thing, and proved by a prior attempt, that it

wa3



was not only possible, but practicable; who in spite of the many prejudices which were raised against it, undertook to put that great design into execution, which he had not the felicity to perform.

---

## C H A P. II.

### *The voyages of Don Christopher Columbus.*

**C**HRISTOPHER COLUMBUS, whom the Spaniards call Colon, was born of an ancient family in the territory of the state of Genoa. He had an early inclination for the sea, began to make a great progress in the art of navigation, to enter into trade, and to draw charts, when he was very young. The fame of the Portuguese, for their great skill in maritime affairs, drew him into that kingdom, where he married, settled, and traded to Guiney. During his whole life he bore the character of a man, sober, studious, and devout, and it is very probable, that his strict application to the mathematics, and the numerous relations he had heard from sea-faring persons, prompted him to think of making new discoveries.

Tho' he did great services to the Spaniards, yet they envied his reputation, because he was of another country, and raised a number of stories to his prejudice, with design to make the world believe, that the glory of his enterprize was due to their own nation: but as all these tales have been proved sufficiently fabulous, we shall not trouble our readers with such useless repetitions.

The truth is this; Columbus imagining that the figure of the earth was spherical, thought it probable, that the quantity of land on one side, must necessarily require an equal balance of earth on the other; that the Portuguese having already discovered a large continent by sailing eastwards, it appeared to him evident, that there lay as much land undiscovered on the oppo-

site side, of which he had the greater certainty; it having been observed in the Cape de Verde islands, that the winds, for a stated season, blew always from the west, which he judged must be owing to a great quantity of land on the other side. From hence it appears to us plain, that his design was to sail round the world; and it is for this reason we place him among the circum-navigators, for tho' he did not sur-round the globe, he was, as far as we can learn, the first who thought it practicable, and paved out the way, by which it was effected. He first proposed his scheme to the state of Genoa, where it was rejected; then to John II. king of Portugal, in whose dominions he resided. Here commissioners were ordered to treat with him, who after having drawn from him all they could, advised his majesty to fit out a ship, and try if the thing was practicable; hereby to rob Columbus of the honour, and profit, arising from the discovery. This stratagem failing, thro' the want of courage, or skill in the persons employed, and Columbus being apprised of their intention, was highly incensed, in-somuch, as when the king would have treated with him a second time, he refused his proposal, and determined to make application to other powers.

In the same year 1485, Columbus having instructed his brother Bartholomew in his intended scheme, he dispatched him to Henry VII. then king of England, who was justly esteemed one of the wisest princes of the known world, in great expectation, that he would readily accept of a proposal, which manifestly tended to his advantage; and in the mean while he embarked for Spain on the same errand. Bartholomew fell into the hands of pirates, who plundered him of all his money and effects. On his arrival in England he fell ill of a fever, and was supported by charity. When he recovered from this indisposition, he applied himself to the making of maps, and by the sale of them, raised money enough to put himself into a condition to appear before the king in 1488. His majesty was pleased to receive him kindly, and actually entered into

into an agreement with him, in the name, and on the behalf of his brother Christopher. By virtue of this agreement, it should seem that our title to the new world is prior to that of Spain : but more of this hereafter. We now proceed to the story of Columbus.

On his arrival in Spain, he first communicated his design to Don Alonso Pinçon, the best pilot in that kingdom ; who convinced by the force of his reasoning, agreed to go with him, in case he brought it to bear. He next addressed himself to Juan Perez, a Franciscan friar, famed for his skill in cosmography, to whose indefatigable zeal, he was indebted for the success he met with at this court. Perez introduced him to two of the most potent nobles in Spain, namely, the duke of Medina Sidonia, and the duke of Medina Celi, who, if satisfied with his proposal, were able to employ him on their own account ; but he being an Italian projector, they would not comply with his desires, nor undertake the expedition at their own expence. However they shewed him great respect, and countenanced his application to their catholick majesties. In this attempt, he was again assisted by his old friend Juan Perez, who furnished him with recommendatory letters to the queen's confessor, called Ferdinand of Talavera, a friar of great knowledge, and honesty, who had the ear of their majesties to a high degree, by whom he was treated, more like a friend, than a stranger ; for he never ceased soliciting their majesties in favour of his scheme, till it was put into execution.

Columbus began his negotiations with their catholic majesties in 1486, by presenting a petition, setting forth the nature of his design ; the advantages that would arise from it, and the reward he expected, if it was crowned with success. The singularity of the project, joined to the mean appearance of the projector, whose circumstances were distressed, prevented his meeting at first with that encouragement which he expected. However he still continued his applications, and at length procured some, who were near the king's person, to present his majesty with a treatise, wherein his scheme

scheme was more largely explained; but this also proved of little effect. Some thinking men at last began to entertain a better opinion of Columbus's design: amongst these was Don Alphonso Quintaniglia, auditor of the revenue, who supplied him with money, and entertained him at his own table. He advised him to remain about the court, notwithstanding the many insults he had there met with; tho' it is certain this usage affected him to such a degree, that he twice determined to leave the kingdom; the first time, to go to England, to see how his brother Bartholomew had succeeded; and the last, to make a tender of his proposals to the king of France. But his friend the auditor, with great difficulty, prevailed upon him to stay, on promise of introducing him to Don Pedro di Gonfales di Mendoza, cardinal archbishop of Toledo. Hereupon his affair began to take another turn; and queen Isabella warmly adhered to his interest. Two obstacles still remained. The first was, how to raise money to defray the charges of this voyage, the king's treasures being near exhausted: but this difficulty was soon removed by Don Lewis di St. Angelo, an officer of the revenue, who offered to advance the greatest part of the money. The other, was Columbus's demands, which were thought exorbitant. He insisted upon being made viceroy of the countries, and admiral of the seas, he should discover: also to have the tenth of the clear profit, which should accrue to the crown of Spain from his labour; these were at last granted, and the articles of agreement signed, at the little town of Santa Fe, in the kingdom of Granada, April 17, 1492.

This done, Columbus had three vessels assigned him: first, the Admiral, which before he had her, was called the Gallega, and by him christened the Santa Maria, a ship with a deck: the second, called the Pinta, commanded by captain Martin Alonso Pinçon: the third was named Ninna, of which. Visconti Yannez Pinçon was captain, who advanced one half of Columbus's share of the expence, and was to be a fourth of the whole. The two last, were vessels without decks, and  
all

all of them carried no more than 120 men. About the latter end of July all things being ready, Columbus went to Palos, and embarked on board the admiral of his little fleet. Having a fair wind, he put to sea on Friday, Aug. 3, 1492. The next day the rudder of the *Pinta* got loose, which they made fast with cords, but could not preserve it long, so they put into port. The seamen would have interpreted this as an ill omen; but Columbus put it off, by telling them, "No omen could be ill, where the design was good." He took great pains also to instruct them in navigation, and to instil in them right notions of his undertaking, in order to cheer up their spirits.

On the 11th they arrived near the Canaries and tarried at the isle of Gomera till September 6, to refresh themselves, then sailed, tho' with some fear, the Portuguese, having fitted out three caravals, or vessels without decks to take them. September 7, they lost sight of land, and with that their courage likewise. Columbus gave them all the consolation in his power, and to do it more effectually he cheated them in the reckoning. Being sensible he had cowards to deal with, he wisely made use of this artifice. On the 14th, they first observed the variation of the compass. On the 16th they saw grass and herbs swimming on the surface of the water, and grasshoppers alive upon them, which caused them to believe they should soon see dry land again. The same presages continued the 19th and 20th. All this time the wind was favourable: But September 2, it turned S. W. and the faint-hearted Spaniards, began sorely to repent of venturing so far from home. They first blamed Columbus for bringing them thither, nor did they spare the king and queen in their fury, as persons too easy, and credulous, in sacrificing them to the wild notions of a Genoese. Nay, they told Columbus in plain words, that if he did not tack about, and make the best of his way home, he should go overboard immediately; for they were resolved to shift for themselves as well as they could, and trust to providence. The admiral answered these insolent threats of the rabble, with soft words,

words, and fair promises of great rewards, on condition, they would have a little more patience. But tho' he made shift to amuse them for some time, by crying out land; yet that calm was soon succeeded by a more violent storm than before, to appease which, Columbus was obliged to promise them to return home, if they did not discover land in three days.

Towards the evening of the first of those days he observed by the sun setting that they were near land, hereupon they shortened their sails, the very same night, saw light; and about two o'clock next morning, Don Rodrigo di Triana, one of the ship's crew, discovered land on the 11th of October, 1492, which they found to be an island of 15 leagues circumference, and one of the Lucayas, called by them San Salvador, about 950 leagues from the Canaries. They went on shore, sung *Te Deum*, and took possession of the place, in the name of king Ferdinand, and queen Isabella. The natives were surpris'd at the sight of such strange people, and much more at their ships, which they believed to be great living creatures. The Spaniards gave them caps, beads, and other toys, for which they paid themselves in things of a greater value. These natives were naked, of a middle size, and well-proportioned; their natural complexion was olive, but painted over with other colours, according to their fancies. They knew not the use of iron, nor the make of weapons, but innocently laid their hands on the edges of the Spaniards swords. The island abounded with parrots, and they scarce saw any other creatures. They told the Spaniards that they trucked for cotton yarn, and that the gold rings, which they wore in their nostrils, came from the south, where they would find a prince, whose subjects had plenty thereof.

October 15, they went to another island, which they called Santa Maria de la Concepcion. The 17th, they went to Ferdinanda, where the women wore only short cotton coats, to cover their nakedness. After this, they came to another island which they named Isabella, of which, as of all the rest, they took solemn possession;

possession; behaving justly to the inhabitants. From hence they sailed to Cuba, which the Indians told them afforded gold, pearl, and other rich commodities. Here Columbus sent two Spaniards with two Indians to search the country, who coming to a town of about 50 houses, the simple natives honoured them with incense, as if they had been deities. Here they saw cotton grow, with several kinds of strange birds, and trees; but what the Spaniards most minded, was the gold which they saw in the Indian's noses, about which they were very inquisitive. The Indians honestly answered, Cubanacan, which signifies, that they had it out of the midst of Cuba. The Spaniards thinking that by the word Can, they had talked of the great chan of Cathay, Alonso Pinçon left Columbus, and went himself in search of Hispaniola, which was then by the natives called Hayti. He took from hence a woman, born in the island, and treating her well, she became a serviceable agent on their behalf; insomuch, as by her means, there was, at length, a good correspondence settled between the Indians and Spaniards here, the king inviting Columbus to come on shore. Hereupon a fort was built upon this island, to maintain the Spanish title thereto, and 38 soldiers left in garrison: after this, Columbus prepared all things necessary to return home, desiring the men whom he left in the fort to carry it civilly to the Indians, and their king. Wednesday January 17, he sailed from Cuba, and tho' he met with bad weather in his passage, arrived at the port of St. Mary, one of the Azores on February 15, 1493. Soon after he returned to Spain, where he was kindly received by the king and queen; who made him sit down in their presence, the greatest honour a subject can receive in Spain. The success of this voyage, engaged their catholic majesties to send him back in the autumn of the same year, with a squadron of 18 sail, with which he made further discoveries, and which served to confirm his opinion, that the countries he before had discovered, were islands on the other side of the continent, to which the Portuguese traded, and this it was, that

that determined him, to give them the name of the West Indies. But in his third voyage he gained some knowledge of the continent, and being informed, there was a sea on the other side, he owned his mistake, and declared, that he had really found a new passage to the East Indies. This was a manifest proof of his great sagacity, and fully justifies our placing him at the head of the circum-navigators; for the ingenious Mr. Boyle, with good reason observes, that we are little less indebted to Columbus for the discoveries made after his death, than for those made by him while living; since they all were the improvements of that doctrine, which he first devised, and afterwards executed with success.

Never man was better qualified, for the great designs he undertook, than Christopher Columbus; but the gravity of his behaviour, and the strict discipline he kept up while it was in his power, raised him enemies among a mutinous crew, and these disputes occasioned appeals, from both parties, to Spain, whereupon one Francis Bobadilla was sent over to enquire into these affairs. This man, to gratify a bishop, who had taken some dislike to Columbus, caused the admiral, with his brethren to be seized, put them in irons, and sent them in that condition to Spain. They arrived at Cadiz, November 25, 1500; and as soon as their catholic majesties were informed of the usage the admiral had met with, they ordered him to be set at liberty, expressing great concern for his sufferings, especially the queen, who was his sincere friend. However, it was some time before he could procure a new governor to be sent to Hispaniola: at length having gained this point; he with greater difficulty got leave to make a fourth voyage for discoveries. In this his last voyage to the West-Indies, he first saw the continent; lying at anchor at the Bastimentos. This discovery was made in 1502, but before he could be thoroughly acquainted with the state of the country, he was forced to alter his course, and steer for Hispaniola. While he remained here, new disputes arose, and he resolved to return to Spain, to acquaint their



their majesties of the further discoveries he had made. At the latter end of the year 1504, he came for the last time into Spain. On his arrival, he was first informed of the death of queen Isabella; this news struck him to the heart, and his health visibly declined from that very instant: however, he did not cease to apply himself to the court, where he was treated with great respect, and fair words; yet the sense he had of the king's coldness, and the Spanish courtiers ingratitude, made such an impression upon him, that he died of a broken heart, a few months after, on May 20, 1506, and was buried at Valladolid with the utmost pomp and splendor. But the admiral himself had taken care, before his interment, to perpetuate the memory of his ill treatment, for he ordered the irons which he had wore to be put in the coffin with him. After his death, the spirit of envy, which pursued him while living, ceased. The uncommon fortitude of mind, with which he resisted all the insults of his enemies, calls to our memory the famous story of the Egg. When it was known at court, that the king carried it cold towards him, most of the nobility affected to depreciate his merit, to which notions the Pinçons contributed not a little; alledging, that it was owing to their superior knowledge, that the discovery was made. Columbus, being previously informed of this, and one day invited to a public dinner at court; after having endured this sort of raillery, for a considerable time, without speaking a word; at last called for an egg, and shewing it to the company, asked, if any person present could set it upright on the lesser end? they unanimously answered that it was a thing impossible, and what he could not do himself. Hereupon he took it in his hand, struck the sharp end gently on the table, and it stood upright. They all fell into laughter, crying out, any body could have done so. "I don't doubt that, replied Columbus, and yet none of you thought of it. Thus it was I discovered the Indies: I first formed the design of steering that course, and now every miserable pilot can find the

C

" way

“ way thither. Many things appear easy when known,  
 “ which before seemed impracticable. Reflect on the  
 “ insults I sustained on account of my design, before  
 “ it was executed : it was then a dream, a delusion, a  
 “ chimera, but now is nothing more than what any  
 “ body else might have performed.” When the king  
 was told this story, he seemed highly pleased with  
 Columbus, and said that he admired his magnanimity ;  
 tho’ at the same time he meditated his destruction \*.

---

### C H A P. III.

*The voyages of Ferdinand Magellan, from the South  
 Seas, to the East Indies.*

**T**HE discoveries made by Columbus, under the  
 king of Spain’s commission, occasioned the  
 Portuguese, to be exceeding jealous of their possessions  
 in the East Indies : but the pope having, at that time,  
 a decisive authority over the princes of his persuasion,  
 decreed, by a bull, all countries discovered in the east,  
 to Portugal ; and such as were discovered in the west,  
 to Spain ; yet this rather damped, than extinguished  
 the flame of contention, and gave birth to another mis-  
 chief, which was, that such enterprising geniuses as  
 were not received kindly at one court, instantly applied  
 to the other. Among those, who sought by these means  
 to advance their fortunes, was Ferdinand Magellan, a  
 gentleman of a good family in Portugal, who, when  
 young, applied his talents to maritime affairs, and grew  
 very well skilled in the theory and practice of naviga-

---

\* *On his tomb.*

*Per Castilla, y por Leon,  
 Nuevo Mundo halló Colon.*

*Castille, and Leon, to Columbus owe  
 That world, his wisdom only could bestow.*

tion.

tion. He was also courageous, good-natured, and eloquent ; had a steadiness of soul, and resolution sufficient to overcome all difficulties, seemed by nature formed for great exploits, and accordingly acquired immortal glory. He served with great credit, under the famous Albuquerque in the Indies, and imagined that he deserved some reward for those services : however, all his applications were received with contempt. This usage made him associate himself with persons of merit who had shared the like fate ; particularly with one Ruy Falero, a noted astronomer, with whom he retired to Spain, and made proposals of new discoveries to cardinal Ximenes. The Portuguese ambassador there, left no stone unturned to defeat their intentions ; tho' underhand he offered Magellan his pardon, and a great reward, if he would return, and serve his own sovereign. All this, however, availed but little. The Spanish ministry, who were very good judges in these affairs, immediately received them both into favour, granted them their own terms, and made them knights of the order of St. James.

The grounds they went upon were, that the position laid down by Columbus, of the possibility of gaining the East Indies by sailing west was true. The Terms granted were, that the undertakers should have the 20th part of the clear profits ; that the government of any islands they should discover, should remain to them and their heirs for ever, with the title of Adelantados ; and that the king should furnish them with five Ships, 234 men, and provisions for two years. Among the men there were 30 Portuguese, upon whom Magellan chiefly depended. The names of the ships and commanders were, the *Trinidad*, which was the admiral, having on board Stephen Gomez, a Portuguese pilot ; the *St. Antonio*, commanded by Don Juan de Carthagena ; the *Santa Vittoria*, under Don Lewis de Mendoza ; the *Conception*, under Don Jasper de Quixida ; and the *St. Jago*, of which Don Juan Serrano was commander, who quitted the king of

Portugal's service, in the same manner as Magellan had done, and upon whose skill he greatly relied.

They sailed from Seville August 10, 1519, and arrived between Cape Verd and the islands of that name, on the 3d of October; they were becalmed about the coast of Guiney for 70 days, on endeavouring to cross the line. This done, the south pole appeared above the horizon, and they pursued the south course, till they reached that part of the main of Brasil which lies in 22 degrees. Having made  $2\frac{1}{2}$  degrees more south latitude, they came to a country inhabited by a sort of wild people, who were of a vast size, and made a hideous roaring, more like bulls than human creatures; and yet notwithstanding all that mighty bulk, they were so very nimble, that none of the men could overtake them. Here was a fine river of fresh water, whose mouth was seventeen leagues wide, and contained seven islands; in the largest of these they found some jewels, and gave it the name of St Mary. They coasted along this tract of land, towards the south pole, and came to two islands so full of seals and pengwins, that in the space of an hour they could have laden their whole fleet with them. They next advanced to  $49\frac{1}{2}$  degrees south latitude, where they were locked up by hard weather, and took up their winter quarters for five months in a very unpleasant country, which they believed was uninhabited; but at length a brisk jolly savage, came to pay them a visit, singing and dancing all the way. When he got to the haven, he stood still, and threw dust upon his head, which being observed, the admiral ordered some men to go ashore to him, who shewing the like tokens of peace, he readily came on board with them. He was of a gigantic stature, so as the head of one of the Europeans reached but to his waist, and his body was proportioned to his height; but frightfully painted all over, more especially his face. He had a stag's horn drawn on each cheek, and red circles around his eyes, the other colours were yellow, but his hair white; his cloathing was the skin of a strange beast, clumsily sewed together.

ther, all of one piece from head to foot. He brought with him a stout bow and arrows, the string of the former, was the gut or sinew, of that monstrous creature, with whose skin he was covered, and the arrows, instead of iron, were headed with sharp stones. Magellan made him drink and eat, and he was highly pleased with his entertainment, till he happened to see himself in a looking-glass, that was given him among other toys. This frightened him to such a degree, that in starting back, he threw down two men, who stood behind him. The giant, however, went off so well pleased with his treatment, that they soon had more of the like visitors, insomuch as the admiral was desirous of making some of them prisoners, which he did by the following artifice. The men filled their hands with such baubles as pleased them, and at the same time put iron shackles about their legs, which they thought very pretty play-things, till they found themselves betrayed.

In this port they remained five months; it was called St. Julian, of which they took possession, and left a cross erected in token of it. To the people the admiral gave the name of Petagons. The chief reason of their long stay here, was a conspiracy which broke out, not only among the common seamen, but also among the commanders, particularly captain Mendoza, upon whom Magellan greatly depended. In this affair the admiral acted with great resolution; he brought them to a trial for plotting against his life; caused Mendoza, with others who were the most criminal, to be hanged; and left Juan de Carhagena, with those who appeared to have been drawn into the conspiracy among the Petagons. The conspirators being subdued, and the weather growing pretty fine, Magellan pursued his course till he arrived in 51 deg. 40 min. south latitude. Here they found a convenient port, met with fresh water and good provisions, and after spending two months more at this place, they came to 52 deg. south latitude, and discovered the entrance into the streights: at the end of which they found an

open passage into the vast ocean. At this sight Magellan was transported with joy, being now able to demonstrate his sailing round by the west. The point from whence he beheld this prospect, he christened by the name of Cape Desiderato. But tho' he was so much delighted with this sight; it did not appear so desirable to all the rest of the company; for at this place one of the ships stole away, and returned home alone. December 28, 1520, they entered into what they called the Pacific Sea, in which they sailed three months and twenty days, without seeing land: a great part of this time they were reduced to great misery, for want of provision, having nothing left to eat but pieces of skins and leather, which being impossible to eat, till they were some way softened, they steeped them in salt water, to fit them for chewing, and then fell greedily to work upon them, as long as they lasted. This impure sort of food, and scanty also, impoverished their spirits, and lessened their number. The only consolation, under these shocking circumstances, was continual fair and fine weather. The winds blew them gently along, and when they came within 20 deg. of the south pole, they discovered an island of a prodigious height, named Cipangue, and at 15 deg. another, full as high, called Sumbdit. When they had passed the equinoctial line, and were got into 12 deg. of north latitude, and 146 longitude; from their first setting out, they fell in with a cluster of islands \* on the 6th of March. Here they went ashore to refresh a while, after the fatigues of this tiresome voyage from the south sea: but the thievish inhabitants would not let them alone; for while they were reposing themselves on the island, they would be stealing things out of their ships; so they resolved to make no long stay here, but find out some other place where they might enjoy more ease and safety. There is not the least shew of government among these people, every man does what seem-

---

\* *Magellan called these islands, Iltas de los Ladrones, and in the Latin account of his voyage Insulæ Latronum, or Islands of Thieves, which name they call bear.*

eth good in his own eyes, and the general corruption of their manners, sets them all upon a level, and makes a perpetual anarchy among them. The men go entirely naked, all parts being alike exposed to view. The hair of both their heads and beards is very black, the former very long and reaching down to their waist. Their natural complexion is olive, their teeth are coloured black and red ; and some of them wear a bonnet on their heads, made of the palm-tree. The Women are much better featur'd than the men, and more modest also. They wear coverings made of the inner bark of the palm-tree. Their hair is black, thick, and so long as to trail upon the ground. Their houses are built of timber, and covered with boards, and large fig-leaves, and divided into several rooms. Their beds are mats made of the palm-tree, and the leaves serve them for sheets. They have no weapons but clubs and long poles headed with horn. They feed upon fowl, cocoas, bannanas, sugar-canes, figs, and flying fish. They are always painted over of some colour as they like, and are extremely fond of any trifling thing that is new, and pleases their fancy. When the Spaniards pierced them through with their arrows, these being to them strange things, they would draw them out of their wounds, hold them in their hands, and stare at them, till they fell down dead.

On the 10th of March, 1521, they landed upon the island of Zamal, 30 leagues from the Ladrones, and the next day went ashore at Human, an uninhabited island, where they found abundance of fruit-trees, gold, white coral, and springs of delicate water. Not long after, the inhabitants of some of the neighbouring islands came to them, who behaved very friendly, seemed glad to see them, brought them fish, and wine made of the cocoa-tree, promising other provisions in a short time. In this place it may not be improper to shew how many conveniences of life are furnished by the cocoa-tree, and to what various uses these people put it to. This tree supplies them with bread, oil, vinegar, and phyfic. The wine comes from the tree, all the rest are made of the fruit. They cut off a branch of the tree,

tree, and fasten to the part left behind a large reed, into which drops a liquor like white wine in colour, and gratefully tart to the taste. This is put up in a vessel and called cocoa wine, without farther preparation. The fruit is as large as a man's head, has two rinds, the outmost is green, an inch thick, and full of strings; of which they make all their cords. Under this rind lies the shell, which being burnt and powdered is a cure for several distempers. The kernel is white, and in taste like an almond, which they dry and make into bread. In the middle of the kernel, is a hollow full of clear water of a cordial nature. When they make oil, they steep the fruit in water till it putrifies, then boil it to an oil. The vinegar is the same water exposed to the sun. If they mix the kernel with the water in the cavity, and strain it thro' a cloth, it makes good milk. These trees will live a 100 years, and two of them, if tapped by turns, will afford wine sufficient to serve 10 persons.

But to return to the adventurers. This people, pursuant to promise, came again with other provisions, and entered into a friendly correspondence with them. They invited the admiral on board their barks, and were accordingly invited on board the admiral, who discharging a great gun to welcome them, they were so terribly frightened, that it was with much ado they could be kept from leaping over-board. Their island was called Zulvan, not large, but considerable for its products. In their barks they had all manner of spices, and several things made of gold, which they carried up and down, and sold for merchandize. They were without cloaths, and yet grander dressed than the Europeans. They had gold ear-rings in both ears, jewels fastened with pieces of gold to their arms, daggers, knives, and lances, all richly ornamented with gold. But tho' they wore no garments, they had a covering before, of a sort of cloth, made of the rind of a tree which grows in their island. The great men are distinguished by a piece of silken needle-work wrapped round their heads. They are gross-bodied, middle-sized, and of an olive colour.

March



March 25, they departed from this island, and on the 28th of the same month arrived at the isle of Buthuan, where they were nobly entertained by the king, and the prince his son, who made them presents of large quantities of gold and spices. The admiral in return gave the king two vests of cloth, one red, the other yellow, made in the Turkish fashion; and to some of his courtiers knives, forks, and beads of chrystal: he also sent two of his company ashore with him, one of whom, named Antonio Pigafetta, wrote this relation. His majesty's palace was like a hay-loft, covered with palm, and fig-leaves, raised so high on great timber posts, that they were forced to get in by ladders. Tho' they are no christians; at their meals, they make the sign of the cross, and sit upon their legs like taylors. After they had been entertained by the king and his son, and received from them noble presents, they were both dismissed. In this island, as they sifted the earth of a mine, they found lumps of gold, some as big as nuts, others as large as eggs; of which metal, all the king's utensils were made. The king was a very comely person, his hair black, his complexion olive. His body was painted of various colours, he had rings of gold in his ears, and three on every finger. His head was wrapped with a filken veil, and a piece of cotton wrought with gold, and silk, covered the forepart of his body to the knees. He wore a long dagger by his side, with a haft of gold, and in a scabbard of carved wood. The men are active, but quite naked; the women are covered from the waist downward, and both wear gold ear-rings. They are always chewing areca, and say it keeps them alive: it is a fruit like a pear cut in slices, and rolled up in the leaves of a tree, called betele, like bay-leaves. At their departure from hence, the king's pilot brought them to several isles, of which Zubut had the best trade: tho' they found in another, called Messana, dogs, cats, hens, hogs, goats, rice, millet, barley, figs, ginger, cocoa, oranges, wax, and gold, in great plenty. They staid here eight days, and then sailing N. W. came to the isle of Caleghan, where there

there are bats as big as eagles, which, when dressed, taste like a hen. Here are also doves, and a sort of fowl like hens with little horns, which lay their eggs a cubit deep in the sand, for the sun to hatch. Caleghan lies about 20 leagues, W. of Messana, and from thence to Zubut is about 50 leagues, whither they were bound, having the king of Messana on board, who out of pure friendship came with them,

They entered the port of Zubut on the 7th of April about noon, and coming near the city, the admiral fired all his guns, which put the inhabitants into a panic : but their dread of danger from the ships was soon removed, by the arrival of their ambassadors in the town, who assured the king, it was usual with them to discharge their cannon, by way of compliment, when they came into any noted port. They told him also what a mighty prince they were servants to, and that they were sent to discover the Moluccas : but being informed of his grandeur, by the king of Messana, they called by the way, and desired him to furnish them with provisions for other commodities. The king bid them welcome, but told them it was his custom to receive tribute from all ships that came into that Port, which the ambassador positively refused, saying, that his admiral was servant to the greatest prince in the world, and that if he would not readily accept of peace, war would be the consequence. A Moor, who stood by, told the king, they were the Portuguese, that had conquered Calicut and Malacca, and advised him to be cautious of provoking them. Hereupon the king left the matter to his council, and promised to give them his answer the next day ; sending them away with some wine and victuals. The king of Messana, who was also a potent prince, went ashore the next day, and generously espoused their interest with the king of Zubut. The result of this interview was, that the king instead of receiving, was now almost ready to pay tribute ; which not being insisted upon, but only liberty to trade, it was cheerfully granted, and the king offered to sign a treaty of peace and friendship with his blood.

blood. This over, the two kings came on board the admiral with presents, and the league was ratified. Here, after some religious conversation, the admiral persuaded them to be baptized into the christian faith, to which they all, with pleasure, consented. This example of the king influenced the whole island, and from that time christianity was there established. The baptism of these princes was performed with great solemnity. The king of Zubut was named Charles; The king of Messana was christened John, and the Moorish courtier, Christopher. Besides these princes and the rest of the great men, who were about the king's person, the queen, her daughter, and 40 of her ladies, with 500 of inferior rank, were baptised at the same time. All the idols were taken down, and the cross set up in many places, before which the admiral persuaded them to pray, both morning and evening, so that in eight Days time all the island became christians, excepting one village of idolaters, who would not obey the king's edict: the Spaniards therefore burnt the place, and erected a cross in its ruins, and to shew the wonderful effects of christianity among the people, who had been baptised, says our Spanish author, a miraculous cure was performed upon the king of Zubut's brother, on his being initiated into the faith of Christ. These people are just in their dealings, and know the use of weights and measures. They say, there is a water fowl in this island, about the size of a crow, which they call Lughan, and add, that the whales sometimes swallow it alive, and have their hearts eaten up by this bird; by which means many of them are killed, and the Lughan is afterwards found alive in the carcase. This fowl is black, but good to eat.

Not far from Zubut, lies the isle of Mathan, whose natives go quite naked, except a thin covering over the pudenda, at which part, all the males hang gold rings, the skin being pierced for that purpose. They take as many wives as they please, but only one has the management of the house. Their ceremonies in sacrificing to the sun are very odd. They begin with  
ringing

ringing of bells, then spread a cloth upon the ground, and set thereon plates of honey, rice, and baked fishes. Then two old women offer up a hog, sing and dance round it, and sound trumpets made of reeds. After mumbling out prayers with several antic gestures, they pour a cup of wine upon the hog, and one of the venerable priestesses kills him with a lance; then puts a lighted lamp into his mouth, which continues burning till the ceremony is over. The other puts the trumpet in the blood, and with her finger marks the forehead of her husband, and of all the men who assist at the sacrifice. This done, they pull off their priestly robes, and fall to eating the rice, fish, and honey, of which none but the women partake; the hog is not touched till the two priestesses have craved a blessing upon it. When a great man dies, all the chief women repair to his house, and take with them boughs and pieces of cotton, which they fasten about the corpse, and sit round it cloathed in white cotton; then a person comes and cuts off the dead man's hair, by a little at a time, while his chief wife lies upon his body, with her face, hands, and feet, to his; crying all the time his hair is cut off; but when this is done, she changes her funeral sighs into a merry song. The ceremony lasts five days, after which they inclose the corpse in a dormitory of wood, close joined on every side. This island was formerly governed by two kings; one of whom refusing to pay tribute to the other, the admiral interposed in the quarrel, and went out to bring him to subjection. The Indian had between 6 and 7000 men, armed with bows, arrows, darts, and javelins, whom the admiral attacked with 60 Spaniards, armed with helmets, and coats of mail. The battle was for a long time very dubious, at last the admiral's courage so far prevailed, as to carry him too far among the Barbarians, who first wounded him with a poisoned arrow, and then thrust him thro' the head with a lance. Eight of his men were killed, and no more than 15 of the enemy, besides those which were wounded. The Spaniards would willingly have reco-

recovered the body of the admiral, but the Indians would not consent on any terms. This however was but the beginning of their trouble ; for the king abandoned their religion, on this change of circumstances, and made peace with his rival, notwithstanding one article was, that the strangers should be all put to death : the barbarous monarch, being sensible that he could not execute this wicked article, had recourse to fraud, and inviting all the Spaniards, who were ashore, to a grand entertainment, in the midst of their feasting ordered them to be murdered, reserving only, Don Juan Serrano, in order to have got a supply of artillery and ammunition for his ransom. The Spaniards would readily have complied with this demand, but finding him so deceitful ; and intimidated by the fate of their companions, resolved to put out to sea. The unhappy Serrano, seeing them about to weigh anchor, fell on his knees, and begged, in the most moving terms, that they would not leave him in the hands of such Barbarians : but self-preservation made them deaf to his intreaties, and more so, when they found, on examination, they had but 80 men, and that ; in order to have a bare possibility of returning home, they must be obliged to destroy one ship, to make use of her stores, &c, in repairing and furnishing the other two. Serrano's fate was never known. The loss of him proved a very great hindrance to the voyage, he being the best seaman, and the bravest man on board, the admiral excepted.

Not long before the death of the admiral, they received intelligence of the Moluccas, the design of discovering of which, by this road, was the great end pursued in the voyage. They hereupon left Mathan, and proceeded to the isle of Bohol, where they burnt the Conception, and steering south west, they arrived at the island of Paviloghon, inhabited by Blacks. From hence they reached Chippit, a large isle, 50 leagues from Zubut, lying in 8 deg. north latitude, and 170 longitude from their first stage. Here they found rice, ginger, goats, hogs, &c. and were kindly received by

D

the

the king. For a sign of peace, he marked his body, face, and the tip of his tongue, with blood drawn out of his left arm, and the Spaniards complied with that bloody ceremony. They sailed 40 leagues from hence south west, and arrived at Caghaian, a very large island; but poorly inhabited with Moors, exiles from Borneo, who are rich in gold, and whose chief weapons are poisoned arrows. From hence they sailed west and west by north, till they came to Puloan, a very fertile island, lying in 9 deg. 20 min. south latitude, and 179 deg. 20 min. longitude from their first departure, which affords the same products as Chippit. They came next to the famous island of Borneo, lying in 5 deg. 5 min. north latitude, the chief city, of which contains 25,000 houses. The king was a Moor, very powerful, kept a splendid court, and was always attended by a number of guards; however, he sent presents to the captains, and ordered two elephants, with silk trappings, to be led forth to bring the Spanish messengers to the palace. He had ten secretaries of state, and the daughters of his courtiers governed his household. His subjects chew a great deal of betel, and drink arrac. The country affords camphire, cinnamon, ginger, oranges, lemons, sugar, cucumbers, melons, fowls, beasts, and all that can be expected in that climate.

They soon after arrived at the isle of Cimbulon, in 8 deg. 7 min. north latitude, where they staid forty days to careen. In the woods of this isle they found a tree, whose leaves, as soon as they fall, move about, as if they were alive; on the sides of them are little eggs, which, when touched, spring suddenly away\*. They sailed from hence west, towards the south east, for the Moluccas, and in their way found the sea full of weeds. This course brought them to the isles of Solo Taghima, from whence the king of Borneo got two pearls, very near as large as a hen's egg. They

---

\* This account, though incredible, we have retained on the credit of Pigafetta.

next

next came to another isle called Sarangani, reported to yield gold and pearls. Here they pressed two pilots for their Molucca voyage, and, passing several islands, at length came to one named Sanger, governed by four kings; from hence to a cluster of isles, which their pilots said were the Moluccas. This was Nov. 6, 27 months after their departure from Spain.

Before sun-rising, on the 8th of November, they entered the port of Tiridore, the chief of the Moluccas. The king was a Moor, but extremely civil to them, as they were Spaniards; calling them his brethren, and, to compliment their king and them, changed the name of his kingdom to that of Castile. The Moluccas are 5 in number, Tiridore, Macchian, Bucchian, Ternate, and Mutir, of which Ternate is the chief. Mutir, and Macchian, are commonwealths; but Bucchian, a monarchy. The cloves here grow in clusters, at the tops of the trees, which are as big round as a man's body. They are white at first, red when ripe, and turn black with drying. They gather them twice a year, in June, and December. Every man has his peculiar plantation, about which they bestow but little husbandry. In this isle there is a tree, the bark of which, steeped in water and pressed, produces fibres as fine as silk, of this the women make aprons, which are all their covering.

Not far distant from hence lies the great island of Gilolo, which is divided between Moors and Heathens. The two kings of the Moors, have themselves largely contributed to the peopling of this island, one of them having 600, the other 650 children. The Pagans are more continent; yet they say of them that they adore the first thing they see in the morning. In this isle there grows a reed as big as a man's leg, full of water, which makes a wholesome drink. November 12, a public factory was here erected for the sale of their merchandize; the exchange at the following rates: for ten yards of red cloth, one \* bahar of cloves; for

---

\* *A babar is 4 canters and 6 lb. a canter is 100 lb. weight.*

fifteen yards of coarser they had in Cambie, one bahar; for thirty-five drinking glasse, one bahar; for seventeen cathyls of quicksilver, one bahar. They brought provisions of all sorts to the ships, and fresh water, that springs out of the mountains where the cloves-grow; which is hot when first taken out, but very cold when it has stood awhile. The king of Bacchian sent by them a very odd present to the king of Spain, viz. a couple of dead birds, with small heads and legs, two or three parti-coloured long feathers at their sides instead of wings, the rest of their bodies of a tawny colour: they cannot fly but when the wind helps them; the Moors fancy they come from Paradise, and call them the birds of God. The products of the Moluccas in general are alike, only, we may here add, a sort of honey made by flies less than ants. The inhabitants were all Heathens originally, the Moors not having had any settlement there above fifty years before the Spaniards arrived. Tiridore is in about 27 min. north latitude, and 170 deg. longitude, from their first meridian, and about 9 deg. 30 min. from the Archipelago, in which are the Ladrones, and run to the quarters of south west and north north east. Ternate is in 4 min. of south latitude. Mutir is directly under the equinoctial. Macchian is in 15 min. south latitude and Bacchian in 1 min. which is the largest of all the Moluccas. When they departed from hence, the kings of several isles conducted them to the isle of Mare, in which isle they left a leaky ship; and directed their course south west, having now no more than forty-six Spaniards, and thirteen Indians on board; and passing several isles possessed by Moors, Heathens, and Cannibals, they came to Malua, where they staid fifteen days to repair their ships. It lies in 8 deg. south latitude, and 169 deg. 40 min. longitude, according to their reckoning. Here grows a great deal of pepper, long and round, the leaves of the tree resembling those of the mulberry, and climbing like ivy.

January 25, 1552, they arrived at Tima, five leagues distant between south and south west: here they found  
white



white sanders, plenty of fruit, cattle, gold, &c. The people of the Moluccas, Java, and Lozen have their sanders from this island, which lies in 10 deg. south latitude, and 174 deg. longitude. Sailing a long course from hence, between west and north west, they came to the isle of Eude, which yields plenty of cinnamon. In this sea lies a long chain of islands, as far as the greater Java, and the Cape of Malacca; half a league from Java the Great, lies Java the Lesser, which is as large as Madeira. From hence they steered west south west, directing their course behind the isle of Sumatra, and that they might pass the Cape of Good Hope more safely, they sailed about 42 deg. towards the south pole, waiting seven weeks for a fair wind. Having passed all danger of the cape, and now pinched with hunger and sickness, they resolved to sail homewards in a course to the south west; as they did for two months, without touching any where; in which time, they lost twenty-two men: the remainder being just starving, came in good time to St. James, one of the Cape de Verde islands, and threw themselves at the mercy of the Portuguese, who at first relieved them; but were so perfidious, as to keep thirteen of them prisoners the next time they came for food. Their companions, not willing to bear them company, made what haste they could away, and having a fair wind, reached the haven of St. Lucar, near Seville, on the 7th of September.

The person who commanded this vessel, and had the good fortune to return, was Don Sebastian Cano, a native of Gueteria in Biscay, whose success in this respect, was nobly rewarded by Charles V. who, to perpetuate the memory of so glorious an action, gave him for his arms the terrestrial globe, with this motto, *primus me circumdedisti*. Thou first surroundedest me. By this remarkable expedition, the skill and penetration of Columbus received a new lustre, and the world a new light. This voyage took up three years and thirty seven days, from August 10, 1519, to September 16, 1522. One thing however was discovered in it by experience, which reason has taught us since to ex-

plain, on their arrival at the Moluccas: they found themselves mistaken in their reckoning; which was not owing to any negligence in them; but to the course they failed; for it is a truth now justified by practice, and agreeable to the principles of geography and navigation, that such as sail east, have seen the sun rise, pass the meridian, and set, once more than their countrymen they left behind, and consequently gain a day, whereas such as sail west lose a day; which alters their account, with respect to the day of the month, and the week.

Another circumstance, which may serve to aggrandize the reputation of Magellan, is the difficulty which other able seamen met with in pursuing his course: all the attempts of the Genoese, Portuguese, and Spaniards, proving unsuccessful before the expedition of Sir Francis Drake; an account of which is to be the subject of our next chapter.

---

## C H A P. IV.

### *The voyage of Sir Francis Drake round the globe.*

**T**HE learned Camden informs us, that Sir Francis Drake was the son of a clergyman, who, in the reign of queen Elizabeth, became vicar of Upnor, on the river Medway, in Kent; but Mr. Stowe says, he was the eldest of twelve brethren, all children of Edmund Drake, who lived in a village near Tavistock, in the county of Devon, mariner; and was born in the year 1540. To reconcile these accounts, both which we believe are true, is to imagine that Edmund Drake, being a zealous protestant, persecuted for his religion under Henry VIII. and having a good share of knowledge, was ordained deacon, and settled at Upnor; and that this his eldest son received his christian name Francis, from his godfather Francis Earl of Bedford. Others will have it, that he was born in the year 1545, and brought up at the expence, and under the care of his kinsman





kinsman Sir John Hawkins : but be this as it will, so soon as he was able, he was put apprentice to the master of a small vessel, who traded to France and Zeland. His master, having a love for the lad, and dying a batchelor, left him the ship. We find, at the age of eighteen, Mr. Drake was made purser of a ship bound to the Bay of Biscay : at twenty, he made a voyage to the coast of Guiney ; after which, a laudable ambition induced him to venture all he had in the world, in a voyage to the West Indies, in 1565, where he failed of success. In 1567, he served under his kinsman, Sir John Hawkins, in the bay of Mexico, with no better fortune ; returning home, rich in fame, but poor in circumstances. These misfortunes served only to heighten his resentment, for he made two voyages more into those parts ; one in 1570 with two ships, the Dragon, and Swan ; the other in 1571, in the Swan alone ; purely to qualify himself, for undertaking something of more importance ; which, by his bravery, he brought to bear : for his character being now established, he found enow to go partners in a voyage he proposed, and making all things ready, he sailed May 24, 1572, in the *Pascha*, of Plymouth, of 70 tons \*, with the *Swan* of 25 tons, commanded by his brother, John Drake ; having 73 men and boys, and provisions for a year. Such was the force with which he attacked the king of Spain in the West Indies, and sacked the famous town of *Nombre de Dios* : soon after this, he, from a high tree, saw the South Seas, which sight determined him to carry an English ship thither ; an attempt, perhaps, never thought of before. In this expedition he acquired immense treasure, for his owners, as well as for himself ; being a man of such strict honour and generosity, that he scorned to take any advantages ; of which, we have a singular instance : a prince of the free Indians, in the isthmus of Darien, to whom captain Drake had pre-

---

\* Tons of shipping in these days were four times as much as they now are. Hence the reader will find, that Sir Francis Drake's ship, which is called 70 tons, was as large as one of 280 tons now. The like is to be observed of the Dutch ships.  
sented

feasted a fine cutlafs, that he wore : in return gave him four large wedges of gold, which he put into the common stock, faying ; “ my owners gave me that “ cutlafs, and it is but juft they fhould have their fhares “ in the produce.” His return to England, proved as fortunate, as his foreign expedition ; for he failed from the Capes of Florida to the Scilly ifles in 23 days, arriving at Plymouth, on Sunday Auguft 9, 1573, in time of divine fervice ; on hearing the news, moft of the congregation run out of the church, to obferve the bleffings of God upon the captain’s adventures, who had been at fea one year, two months, and fome odd days. With the wealth he had thus acquired, he equipped three frigates, which he himfelf commanded, and greatly contributed towards the reduction of the Irish rebels, under the conduct of Walter, earl of Effex. After whose death, he chofe Sir Christopher Hatton for his patron ; by whose intereft, being at that time vice chamberlain, captain Drake procured the queen’s commiffion for the voyage he had fo long coveted.

Thus provided, his friends contributed largely to this glorious expedition, and captain Drake, with the utmoft diligence, equipped five fhips, namely, the Pelican, by him afterwards called the Hind, admiral, burden 100 tons ; the Elizabeth, vice-admiral, 80 tons, John Winter captain ; the Marigold, a bark, 30 tons, John Thomas captain ; the Swan, a fly-boat, 50 tons, captain John Chefter ; the Christopher, a pinnace of 15 tons, captain Thomas Moon. These fhips were manned with 164 able men, and furnished with plenty of provisions and of all things neceffary, which fo long a voyage feemed to require, withal ftowing fome pinnaces aboard, in pieces, to be fitted up as occafion offered. These things adjusted, captain Drake failed from Plymouth, November 15, 1577, but was forced to put back again by a dreadful ftorm, till December 13, when he put to fea again with a fair wind, and made no land till the 25th of the fame month ; then they fell in with the coaft of Barbary, and on the 27th came to the ifle of Magador, lying one mile diftant from the main. Here the admiral ordered a pinnace to be built ;  
while

while this was doing, the inhabitants made signs of peace, upon which the admiral sent out a boat, which brought two of their company on board: the day following, they furnished him with good store of provisions, for these, he gave them linen cloth, shoes, and a javelin, which were to them very acceptable.

December 30, the pinnace being finished, they set sail, and the 17th of January arrived at cape Blanco, where they found a ship at anchor, with only two mariners on board. Thy took her, and brought her into the harbour, and tarried here four days, during this stay, the admiral mustered his men ashore, to prepare them for land as well as sea service. Here they took of the fishermen what they wanted, and one of their barks of 40 tons, leaving them instead of it a bark of their own. They sailed from hence January 22, taking with them a Portuguese caravel, bound to the isles of Cape Verd, for salt; the master of which assured the admiral, that in one of them, called Mayo, there was plenty of dried cabritos, or goats, which were made ready every year, for such of the king's ships as called there. On the 27th of January they came to this place; but the inhabitants refusing to trade with them, they went the next day to view the island, and travelling over mountains, for three days, they came to the principal place in the isle; but found it abandoned by the natives. Here they halted some time, and regaled themselves with grapes, which were at that season in their prime, tho' it was the depth of winter, with us in England. This island abounds with goats, wild hens, and salt, which is thrown upon the shore in great quantities, by the waves of the sea, and the sun kerns it, from this the people make great profit. They having refreshed themselves with fruit, marched farther into the island, and saw great flocks of cabritos; but not being able to take any of them, returned to their ships.

January 21, they sailed by the isle of St. Jago, in passing which, the people discharged at them three pieces of cannon, but did them no harm. The island is large, and inhabited by Portuguese. Near this island they

they saw two ships under sail; one of which they took, and found it to be a good prize, being laden with wines. The admiral detained the pilot, but discharged the ship and men, giving them some provisions, a butt of wine, and cloaths. The same night, they came to the isle Del Fogo, which is inhabited by Portuguese. On the north side there is a vulcano, continually belching out fire and smoak: on the south side, is a very delightful island, full of ever-greens, and refreshed with cooling streams, which pour into the sea; but not being here able to fix an anchor, they left these islands, and drew towards the line, where they were sometimes becalmed for a long time, and at others beaten with tempests: but continually had plenty of dolphins, bonitos, and flying fishes.

From the day they departed from the islands of Cape Verde, they sailed near two months without seeing land, the first they made, was the coast of Brasil, in 38 deg. south latitude. April 7, they had thunder, lightning, and rain; in which storm they lost the company of the *Christopher*, but found her again the 11th; and the place where all the ships met together, after they had been dispersed, the admiral called, Cape Joy; where they took in fresh water. The air here is sweet, the soil rich; but the inhabitants seem to be only some herds of wild deer, no people being to be seen, only their foot-steps on the ground. A little farther they found a small harbour, between a rock and the main, where they rode very safely. On this rock, they killed several seals, which they kept for food, finding them wholesome, but not very toothsome. Their next course being to 36 deg. south latitude, they entered the great river of Plata, and coming into 54 fathom fresh water; but finding no good anchorage, they put to sea again, and sailed on till they came to a good bay, in which there were several little pretty islands, one of which abounded with seals, the others with fowls; so there was no want of provisions nor good water. The admiral going ashore on one of these islands, the people came leaping and dancing about him,



him, and seemed very willing to trade; but would receive nothing from him, or any other person, unless it was first thrown on the ground. These people are strong made, swift of foot, brisk, and lively. The Marigold, and Christopher, being sent out to discover a more convenient harbour, returned with the happy news, into which they went with their little squadron. Here they killed two hundred seals in an hour's time. The natives came boldly about them while they were working on the shore. Their faces were painted, and their apparel was a covering of beast-skins, with the fur on, about their waists, and something wreathed about their heads. They had bows an ell long, but only two arrows each. They gave sufficient proof of their agility, by stealing the admiral's hat from off his head, which seemed to be a brave prize among them; one taking the hat, and another the gold lace, which could never be got again. These are the people which Magellan calls Petagons.

June 20, they anchored in port St. Julian, so called by Magellan: and here saw the gibbet on which he had formerly executed some of his rebellious crew. Here also admiral Drake executed captain John Doughty, the most suspected action of his life. August 17, they left St. Julian, and, on the 20th, fell in with the Streights of Magellan, going into the South Sea. The 21st, they entered into the Streights, and found them very intricate, with divers turnings, which made their sailing very troublesome; for there is no anchoring there, except in narrow rivers, or between the rocks. The Streights are extremely cold, with frost, and snow, continually; yet the trees, and plants, flourish. August 24, they came to an island in the Streights, which abounded with penguins, of which they killed 3000 in less than a day's time. Sept. 6, they came into the South Sea at the head shore. On the 7th, they were driven by a storm 200 leagues to the south, where they anchored among some islands, found fresh water, and good herbs. Not far from hence, they entered another bay, where they found  
naked

naked people, going in canoes, from one island to another, in search of provisions, with whom they traded for such commodities as they had. Sailing north, they found 3 islands on the 3d of October, in one of which there was such an innumerable quantity of birds, as is scarce credible. October 8, they lost the company of the Elizabeth, captain Winter. Being now come to the mouth of the Streights, they sailed towards Chili, which the maps in general place to the south west, but they found it lie at the north east; so that those coasts were not faithfully described, if fully discovered before. November 29, by following the same course, they came to the isle of Mocha, where they anchored. The inhabitants were such, as the cruelty of the Spaniards had forced to this island from their own habitations. They carried fair to the admiral and his men at first, bringing them potatoes, and two fat sheep, for which they received some presents. But next day two of the men being sent on shore with vessels for water, the natives knocked them on the head, taking them for Spaniards.

Drawing near the coast of Chili, they met an Indian in a canoe, who, taking them for Spaniards, told them, that at St. Jago there was a large Spanish ship, laden for Peru; and for a small reward conducted them to Val Parizo, in 33 degrees 40 min. south latitude, where she lay at anchor; she had but 8 Spaniards, and three negroes, and they, supposing the English their friends, welcomed them by beat of drum, and invited them to drink some Chili wine: but the admiral, resolving first to secure the prize, boarded her immediately, and driving all the crew under hatches, took possession. One of the Spaniards, seeing how they were served, leaped over-board, and swam to the town of St. Jago, to inform them the English were coming. Upon which, all the inhabitants ran out, there not being above nine householders. The admiral, with his men, entered, rifled the town, and the chapel, where they found some plate; a good cargo of Chili wine, and boards of cedar-wood, which they

they carried to their ships. Having released all the prisoners, except the pilot, he sailed for Lima, the capital of Peru. The booty which they took at St. Jago amounted to more than 37,000 Spanish ducats. Continuing their course for Lima, they came to the haven of Coquimbo, lying 29 deg. 30 min. south latitude. Here the admiral sent fourteen men ashore for fresh water, whom the Spaniards espied, and meditating revenge, attacked them with an army of 300 horse, and 200 foot, and killed one of them, by the help of their guns; the other thirteen returned safe to the ships. After this, going again on shore to bury the dead man, the Spaniards hung out a flag of truce; but they, believing their fidelity and courage to be upon a par, went off to a port called Tarapaxa, where landing, they found a Spaniard lying on the ground fast asleep, with eighteen bars of silver by him, worth about 4000 Spanish ducats; they took the silver, and left him to take out his nap. Not far from hence they met a Spaniard and an Indian, driving eight Peruvian sheep, each of which was loaded with two leather bags of fine silver, weighing 100 lb. they eased the poor animals of their burdens, and carried the bags to their own ships. They departed hence to Arica, which lies in 8 deg. 30 min. south latitude. In the port here, they found three small barks, out of which they took fifty-seven wedges of silver, weighing about 20 lb. each. But they took out of these barks not one prisoner, all the company being gone ashore to regale. Having not force enough to attack the town, the admiral put off to sea again, and met with another bark laden with linen cloth, part of which they took, and let her go.

February 13, they reached the port of Lima, which is in 11 deg. 50 min. south latitude, where they found twelve sail of ships, at anchor, without watch, or guard; the masters not thinking of an enemy, were all carousing ashore. Examining the contents of these ships, they found a chest of rials of plate, with silks and linen, all which they took to their own ships. Here

E

they

they had notice of another very rich ship, named the Cacafuego, which was sailed towards Paita; they pursued her, but on their arrival at Paita, they were informed she was gone to Panama. They still pursued, but missed her; however, in this chase they took another, which paid them well for the voyage; yielding 80 lb. of pure gold, with a fine crucifix of the same metal, richly adorned with emeralds; which, with some of the cordage they seized. The admiral, still resolving to pursue the Cacafuego, to encourage his crew, promised, that whoever first saw her should have his gold chain for a reward, which fell to the lot of Mr. John Drake, who first descried her, about three o'clock. About six they came up with her, gave her three shots, struck down her mizen, and boarded her. They found in her thirteen chests of rials of plate; 80 lb. of gold, a good quantity of jewels, and twenty-six ton of silver bars. The place where she was taken was called Cape San Francisco, 150 leagues from Panama. Among the pieces of plate, which they found in this prize, they met with a couple of large silver bowls gilt, which belonged to the pilot of her. The admiral told him they were two fine bowls; but he must have one of them; to which the pilot consented; and to make it not look like compulsion, he presented the other to the admiral's steward. This done, they ransacked the Cacafuego, and then left her, steering their course to the west. Soon after they fell in with a ship laden with linen, China ware, and silks, whose owner was a Spaniard; from whom the admiral took a falcon wrought of massy gold, with a large emerald in the breast, and what he liked of the wares, seizing the pilot for his own service, who brought them to the haven of Guatulco, the town adjacent to which, had, as he said, but seventeen Spaniards in it. They put to shore, marched directly to the town, and so up to the public hall of justice, while the court was sitting, where the admiral made both judges and criminals prisoners, and carried them all to the ships, and made the judge write to the townsmen to quit the place and make no resistance. As soon as the town

town was cleared, they ransacked it, finding about a bushel of rials of plate, a gold chain, and some jewels. Here the admiral set some of the prisoners ashore, with the pilot he took at the island of Cape de Verde, and proceeded to the island Canno. During their stay here, a Spanish ship, bound for the Philippine islands, fell in their way, which they eased of some of her burden, and then discharged her.

The admiral, thinking he had now in some measure, revenged his country, and himself, upon the Spaniards; began to consider, which way to return home. He thought, if he should return by the streights of the South Sea, and no other passage was yet discovered, he might fall into the hands of the Spaniards, who probably would there wait for him; and he, at this time having but one ship, not very strong, tho' very rich, determined to follow the course of the Portuguese, and get home by the Cape of Good Hope; but being becalmed, he found it necessary to sail more to the north, to procure a favourable wind: with this view they sailed no more than 600 leagues, from April 16, to June 3. June 5, being got into  $43^{\circ}$  N. latitude, they found the air excessive cold. Hereupon the admiral made to the land, till he came into  $38^{\circ}$  N. latitude endeavouring to find a passage back into our seas on that side, which is a strong proof of his consummate skill; for if ever such a passage be found to the northward, this, in all probability, will be the method; and we can scarce conceive a clearer proof of an undaunted spirit, than attempting discoveries, after so long, and so fatiguing a voyage. Here they found a very good bay on the north part of California, now first discovered, and called by the admiral New Albion, partly in honour to his own nation, and partly from its white cliffs. At his departure hence, he set up a monument, with a large plate, upon which were engraven her majesty's name, picture, arms, title to the country, the time of their arrival, and the admiral's own name. The earth of this island seemed to promise rich veins of gold and silver, there being hardly any digging without throwing up some of their

ores. The Spaniards never had set footing here, nor ever did they discover the land, by many degrees to the southward of this place.

Sailing hence they saw no more land till October 13, when they fell in with some islands in 8° N. latitude where they met with a great number of canoes, laden with cocoas and other fruits. These canoes were hollowed within, and shined without, like burnished horn. The people that were in them, had the lower part of their ears pared round, and stretched a considerable way upon their cheeks, by the weight of the things they hang in them. Their nails grow a full inch in length; and their teeth are as black as ebony. October 18, they came to several other islands, and continued their course by Tagulada, Zelon, and Zewarra; the first of which had good store of cinnamon, and the inhabitants of all were friends to the Portuguese, so the admiral continued the same course, till November 14, when they came to the Moluccas, and intended for Tiridore, but as they coasted by the island Mutyr, which belongs to the king of Ternate, they met the viceroy, who, seeing the admiral, without fear, came aboard, and advised him by no means to proceed to Tiridore, but to make the best of their way to Ternate, adding, that his master was an utter enemy to the Portuguese, and would have nothing to do with them, if they were concerned at Tiridore. Hereupon, the admiral determined to follow his directions, and early the next morning, cast anchor before the town, and sent a present of a velvet cloak to the king, with assurances, that he came thither with no other design than to trade among them. The king sent a very obliging answer to the admiral's messengers, assuring them, that a friendly correspondence with the English, was to him highly agreeable; that what his kingdom yielded, should be at his service; and that he was ready to lay down his kingdom at the feet of so glorious a princess, and willing to make her his sovereign; in token of which he sent the admiral a signet, and being desirous to pay him a visit on ship board, sent before-

forehand 4 large canoes, freighted with the most dignified persons about him. They were all dressed in white lawn, and had an exceeding large umbrella of fine perfumed mats, born up, and spreading over their heads, from one end of the canoe to the other; their servants stood near them, clad in white, behind these were placed ranks of soldiers; on both sides of the military sat the rowers, in well contrived galleries, with three seats on a side, raised one above another, each gallery containing 80 rowers. Coming near the ship, they all paid reverence to the admiral, and informed him, that the king had sent them to take him into a safer road, than he was in at present. Soon after came the king, attended by six grave old men; who seemed pleased with the English music, but much more with the generosity of the admiral, who made large presents, both to him, and his nobles. That night the king sent them store of provisions, and promised to come aboard again, but did not fulfil his promise; tho' he sent his brother to make his excuse, and to invite the admiral ashore, who declined going himself; but sent some of his retinue with the king's brother, and kept the viceroy till their return. The English were received ashore by another of his majesty's brothers, and conducted in great state to the castle, where the king received them kindly, and having heard their message, sent one of his council to conduct them back to their ships.

The admiral having dispatched his affairs here, sailed to a little island south of the Celebes. Here he staid 26 days. This island is very woody, the trees high, strait and large, without boughs, except at the top. Here are bats as big as hens, and land cray-fish, which dig holes in the earth, like rabbits, and large enough to dine four persons. They designed from hence to run for the Moluccas; but, having a bad wind, they with great difficulty gained the mouth of the Celebes; and finding it not practicable to continue the western course, they altered to the southward, which they also found to be very dangerous this truth of which will be sufficiently proved by the following fatal experiment; for Jan. the 9th they

ran upon a rock, and there stuck fast for the space of 20 hours. Thus distressed they lightened the ship of 3 tons of cloves, and eight pieces of ordnance, with some of their provisions; after which, the wind chopping about, they hoisted sail, and the wind coming fair, disengaged them from the rock. February 18, they arrived at the fruitful island of Baratene, whose natives are of a comely proportion in body; but of a more beautiful disposition of mind; civil to strangers, and just in their dealings. The men cover only their heads, and privities; but the women from the waist downwards; linen cloth is here a very good commodity, the people being fond of it. The island affords gold, silver, copper, sulphur, nutmeg, ginger, pepper, sago, cocoas, &c. They sailed from this island to Java Major, where they met with good usage. The island is governed by five kings, and they once had four of them on board, at one time. The Javans wear Turkish turbans; the upper part of their body is naked, and from the waist downward, they have a Pintado of silk, which reaches to the ground, of any colour. The French disease prevails much in this island, which they cure, not by salivation, but by perspiration: they set the patient naked in the sun, for a certain time, whose scorching rays open the pores, and give free vent to the noxious particles. Here the admiral had news of some large ships that lay near him, and not knowing what they might prove, he made the best of his way to the Cape of Good Hope, which they passed June 18. July 22 they arrived at Sierra Leona, upon the coast of Guiney; where they found great store of elephants, and trees, that had oysters upon them, which there lived and multiplied; with these, and the lemons that grew there, they were greatly refreshed.

They staid here two days, taking in wood and water, and then proceeded homewards. July 25, they found themselves under the tropic of Cancer, 50 leagues from any land. Soon after they were in the height of the Canaries, where they made no stay; but continued their voyage to Plymouth, and there arrived, Monday, Sept.



Sept. 26, 1580, having spent two years, ten months, and a few days, in this circum-navigation. The report of captain Drake's return soon spread over the kingdom; and that being an age when virtue was in fashion, it made a great noise, among such as were patrons, either of arms, or arts; all of them striving to express the regard they had for captain Drake. Epigrams, songs, and poems, were made in commendation of him, and the ship; which extended his fame still farther.

But so bold and brave an action, attended with such vast applause, could not reasonably be expected to pass altogether uncensured; therefore we need not be surprised, to find, that not a few endeavoured to blacken this glorious enterprize. Some gave out, that the business of his voyage was plunder, and that he had gained enough to exempt the nation from taxes for 7 years: that our merchants had great effects in Spain, and had reason to fear, they might be seized to make good his depredations. The Spanish ambassador attacked him also by warm memorials, calling him the master thief of the unknown world. Captain Drake's friends, on the other side, alledged, that he had the queen's commission to justify his reprisals, and that the more wealth he had brought home, the more the nation was obliged to him, &c. These were the reasonings on both sides; however, things remained in suspense, as if the queen resolved to hear all before she put an end to the affair.

During this interval, captain Drake grew uneasy, fearing, after all his toils, he should be declared a pirate. At last, when things came to a crisis, the queen, having given previous notice to captain Drake, went on board his ship at Deptford, April 4, 1581, where she was magnificently entertained, and after dinner conferred the honour of knighthood on captain Drake, telling him, at the same time, that his actions did him more honour than his title. On this occasion, there was a bridge laid from the shore to the ship, when the crowd, which attended her majesty, was so prodigious, that they broke it down, and yet, of 200 persons that  
fell

fell into the Thames, not one was either drowned or hurt. After this public approbation of queen Elizabeth, the people redoubled their congratulations, and Sir Francis Drake, from that time, gave for his device, the terraqueous globe, with this motto, *Tu primus me circumdedisti, Divino auxilio*, i. e. *Thou first compassedest me, by the help of God*. Henceforward the reputation of Sir Francis Drake continually increased, and he was looked upon as the oracle in all maritime affairs, both by the court, and the country.

The war with Spain being still prosecuted by queen Elizabeth, he was made general by land and sea, in 1585, in an expedition to the West-Indies, took the cities of St. Jago, Domingo, and Carthagená, likewise the fort and town of St. Augustine; then returned with great success; the profits of this expedition, all charges deducted, amounting to 60,000*l.* of which 20,000*l.* were divided among the seamen; and 40,000*l.* were justly distributed amongst the adventurers. He had the command of another fleet in 1587, and sailed with it into the bay of Cadiz, from thence to Lisbon, having destroyed, in this expedition, 10,000 tons of Spanish shipping, which were intended for an invasion upon England. He also made a prize of the St. Philip, which the writers of those times aver, was the first Carrack ever brought to England. In 1588 the queen granted him a commission of vice-admiral under Charles lord Howard of Effingham, high admiral of the English fleet, fitted out against the Spanish Armada. In this service he did wonders, taking the vice-admiral, and another large ship, commanded by Don Pedro de Valdez, who made a stout resistance, but surrendered at last to the reputation of Sir Francis, as appears by the compliment Don Pedro paid him, when he delivered to him his sword, which was, "that they all resolved to die fighting if they had not fallen into his hands; whose valour was so great, that Mars, the god of war, and Neptune, the god of the sea, waited upon his enterprizes." Sir Francis, to requite the Spaniard with true English kindness, set

set him at his own table, lodged him in his own cabin, and sent the rest of his company to Plymouth. In the ship he found 55,000 ducats in gold, which was joyfully shared amongst his soldiers. It is remarkable, that in this memorable battle he distinguished himself by advising the use of fire-ships, tho' we will not presume to affirm that he invented them. The succeeding year he was appointed admiral of a great fleet sent to Portugal, to restore Don Antonio to his kingdom, in a conjunct expedition, which ended but indifferently: However the Spaniards were much harrassed, and the compliment of an invasion was returned; which he put out of their power to make. In short, Sir Francis spoiled no less than three Spanish invasions. In 1593, he ventured to the West-Indies in another conjunct expedition, but meeting with ill success, the thoughts of it broke his heart, and he died in the harbour of Porto Bello, January 28, 1595. His body was put into a leaden coffin and dropt into the sea, under the discharge of all the cannon from the fleet.

He was of low stature, but well made, had a fair, yet fresh complexion; his eyes full and lively; his hair brown; and his countenance chearful. He was naturally eloquent, very knowing, not only in his own profession; but in every science belonging to it, and could discharge every office, even that of a surgeon. He was loyal to his sovereign, kind to his seamen, merciful to his enemies, and just to his owners. His dying at the age of fifty-five is a convincing argument of his thirst after glory, and his many glorious exploits justify his title to immortal fame.

## CHAP. V.

### *Sir Thomas Cavendish's voyage round the world.*

**I**N the reign of queen Elizabeth, the flame of public spirit glowing in the breast of private persons,  
was

was encouraged as much as possible ; it was her constant policy, to honour those who did remarkable service to their country ; tho' she was sparing of her favours on other occasions. Thus she excited the young nobility, and gentlemen of easy fortunes, to hazard themselves and their fortunes for the public service. Amongst whom no man distinguished himself more than Thomas Cavendish, of Trimley in the county of Suffolk, Esq; who had a large estate lying near Ipswich, at that time a place of great trade, and gave him an early inclination to the sea, which, when he came of age, he gratified, by converting part of his lands into money, and equipping a stout ship, which he called the *Tyger*; burden 120 tons, in her, he accompanied Sir Richard Greenville in his voyage to Virginia in 1585, and went thro' many difficulties without any profit, but returned safe to Falmouth October 6, the same year. Having now seen a great part of the Spanish West-Indies, and conversed with some who had sailed with Sir Francis Drake ; he began to be very desirous of undertaking a like voyage, as well for repairing the loss he had sustained by his late expedition, as to emulate that great officer. As soon, therefore, as he came home, he either sold or mortgaged his estate to raise the sum wanted ; and in the space of eight months his little squadron was intirely finished. The largest ship was called the *Desire*, of 140 tons, the lesser was named the *Content*, of about 60 tons, to these he added a bark of 40 tons, called the *Hugh Gallant*, all supplied at his own expence, with provisions for two years, and manned with 126 officers and sailors, some of whom had served under Sir Francis Drake, and most of them men of experience. With these he entered into a fair agreement, with regard to the proportion in which all prizes should be divided. He likewise procured, by the favour of the lord Hunsdon, then lord chamberlain, a commission from queen Elizabeth. This done, he set out from London, July 10, 1586 for Harwich, where he embarked on board the *Desire*, and arrived at Plymouth July 18, there waited for  
some

some of his company till the 21st, when he hoisted sail for the intended voyage. The next day he met with eight ships from Biscay, well manned, one of which attacked him, but he gave her so warm a reception, that she, with the rest, was glad to sheer off. August 5, they fell in with the island of Forteventura, and sailed thence to Cape Blanco, from thence to the coast of Guiney, where the men began to make heavy complaints of the scurvy, and therefore the officers determined to put some of them ashore for their recovery, as soon as they could with safety. August 23, they made Sierra Leona, and on the 25th fell in with the south side of it, in 5 fathom water at the lowest; and at the south west, for about 14 leagues, they had from 8 to 16 fathom all the way, running into the harbour. Here they plundered a town of negroes, who killed one of their men with a poisoned arrow. September 3, they rowed with the boat four miles up the harbour, and caught store of fish; then they went ashore, got some lemons, and saw some Buffaloes. On the 6th, they left the harbour, but were obliged to stay one tide, three leagues from the point of it; the tide always flowing at south west. On the 7th, they departed from the isles of Cape Verd, which lie ten leagues from the point of Sierra Leona, and anchored two miles off the island. The 8th, one of their boats went out, and foundered. They could find no fresh water on the south side; but, on the north, there is fresh water in 3 or 4 places. The whole island is a perfect wood, except a few spots, where some houses stand, which are encompassed with plaintain trees, the fruit of which is excellent food. The place is subject to storms of rain, and thunder, in the month of September. The 10th of October they left this island, and on the last of the same month, steering W. S. W. about 20 leagues from Cape Frio in Brasil, they fell in with a great mountain, which had a large high top, standing aloft like a little town. November 1, they put in between the island of St. Sebastian, and the main land, carrying their things ashore, and here erecting a forge, they built

built a pinnace, and repaired what was out of order, which detained them till the 23d. On the 26th, they arrived on the coast of America, in 47 deg. 20 min. north latitude, and ran along the shore till they came to 48 deg. November 27, they came to an harbour, into which the admiral first entered, calling it Port Desire. Here the savages wounded two of their company with arrows made of cane, and headed with flints. They seemed of a gigantic race; one of their feet being 18 inches long. He gave this country the name of Patagonia, and the inhabitants that of Patagons, to signify that they were 5 cubits, or 7 feet and a half high. This account agrees very exactly with that of Magellan.

December 28, they left Port Desire, and coasting along S. S. W. they fell in, the 2d of January, with a great white cape, in 52 deg. south lat. where they had seven fathom water, within a league of the shore. The 3d they fell in with another great cape, in 52 deg. 45 min. lat. under which they anchored, and lost their anchor, in a great storm, which lasted three days. From this cape there runs a long beach, which reaches to the opening of the streights of Magellan. On the 6th of January they entered these streights, which in some places are five or six leagues wide, but in others very narrow. On the 7th, in the narrowest part of them, they took a Spaniard, with 23 of his countrymen, all that remained out of 400, left there three years before. The same day they passed the narrowest part of these streights, where the Spaniards shewed them the hull of a small bark, supposed to be left by Sir Francis Drake. From the mouth to the narrowest part of the streights is 14 leagues, and the course west by north. From the narrow pass to Penguin island is 10 leagues, and the course is W. S. W. by S. On the 8th they anchored here, and killed great store of pengwins. Jan. 9, they left this place, and sailed by King Philip's city, built here by the Spaniards. It had four forts, with one cast piece in each. Here are several churches, and the city seems to be well contrived, especially as  
to

to its situation, which has the best conveniences for wood and water, of any place in the Streights. To this place, which lies in 53 deg. south lat. the admiral gave the name of Port Famine. They left this place on the 14th, and ran 5 leagues S. W. to Cape Forward. From hence they sailed W. by N. 5 leagues more, and put into a bay called Muffel Cove, from the great quantity of mussels they there found. The 21st, they sailed N. W. and by W. 10 leagues to a fair sandy bay, which the admiral called Elizabeth Bay. The 22d, about two leagues off, they found a good river, up which the admiral towed a boat at least 3 miles. The country on each side was champaign and pleasant, but all near the Streights, except this, was craggy, mountainous, and inhabited by strong, well-made, but brutish savages. Leaving this river, they sailed to St. Jerom's chanel, about two leagues distant. From this chanel they sailed to a cape which lies on the N. of it about four leagues, from which to the mouth of the Streights, the course runs N. W. and N. W. by W. and the distance from hence to the entrance into the S. Sea, is 34 leagues, so that the length of the Streights, is 90 leagues. We may farther observe that the entrance of the Streights into the South Seas, is near the same latitude, with the passage out of the North Sea into the Streights, that is 52 deg. 40 min. south latitude.

They entered the South Sea February 24, observing on the south side of the entrance a high cape, with a low point adjoining; and on the north, 4 or 5 islands, about six leagues from the main, with broken land about 'em. March 1st, they had a great storm, in which they lost the company of the *Hugh Gallant*, in 49 deg. south lat. and 4½ leagues from land. The storm continued three or four days, and the *Hugh Gallant* having sprung a leak, after much labour and care, came in between the isle of St. Mary and the main, on the 15th, in the morning; where she met the admiral, and the *Content*. At this place some of the company went on shore, well armed, whom the Indians met and engaged with their bows and arrows. These Indians, were of the

F

district

district of Aranco, which being a country rich in gold, had been several times invaded by the avaritious Spaniards, whom the inhabitants had always defeated: these desperate men mistaking the English for Spaniards gave them the like reception. After the skirmish, they weighed anchor and ran to the west-side of the island, where they had good riding in six fathom water. This island lies in 37 deg. 30 min. south latitude. Here they furnished themselves with good wheat and barley as clear and fair as any in England; also with store of hogs, hens, potatoes, dried dog fish, and maiz, which is guiney wheat.

They left St. Mary's island on the 18th in the morning, and having sailed N. N. E. about 10 leagues, they anchored under an island called the Conception. The 30th they came into the bay of Quintero, lying in 33 deg. 50 min. south latitude, and the next day sixty men, well armed, marched seven or eight miles into the country. In this march they saw vast herds of wild cattle, horses, dogs, hares, rabbits, partridge, and other fowl; and having now travelled as far as they could for mountains, without any remarkable adventure, they returned to their ships the same night. April 5, some of the English being on shore filling of water, the Spaniards waited the opportunity, and poured down 200 horse from the hills upon them, and made a shift to kill some, and take some prisoners; but fifteen more English coming: rescued their companions, killed twenty-four Spaniards on the spot, and drove the rest to the mountains. After this, they staid in the road, and watered there without molestation till the 9th, when they left this place, and went to a small island, about a league off, that is full of pengwins and other fowl, with which having furnished themselves, they sailed N. N. W. and on the 15th came to Moro Morino, in 23 deg. 30 min. south latitude, under the tropic of Capricorn. Here the admiral went ashore with thirty men, and was met by the Indians, who brought fresh water and wood on their backs. They are a silly sort of people, live in a wild manner,  
and



and in great dread of the Spaniards. May 3, they came into a bay, where are three little towns, Paracca, Chinchá, and Pisca, the latter of which lies in 13 deg. 20 min. south latitude. They landed here, and took some provisions of wine and bread, hens and figs, out of some of the houses; but they could not get ashore at the best towns, the sea ran so very high; tho' at this time, they made themselves masters of two rich ships, one of which, if an opportunity of sale could have been to be met with, would have yielded 20,000 l. out of which they took what they could conveniently stow, burning the rest with the vessels, after they had set the people ashore. The 26th they came into the road of Paíta, which lies in 5 deg. 4 min. south latitude. The town itself is neatly built, and clean in all parts of it, containing about 200 houses. The admiral, with about sixty men, had here a skirmish with the inhabitants, beat them out of the town, and forced them up the hills; from whence they fired small shot, but would never be brought to a fair battle. They found here plenty of household-stuff, and 25 lb. weight of silver, in pieces of eight. They burned the town, and the value of 6000 l. in goods, with a ship, which lay in the road; and directed their course to Puna, which lies in 1 deg. south latitude. In the harbour, they found a ship of 150 ton, which they sunk, and then went ashore. The lord of this isle was an indian born, but marrying a Spanish woman, and resolving to be of her religion, made all his subjects do the like. The island is near as big as the Isle of Wight, and has a great share of the blessings of nature, tho' it affords no mines of gold, or silver. Here is good pasture, variety of useful animals, as, horses, oxen, sheep, and goats, that yield abundance of milk; also very good fowl, pigeons, turkeys, and ducks, of a large size. The lord had orchards, which yield most sorts of useful fruits, and various odoriferous plants; one of which was set round with trees that bear the bombasin cotton; the tops of which are full of pods, from whence the cotton rises. In the cotton lies a seed the bigness

of a pea. In every pod there are seven or eight of these seeds, which, if the cotton is not gathered when ripe, takes root, and produces a new plant. May 29, the admiral went to an island contiguous to Puna, into which the lord, or, as he is there called, the Casique of Puna, had conveyed all the valuable furniture of his palace, and all his other moveables necessary both for house and ship. These stores, being all discovered to the admiral; he took what he thought fit, burnt the church, and brought away the five bells that were in it. June 2, 100 Spaniards fell upon them, killed and took prisoners 12 of the English, with the loss of 46 of their own men. The same day, going ashore again with seventy men, they met with a party of a hundred Spaniards, armed with muskets, and two hundred Indians with bows and arrows, and having intirely put them to flight, made havock of their fields, and orchards, burnt four ships upon the stocks, and the town itself, which consisted of 300 houses; besides two towns more, which contained 200 houses; Puna, being the best settled island on all this coast: these wanton acts of cruelty have, perhaps, been very prejudicial to our expeditions in the South Seas.

June 5, they left Puna, and sailed to Rio Dolce, where they watered. The 12th, they passed the equinoctial line, sailing northerly all this month. July 1, they got sight of Nueva Espanna, four leagues distant from the land, and in 10 deg. north lat. On the 9th, they took a ship of 120 ton, in which was one Michael Sancius, a native of Marseilles, and a skilful coaster in the South Seas, whom the admiral retained for his pilot, and who first gave them notice of the great ship Anna Maria, which they afterwards took, coming from the Philippine isles; and after having stripped her of the men, sails, &c. set her on fire. The 10th, they took a bark, that was going to inform the coast of their arrival; but the men had left her. The 26th, they anchored in the river Copalita; and the same night, with thirty men, rowed the pinnace to Agatulco. Here they made a descent, and burnt both the town

town and custom-house, in which they found 600 bags of anise, for dying cloth, and 400 of cacaos, each bag of the former worth forty crowns; and of the latter ten. The cacaos are like almonds, though not so pleasant; afford both meat and drink, and pass in trade for ready money; 150 of them being equal in value to a rial in plate, when made into chocolate. The next day the admiral went ashore with thirty men, marching two miles into the woods, where they took a Mestizo, belonging to the custom-house of that town, and carried both the master and goods to their ships. August 24, the admiral, with thirty men, went to Natividad, in 19 deg. north latitude, where they took a Mulatto, who was sent to give notice of the English all along the coast of Nueva Galicia, together with all his letters; and burnt the town, and two ships of 200 tons, which were there building. The 26th, they came into the bay of St. Jago, where they got fresh water, store of fish, and some pearls. This bay is in 19 deg. 18 min. north latitude. They left St. Jago September 2; and, on the 3d, came into the bay of Malacca, a league to the west of Natividad. The same day the admiral, with some men, went ashore to an Indian town, called Acatlan, which consisted of thirty houses, and a church; then returned aboard towards night.

The 9th, in the morning, the admiral sent 40 men, with Sancius for a guide, who, marching two leagues thro' the woods, met with two or three families, part Indians, part Spaniards, and one Portuguese, all which they brought to their ships. The admiral made the women fetch oranges, lemons, potatoes, and other fruit; and set all their husbands free, in token of reward, keeping one, called Sembrano, a Spanish carpenter, and Diego, a Portuguese. They arrived at the island of St. Andrew on the 12th, a woody place, yielding plenty of fowl, and seals, and a sort of lizards, called Iguanos, with 4 feet, and a sharp long tail, but very good meat. They left St. Andrew's island the 24th, and came to Massatlan, which lies under the

tropic of Cancer. The 27th, they came to an island, about a league distant, where they heeled their ships, and rebuilt their pinnace. In this island they found fresh water, by digging 3 foot deep in the sand, by the direction of one Flores, a Spaniard, who was their prisoner. Here they watered their ships, and might have filled 1000 tons. They staid here till the 9th of October, then sailed for port St. Lucar, which is on the west side of California, and arrived there on the 14th of the same month; observing, that it had the same appearance with the Needles off the Isle of Wight, which has been confirmed by all who have sailed thither. They waited here till November 4, for the Aca-pulco ship, on which day, the Desire and Content beat about the headland of California, which lies in 23 deg. 24 min. north latitude; when one of the ship's company, going up to the topmost, cried out, A Sail! A Sail! the admiral, overjoyed, put things in readiness, and chased her 3 or 4 hours. Toward the evening he came up with her, and saluted her with a broadside, and a volley of small shot. They found her to be the St. Anne, belonging to the king of Spain, the admiral of the South Seas, of 700 tons burden. They attempted to board her, but were forced to retire with the loss of 2 men, and 5 or 6 wounded. The admiral, after this, made a fresh attack, with his great and small shot, raked them thro' and thro', and killed great numbers of their men; on the next broadside, they hung out a flag of truce, desiring the admiral to save their lives, and they would yield up the ship, with all her cargo, into their hands. This was granted, on condition, they would instantly strike their sails, hoist out their boat, and come aboard; which was accordingly done, by the captain, the pilot, and one of the chief merchants. She had aboard 122,000 pezoës of gold, silks, sattins, damasks, musk, and all manner of provisions, almost as acceptable to them as their riches. November 6, they put into the harbour of Puerto Seguro, with the prize, where all the Spaniards, men and women, to the number 150, were set on shore; the

the admiral having chosen for them a fruitful spot to live upon, gave them store of wine and victuals, with the sails of the ship, and some planks, to build them houses.

The owners thus disposed of, they came now to share the booty, which ungrateful work involved the admiral in a mutiny, no man thinking he had enough. This feud of avarice prevailed most violently in the *Content*; but all was soon quieted by the generosity of the admiral. November 17, being the day of her majesty's coronation, they kept it as a grand festival. Of the Spanish prisoners, the admiral retained two Japanese boys, three natives of the isle of Manilla, a Portuguese, who had been in China, and a Spanish pilot, well knowing all the parts between Acapulco, and Nueva España, to the Ladrões. November 19, the admiral having discharged the captain of the *St. Anne*, with a noble reward, and sufficient provision for his defense against the Indians, fired the ship with 500 tons of goods in her. This business, happily accomplished, they set sail for England: but had the misfortune to lose the *Content*, and never enjoyed her company again. However, they directed their course to the Ladrões, distant from this haven near 1800 leagues. January 3, they had sight of one of them, called Guam, in 13 deg. 40 min. north latitude, and came within two leagues of the island. Here they saw 60 or 70 canoes, full of savages, who brought cocoas, potatoes, plantanes, and fresh fish, to traffic with: they gave them pieces of old iron, which they hung at the end of small cords, and fishing lines, and so let them vere to the canoes; and by the same method, received back what the savages offered in exchange. This traffic over, they thrust in so close to the ships, that two of their canoes were broke, tho' the savages received no hurt, water being almost as natural to them, as to the fishes: for they would drop into it, and dive beyond the reach of danger, upon the least warning. They are very large men, extremely fat, of a tawny colour, and wear their hair long for the most part;

part; tho' some tie it up in knots. These canoes are very artfully made, considering no edged tool was used about them; they are eight yards long, and half a yard wide, made with rafts of canes and reeds on the starboard side, with masts and sails made of sedges, either square, or triangular, and will sail as well against, as before the wind.

They fell in with the headland of the Philippine islands, called Caba del Spirito Santo, on the 9th of January, which lies in 30 deg. north latitude, 110 leagues distant from Guam, and 60 from Manilla, which is the chief of the Philippines, and is inhabited by Spaniards, to the number of 6 or 700. It is a town of no great strength, tho' vastly rich in gold; and has a constant annual correspondence with Acapulco, besides 20 or 30 ships from China, and the profitable trade of Sangueloes, who are Chinese merchants, very skilful in trade, and ingenious in mechanical operations, and the best embroiderers of silk and sattin in the world. They work any form of beast, fowl or fish, in gold, silver, or silk, giving it the same life and beauty as an excellent painter can do, or as nature bestows on the original. It is evident, that these men must bring a very gainful trade to Manilla, since they brought vast quantities of gold, and exchanged it weight for weight for silver.

The 14th they entered the Streights, between the islands Lucan and Cambaia; the 15th they fell in with the island Capul, off the point of which, lay on one side a ridge of rocks, which they passed in safety, and came to a good harbour in four fathom water, where they cast anchor; when a canoe rowed up to them, in which was one of the seven chief Casiques of the island. They passed with these people for Spaniards, who traded with them accordingly. They gave them a yard of linen cloth for four cocoas, and as much for a quart of potatoes, which are here excellent food. The Casique that came aboard had his skin painted over with very strange devices: they kept him with them, and desired him to send his canoe to fetch his other  
six

six brother Casiques, who, accordingly, soon came to the ship, and brought with them a train of people, a vast number of hogs and hens, and a whole market of cocoas and potatoes, which they sold to them as they did to the Spaniards, viz. eight rials of plate for a hog, and one for a hen. Here the Spanish pilot taken in the St. Anne, who had plotted to betray them into the hands of the Spaniards, was hanged. They staid here nine days, being all the time plentifully supplied with fresh provisions. These people are all Pagans, and are said to worship and converse with the devil, are of a tawny complexion, and go almost naked, the men having only a square piece of linen, woven out of plantane leaves, about their waists, and another down their backs, coming between their legs, and fastned to their girdles. Circumcision is here practised; besides which the males undergo a severer operation, which is no where else used, except in Pegu. They make a perforation through the glans of the penis, with a nail of tin split at the lower end and riveted, which they can take out, and put in again, as they have occasion. This was done at the humble petition of the women, and invented for the prevention of an unnatural crime, to which the men of this isle were horribly addicted. On the 23d the admiral summoned all the Casiques who had paid tribute before him, and told them they were English, the greatest enemies which the Spaniards had; at the same time paying them back in money the value of all the tribute he had, in provisions, received. Surprised at the admiral's generosity, they engaged to assist him with all their forces, if he would make war against the Spaniards in those parts. Then rowing round the ship for some time, to give them some diversion for the kindness received, they took leave, and the admiral fired a gun at their departure.

Jan. 24, they departed, and sailed along the coast of Manilla, steering N. W. and in the islands thereabouts, they perceived the Spaniards upon the watch, having taken the alarm of their coming. The Isle of  
Panama

Panama is a level country in many parts, affording tall strait trees for masts: besides several gold mines in custody of the Indians. To the south lies the island of Negroes, near as large as England, in 9 deg. north latitude. It appeared to be for the most part low land, but fruitful, and the people are their own masters. June 29, they passed the Straights between Panama and Negro-land, and having run about sixteen leagues, found an opening, tending S.W. by S. About this time their boat, which was sent before them in the morning came up, in which the admiral had sent a Spanish prisoner with a message to his captain, who commanded a ship that lay at Panama the night before. The message was, that he should provide good store of gold against the admiral came that way again. March 1, they anchored under the S. W. part of Java Major, where they met with some people fishing; the admiral sent a boat to them, with a negro in it, who could speak the Moresco tongue, which is much used in Java; but they, frightened at the boat, got ashore, and hid themselves in the woods; yet when the negro called, one of them returned to the sea side, directed them where to find fresh water, and carried a message from the admiral to their king, certifying, that he came there to trafic, for victuals or any other valuable commodities the island afforded. March 12, nine or ten of the king's canoes came laden with all sorts of provisions, such as oxen, hogs, hens, geese, eggs, sugar, cocoas, plantanes, oranges, lemons, wine, and aqua vitæ. Two Portuguese came on board to see them, and to enquire after their king Don Antonio, then in England, who gave them the following account of the customs and manners of those people. The king of that part of the island, he said, exercised an absolute power over his subjects; insomuch, as he was master of all they had, and they durst not make a bargain without his leave; if any presumed to do it, he forfeited his life. This prince, added he, has 100 wives, (and his son 50) who possibly may be happy while he lives, but cannot be so any longer; for he  
being



being dead, his body burnt, and the royal ashes deposited in an urn, in five days after, they all of them march to a place appointed, where as soon as they arrive, the favourite wife throws a ball out of her hand, which, where it falls, marks out the place of her death; they go thither, and turning their faces to the east, stab themselves to the heart with their daggers, and taking handfuls of their blood, besmear their bodies with it and die. This barbarous sacrifice, are the queens of Java obliged to make to the ghost of their husbands, by the custom of their country. The men of this island are very good soldiers, and stick at nothing that their king commands them to do; even so far as to plunge a dagger into their breasts, to fall from a precipice, or the like; the anger of their king being immediate death. They are tawny, like the rest of the Indians, and go naked, but their women are of a better colour, and shew more modesty in the use of apparel. After this narration of the Portuguese, having satisfied the Javans for the provisions they brought; the admiral took his leave, making them a present of three great pieces of ordnance at parting. March 16, they sailed for the Cape of Good Hope, and spent all the rest of this month, and the next, in traversing the ocean between Java and the coast of Africa.

On the 11th of May, one of the company saw land bearing N. and N. W. about noon they saw some land bearing west, which they thought was the Cape of Good Hope, being about 50 leagues distant; but having little wind, they stood off to the west till midnight. The 12th and 13th they were becalmed, and the sky was hazy; the 14th it cleared up, when they made land again, which proved to be Cape Falso, 50 leagues short of the Cape of Good Hope. This Cape Falso is easily known, for there are three high hills right over it, but a little distance from each other, the highest in the middle, and the ground much lower by the sea side; besides, the Cape of Good Hope bears W. and by S. from Cape Falso. May 16, they discovered the Cape of Good Hope, but stood off to sea, and on the  
18th

8th of June came within 7 leagues of the island of St. Helena, but could not reach it that day; tho' the next they came to an anchor in twelve fathom water, in a good bay, under the N. W. side of the island. This island lies in the main sea, between the coasts of Africa, Brasil, and Guiney, in 15 deg. 48 min. south latitude, and is now too well known, to require from them a particular description.

Having here taken in all necessaries, they set sail for England on the 20th of June, and hawled away north west by west. 'Tis to be observed, that the wind is commonly off the shore at St. Helena. Friday, August 23, they sailed east and east by south for the northermost of the Azores; the 29th, they saw the islands Flores, and Corvo, lying in 39 deg. 30 min. north latitude, and made away north east. September 3, they met with a Flemish vessel, which came from Lisbon. September 9, they weathered a violent storm, which carried away most of their sails, and afterwards arrived at Plymouth. Never was voyage of this consequence attended with such interrupted success, as is evident from the time in which it was performed; Magellan's having taken up three years and one month; Sir Francis Drake two years and near eleven months; and this but two years and two months. It is not surprising, that a young gentleman, like Mr. Cavendish, whose soul had an appetite for glory, should attempt some extraordinary methods to display his good fortune. Some accounts relate, that he brought his ship into the harbour of Plymouth with silken sails, which may be easily accounted for; seeing he had just before met with a violent storm, which tore all his sails to pieces, in which distress, he probably supplied them with those he had taken in the South Seas, or in the East Indies, which being made of silk grass, are very glossy, and might easily deceive the eyes of the vulgar, and pass with them for real silk. This, however is true, that tho' he might be vain and expensive in such things, those who went along with him, had a fair and full dividend of the

the whole value of the prizes, which gained him universal esteem, of which we shall soon give the reader a convincing proof. The very day he arrived at Plymouth, he wrote the following letter to his patron the lord Hunsdon, then lord chamberlain, queen Elizabeth's near relation, and favourite.

“ RIGHT HONOURABLE,

“ As your favour heretofore has been greatly extended to me, so I humbly desire a continuance thereof, tho' there be no means in me to deserve it. I humbly desire your honour, to make known to her majesty the desire I had to do her majesty service in the performance of this voyage, and as it hath pleased God to give her victory \* over part of her enemies, so I trust, ere long, to see her overthrow them all; for the places of their wealth, whereby they have maintained their wars, are now perfectly discovered, and if it please her majesty, with a very small power, she may take the spoil of them all. It hath pleased the Almighty to suffer me to circumpass the whole globe of the world, entering the Straights of Magellan, and returning by the cape of Buena Esperança. In which voyage, I have brought certain intelligence of all the rich places of the world, that were ever known to any Christian. I navigated along the coast of Chili, Peru, and Nueva España, where I made great spoils. I burnt and sunk 19 sail of ships, all the towns and villages where I landed, I burnt and spoiled, and had I not been discovered upon the coast, I had taken a vast quantity of treasure. The matter of most profit to me, was a great ship of the king's, that I took at California; which came from the Philippines, and one of the richest for merchandize that ever passed those seas; for it did amount, in value, to \*\*\*\*\* in Mexico, to be sold, which goods I was enforced to set on fire, my

---

\* *The Spanish Armada had been defeated just before by Sir Francis Drake.*

G

“ ships

“ Ships not being able to contain them. From the  
 “ cape of California, I navigated to the islands of  
 “ Philippines, hard upon the coast of China, of which  
 “ country I have brought such intelligence, as hath  
 “ not been heard of in these parts. The riches of  
 “ which country I fear to mention, lest I should not  
 “ be credited. I sailed along the islands of the Moluc-  
 “ cas, where, among some of the heathen people, I was  
 “ well treated, and there our people may trade, as freely  
 “ as the Portugals, if they will themselves. From  
 “ hence I passed by the Cape of Good Hope, and, in  
 “ my way homeward, found out the island of St.  
 “ Helena, and from thence God suffered me to re-  
 “ turn to England, who humbly prostrate, at her  
 “ majesty's feet, the most famous and victorious  
 “ princess in the world. Thus humbly begging par-  
 “ don for my tediousness, I leave your lordship to the  
 “ tuition of the Almighty.

“ Plymouth, Sept.

“ 9, 1588.

“ Your Honour's

“ most humble to command,

“ THO. CAVENDISH.

There are man circumstances in this voyage, besides the wonderful success with which it was attended, that deserve to be taken notice of. First, the passing a second time into the South Seas, after the Spaniards had been so alarmed by the former passage of Sir Francis Drake ; when they had receiv'd succours, and fortified themselves strongly in those parts : the exact description he has given us of the Streights of Magellan : and lastly, the attack of the Acapulco ship, with so inconsiderable a force, was a noble instance of true English bravery, which was justly rewarded by the queen with the honour of knighthood. Thus much may be sufficient, with respect to this gentleman's circum-navigation. The riches he got, from so successful a voyage, must certainly have been very considerable ; but whatever the sum was, which he acquired, with so much hazard, it is evident,

evident, that he did not make so prudent a use of it as might have been expected: for in less than three years, the best part was spent; and he was determined to lay out the rest in a second expedition. Nor is this to be wondered at, when we reflect upon his boundless generosity, and the vast expence he was at in procuring and maintaining such people, as he thought might be useful to him in his naval expeditions; on which his mind was wholly fixed: so that what the world took for extravagance, might appear to him only necessary disbursements.

The ships he fitted out, at his own charge, were, the Galleno, Leicester, which was admiral; the Roebuck, vice-admiral; the Desire, the Dainty, and the Black Pinnace; with this squadron he sailed from Plymouth, August 6, 1591. November 29, they reached the coast of Brasil, and took the town of Santos, burnt St. Vincent, and sailed for the Streights of Magellan; meeting with nothing but disappointments, storms, and misfortunes, of which Mr. Cavendish himself gives this account, in a letter he sent to Sir Tristram Gorges, whom he made his sole executor: "the running away  
" of the villain Davis (says he) was the death of me, and  
" decay of the whole action, and his only treachery in  
" running from me, the utter ruin of all." He complains also of mutinies, and that by W. S. W. winds, he was driven 400 leagues from shore: of being taken with winter, and storms, in the Streights, and with such severe frost and snow in May, that, in eight days, he lost 40 men; and had 70 sick. Davis, with the Desire and his Pinnace, left him in the latitude of 47 deg. The Roebuck kept with him to 36 deg. Captain Barker, acting contrary to his orders, was killed, with 25 men, on land, and the boat lost; sometime after, 25 more shared the same fate. Ten others, by the cowardice of the captain of the Roebuck (were forsaken at Spirito Santo) who stole away with 6 months provisions for 120 men, they being only 46. Another mutiny at St. Sebastians, by the treachery of an Irishman; where Mr. Knivet, and other sick persons, were

set ashore. When he wrote this, he was scarce able to hold a pen, and died of grief soon after. — The Black Pinnace was lost. The Desire, after having suffered much, arrived at Beer-Haven in Ireland, July 11, 1593. The admiral's ship also returned; but what became of the Roebuck we cannot learn. We have dwelt the longer on this voyage, from a principle, which we hope will be agreeable to our readers, and which is, to do honour to the British nation, without doing injustice to others. Columbus had the support of their Catholic majesties; Magellan was fitted out by the emperor Charles V. But Sir Francis Drake, and Sir Thomas Cavendish, undertook their expeditions at their own expence, and, with respect to such their undertakings, have excelled all Europe.

---

## CHAP. VI.

*The voyage of Oliver Van Noort (first attempted by the Dutch) round the world.*

ABOUT the beginning of the year 1588, some eminent merchants of the low countries, formed a design of sending some able ships into the South Seas, through the streights of Magellan, to cruise upon the Spaniards; instigated thereto by the reports of many English seamen, who had served under Drake, Cavendish, and other enterprising officers in those parts. As the success of this important expedition depended upon the capacity of the general, for such, in those days, the Dutch, as did most other nations, called the commander in chief, either by land or sea; they took care to provide themselves with a person of an established character, as well in point of conduct, as courage, who was called Oliver Van Noort, a native of Utrecht, in the flower of his age, and whose ruling passion, was that of glory. This man readily came into their scheme; and their terms being settled, they began

began to equip two strong vessels, one named the Maurice, the other, the Henry Frederick; and two yachts, called the Concord, and the Hope, manned by 248 persons of all ranks. Of this little fleet Oliver Van Noort, in the Maurice, was admiral; James Claasz of Ulpenda, was captain of the Henry Frederick, and by title, vice-admiral; Peter Van Lint commanded the Concord; and John Huidecoope, had the Hope, all men of experience, and interested in the voyage. A precaution then, and ever since taken by the Dutch in these cases.

When all things were ready, the proprietors presented a petition to the board of admiralty at Rotterdam, whereupon all parties concerned were summoned before them, and, on June 28, 1598, their regulations for their government in this expedition, which had been drawn up before, were approved by the stadtholder, prince Maurice, and by the board; then publickly read to them, and every man sworn to observe them. September 13, 1598, the Maurice, and the Concord, sailed out of the port of Goeree, and the Henry Frederick, and the Hope, having joined them from Amsterdam, they steered for Plymouth, where their English pilot, Mr. Mellish, who had been the companion of Sir Thomas Cavendish's fortune, was to take in his stores. On the 21st, they left Plymouth, the wind blowing north east; when they were out of the channel, they found the vice-admiral wanted six men, which gave them great uneasiness; but an English privateer coming soon eased their pain, by telling them, these six men were lewd good-for-nothing fellows, who entered into their service, purely for what they could get, and had taken this opportunity to run away with the boat. However, at that time some jealousies arose, as to the conduct and capacity of the vice-admiral, which quickly encreased by his losing a sloop, that he had in tow with a man in her, which they never saw again. This carelessness occasioned murmurings among the crews, which were not a little aggravated, by the vice-admiral's

als haughty behaviour, and contempt of advice, which no man more wanted.

October 6, they came between Teneriff, and the great Canary. December 10, they had sight of Princes island, which lies in 1 deg. of north latitude; they here sent in their boats before to take a view of the island, where, entering with a flag of truce, a negro met them, bearing the same token of peace. They only demanded a supply of provisions, which was granted in friendly terms: but, while this point was settling, a party of Portuguese, that lay in ambuscade, surprised them, and cut off several, amongst whom was the brave English pilot, captain Mellish; they afterwards pursued them to their boats, which they briskly attack'd, killing the admiral's brother, and were very near taking all the rest prisoners. In revenge of this outrage, they burnt all their sugar-houses, and having provided themselves with fresh water, they set sail the 17th; and, on the 25th, reached Cape Gonsalvo, where the wind blows from the land at night, and from the sea in the day. Here they met with two Dutch ships, which informed them, that captain Sleerhagen, with part of his company, were lost on this island; and that Peter Verhagen, who had buried thirty eight of his men here, was gone before to Annobon. January 1, 1589, they passed the island Annobon, which they found in 2 deg. south latitude. The 28th of the same month they had the sun in their zenith. The 5th, they reached Cape St Thomas, which lies upon the coast of Brasil, in 22 deg. south latitude. The 6th, they went by the Fair Cape, and in the evening Cape Frio. The 9th, they came to Rio Janeiro. After some time lost, and company too, by the treachery of the Portuguese, they came to St. Sebastian, where they had the comforts of a good harbour, fresh water, and wood, but no fruits were to be met with at that season. On the 14th of March, they met with a dreadful storm, in which the vice-admiral, and the Hope, were separated from the fleet, but they happily joined again, on the 17th. The  
scurvy



scurvy increased, with the approach of winter, amongst them, which made them resolve to put in at St. Helena; but missing it, they made towards the Ascension, or some other island, where they could meet with some tolerable entertainment; but they had the misfortune to light upon a barren island, in 20 deg. 30 min. south latitude, where they had only a few fowl, called *Mal-le Mewen*, which they knocked down with their clubs. The 1st of June, thinking to reach Ascension, they fell upon the continent of *Brazil*; but the Portuguese, not suffering them to land, they sailed to the island of *St. Clara*, in 21 deg. 15 min. south latitude, where they found little else than herbs; but what it wanted in food, it made up in physic, yielding a sort of four plumbs, which cured all the sick men. June 16, they sailed for port *Desire*, which they reached on the 20th of September, and furnished themselves with store of fish, and pengwins, in an island that lies three miles to the south of it; of the latter sort they took 50,000, with a vast quantity of eggs. October 5, they went up the river, and going ashore, they found beasts like stags, with a number of ostriches, some of whose nests they found, in which were nineteen eggs. The 20th, the admiral went ashore to view the country, leaving orders, that none of them who guarded the boats, should come on land: but instigated by curiosity, they also took a ramble and fell among savages, who killed three of them, and wounded a fourth. These savages were tall, painted, and armed with bows and arrows, pointed with flint.

They left this place the 29th, and November 24, made *Cape Virgins*, where the land is low, plain, and yields a prospect like England; but they could not enter the Straights, being beaten back by tempests, and losing their anchors and cables, so far retarded their voyage, that it was near 15 months, from their first setting out, before they could reach the mouth of the Straights. November 25, they saw some men upon two islands, which lay near *Cape Nassau*, who bid defiance to them; but they landing, pursued them to a  
cave

cave, where they obstinately defended themselves, dying all upon the spot. The Dutch entering, found their wives and children, who, expecting nothing but death, covered the little ones with their own bodies : but the Dutch did no more than take from them four boys, and two girls, whom they brought to their ships. One of the boys, being taught to speak Dutch, told them, that the largest of these two islands was called Castemme, and the tribe which inhabited it Enoo. That the lesser island was called Talike, and that both were well stocked with pengwins, whose flesh was their food, and the skins their cloathing ; that they were distinguished into tribes, which had their several distinct names and residences. The men tie up their pudenda with a string, and the women cover those parts with the skin of a pengwin. The men are painted, and wear long hair, but the women are shaved, and both sexes have no covering, except a short cloak of pengwin-skins, reaching down to their waists. The 28th, they passed over to the continent, saw some whales at a distance, and a pleasant river, near which were fine trees, and store of parrots. From this delightful prospect they gave it the name of Summer's Bay. The 29th, they sailed for port Famine, but could find no remains of the late famous Philip's city, except a heap of stones. Here they cut wood to make them a boat, found the bark of the trees to be hot, and in taste like pepper. Having no good water, they left this place, doubting whether it was port Famine or no ; and about 2 miles off found a good river. December 2, they doubled Cape Froward, with some danger, and passing four miles into a large bay, they cast anchor. Here they got sight of Sebald de Weert's ship, who was one of Verhagen's company. He told them, he had spent 5 months in the Streights, and out of 110 men, had but 38 left ; and not being able to endure the storms of the South Seas, put in there, while the rest of the fleet held on their course.

Jan. 2, 1600, they left this place, and directed their course to Maurice Bay, in which they observed were  
great

great quantities of ice, that seemed not to melt all the year; for tho' it was near Midsummer season, in the southern climate, it was so thick, that at 10 fathom sounding they could not reach the bottom of it. Here they had the distresses of hunger, and rains continually, with the loss of two of their company, who were killed by savages, in picking mussels, which were their chief subsistence. Having weathered many storms in the bay of Meniste, they set sail on the 17th, and were driven into Penguin bay, a league distant, where the vice-admiral, for divers crimes, was condemned by a council of war, to be put on shore among wild beasts and savages, which sentence was executed accordingly.

February 1, they came into another bay, which they named Popish Bay. On the 27th, they saw a huge mountain of ice at a distance, but the last of this month they passed Cape Desire into the South Seas. Their company was now 147, but soon lessened by the loss of the vice-admiral, whom they dropped. March 12, expecting her in the van, they went to the island of Mocha, which lies in 38 deg. south latitude. It has a high mountain in the middle of it, that cleaves at top to make way for a course of water into the valley below. Here they gave knives and forks for sheep, hens, maize, bartulas, and other fruit. They went to see the town, which consisted of about 50 houses of straw, and were entertained with a sour drink, called Cici, made of maize steeped in water. Poligamy is much practised among them, and they may buy as many wives as they can maintain. They have neither laws, nor public magistrates, to keep up any form of justice. Their clothes are made of the wool of a large sort of sheep, which carry burdens. St. Mary's isle lies 6 leagues from hence, in 37 deg. 15 min. south latitude. Here they met with a Spanish ship, that was carrying lard and meal to Araneo and Conception, which they took. The pilot of this ship told them, they could not get back to St. Mary's island, because of the south winds, and that there were two men  
of

of war waiting for their coming into Arica. Upon this information, they sailed to Val Paraíso, and by that means lost their vice-admiral. This Val Paraíso lies in 33 deg. south latitude; and up in the country, about 18 miles farther, lies St. Jago, where there is good store of red wine, and sheep killed only for the fuel, with which alone they freight many vessels. Here they found letters from the captain of the Flying Hart, one of Verhagen's company, who was trappaned by the Spaniards, which fate he had escaped, if St. Mary's island had been rightly placed in the map.

They intercepted some letters at St. Jago, which gave an account that the Indians and Spaniards were at war in Chili, the former having put many of them to the sword, burnt their churches, struck off the heads of their popish images, crying, Down go the gods of the Spaniards. They crammed their mouths with gold, and bid them satisfy themselves with that, for the sake of which they had made so many barbarous massacres among them. They sacked the town of Baldivia, and starved the Spanish garrison in the city Imperiale. The brave Indians, who undertook this action, were about 5000, of which 3000 were horse. They hate the Spaniards mortally, and rip up the bodies of all they kill, to tear out their hearts with their teeth; and it greatly adds to the flavour of their liquor, to drink it out of a cup made of the skull of a Spaniard. They are very stout and skilful soldiers, and all subject to one general, whom they absolutely obey; but their method of chusing him is somewhat odd; for he that can carry a log of timber the longest, without shewing weariness, is saluted generalissimo. Several in this trial bore it 6 hours; but the last carried it 24, and he was general at this time. Chili, from St. Jago to Baldivia, is the most fruitful and pleasant country in the world, affording all sorts of cattle, fruits, and gold mines in abundance; the air is so sweet and wholesome, that it is itself life and medicine, and they have no occasion for other physic.

They

They entered the bay of Guasco on the 1st of April, and left it on the 7th. They came into a large bay on the 11th, called Moro Gorch, ten miles from which is Morro Moreno, from whence the shore runs to Arica. The 20th, the air was all darkened with an arenal, which is a cloud of dust so thick, that a man can't be seen a stone's cast off. They are common in these parts. The 25th, they saw the famous city of Lima, and now came to know the value of the treasure which the malice of the Spaniards had robbed them of, and which otherwise they had found in those ships they took at St. Jago. The discovery was thus made. The captain of the prize, whose name was Nicolas Peterfon, told the admiral, that a negro he had with him informed him, that there was gold on board the ship, to the amount of 3 tons, and that he help'd to carry great part of it into the ship. Upon this information the admiral began to examine the Spanish pilot, who, at first, pleaded ignorance; but another negro having admitted the fact, and acquainted them with some farther circumstances, the pilot confessed they had on board 52 chests, containing each four arobes of gold, and 500 bars of the same metal, weighing from 8 to 12 pounds each, all which, with all private stock, the captain ordered to be thrown overboard, the night before he was chased, in all 10,200 lb. weight of gold, and from its fineness, worth about 2,000,000 of pieces of eight. Upon this, the admiral ordered the ship to be searched, but too late; for they, in her, found only 1 lb. of gold-dust, tied in the Spanish pilot's breeches. The prisoners owned, that all this gold was brought from the island of St. Mary, where the mines were discovered about three years before; and that there were on that island, not above 3 or 4 Spaniards, and about 200 Indians, armed with bows and arrows.

September 5, they came to the island Guana, one of the Ladrões, which is 20 miles in extent, yielding fish, cocoas, bananas, and sugar-canes, which the Indians brought to their ships in canoes to the number of 200, with 4 or 5 men a-piece, who came hollowing,  
Hiero,

Hiero, Hiero, that is, iron, iron. They are sly, subtle people, and will sell you a basket of cocoa shells, with a little rice a-top, for a basket of rice; whip your sword out of the scabbard, then skip into the water, and the women are as good at these rogueries as the men, and will steal with as much assurance, and dive as well to hide it. The 17th, they sailed to the Philippines, and, on the 16th of October, came to Bayla bay, where, pretending to be Spaniards, they got store of provisions: but being at length discovered, they made for the Streight of Manilla. Here a sudden gust of wind from S. E. carried away their masts and sails: some of them went ashore on the 23d, eat palmitos, and drank water, after which they were seized with the bloody flux. The 24th, they entered the Streight, and sailed by the island in the midst, past by the island Capul, where they found whirlpools. November 7, they took a China junk, the master of which, told them, there were then at Manilla two great ships from New Spain, which arrive annually, also a Dutch ship bought at Malacca; that the town was walled, and had two forts; that there was a vast trade from China thither, no less than 400 vessels coming every year from Chincheo, with silk and other valuable things, and particularly two ships were shortly expected from Japan, with metal, and provisions. The 15th, they took two barks, laden with hogs, and hens. They passed the islands Bankingle and Mindore, about two miles from which lies the isle Lou-bon; between these is a lesser island, where is a safe passage. The island Luffon is bigger than England and Scotland, and has a number of smaller islands about it. December 4, lying at anchor in 15 deg. north latitude, in wait for the Japan ships, they took one of 'em. She was 50 tons burden, and had spent 25 days in the voyage. The form of her was very odd, her fore-part being like a chimney; her sails made of reeds, her anchors of wood, the cables of straw. The Japanese aboard were all bald, except one tuft of hair behind: this is the fashion of their country. The 9th, they took two  
barks,

barks, laden with cocoa-wine and aqua vitæ; the other with hens, and rice. One the 14th, they met the Spanish ships going home from Manilla, and a smart engagement began. The Dutch, overpowered by numbers, were reduced to bad circumstances; the Spaniards boarded the admiral, pressed her very hard, and he, seeing all must be lost without a resolute push, threatened to blow up men, ship, and all, if they did not drive the Spaniards off the deck. The Dutch goaded on by rage, fear, hope and despair, cleared their own ship, boarded the Spanish admiral, and sunk her. This action cost them but five lives, and 26 wounded, the whole company being now only 35. From hence they set sail for Borneo, which is 180 miles from Manilla. In their way, they passed by Bolutan, an island 180 miles in length. The 26th they reached Borneo, putting into a large bay three miles in compass. The admiral, by a messenger, desired leave of the king to trade there, which at length was granted, so they traded for pepper with the Patanneese, a people of a Chinese original. The Borneans and they were very fond of China linen, but that which was made in Holland was a meer drug. Here the Borneans formed a plot to seize the ship, and fixed upon the 1st of January 1601 to put it in execution: accordingly they came up with 100 praws, pretending to bring presents from the king, and would have boarded them; but the Dutch obliged them to keep off with their shot. Borneo is the largest island in the East Indies, the chief city containing 3000 houses, but it stands in a marsh, and they go in their praws from one house to another. The inhabitants go all armed, from the nobleman to the fisherman; and the very women have so much of the soldier in them, that if they receive an affront, they instantly revenge themselves with a dagger or javelin. This was experienced by a Dutch man, who having disgusted one of these viragoes, she instantly fell upon him with a javelin, and had certainly killed him, if she had not been prevented by main force. They are Mahometans, and will sooner die than eat any part

H

of

of a swine; nor will they keep any of those creatures about them. The better sort have a linen covering from the waist downwards, and a cotton turbant: the common people go naked. They chew betele, and Arracca in this island, which is a great fashion in many other eastern countries.

January 4, some Borneans came to the ship to cut their cables and bring the ship aground; but being discovered, and pelted with small shot, they marched off, leaving their praw behind, which the Dutch took in lieu of their own boat, that was lost at Manilla. The next day they fell in with a Japan junk, which advised them of a large Dutch ship, forced by storm into Japan; all the crew of which were dead, except fourteen: adding, they first arrived at Bongo, in 34 deg. 40 min. north latitude, and by the king's orders removed to Atonza, in 36 deg. 30 min. to a good harbour, and had liberty not only to trade, but to build a new ship. By this account, they were in no doubt but this was Verhagen's admiral; so, discharging the vessel, they crossed the line a third time, not without much fear and danger, for want of a good pilot and chart. The 16th, they seized a junk of Jor, and in her a skilful pilot, who came opportunely to save them from shipwreck, which very probably would have been their fate in those seas, having but one anchor left, and the cable of that almost worn out: besides, they there had so many shoals and islands, it was next to an impossibility for a stranger not to miscarry. Some of the islands were Binta, and Crinsata, which yield diamonds, and are sold at Malacca. They arrived the 28th at Jortan, upon the island of Java, where they heard of Dutch ships at Bantam. This city contains 1000 houses built of wood. The king commands a large part of that end of the island, and lately subdued Balambuan, a little island, lying south east of Jortan. In this country they are said to be Mahometans, but the many pagods in use still, argue some mixture of the Indian superstition, at least a toleration. The chief priest is an old man of 120, and lives on nothing but milk,



milk, which he sucks from his wives breasts, having a round family of them. Departing from hence, they saw a large Portuguese ship, of 600 ton, stuck fast to the shoals, in her passage to Amboyna, with design to get the trade of that place to herself; but the general suspecting that she put to sea to cruise for them, was the less concerned for her misfortune, and less careful in assisting the crew, which originally consisted of 700 men, of whom many were still aboard, and in danger of perishing.

They passed the Streights between Balamboa the 5th of February, leaving Java on the north east. On the 11th, they were in 13 deg. south latitude, and directed their course for the Cape of Good Hope. The 24th of April, having been long retarded by winds and calms, and reduced to short allowance, they saw at night, a light like fire, about four miles distant to the northwest. The 27th, they came into  $34^{\circ} 40'$  north lat. saw again something like fire, and soon after land, bearing north east. May 2, they saw something like the end of an island, about six miles off, which they satisfied themselves was the Cape. Then they steered to St. Helena, where they arrived the 26th, and refreshed themselves. They departed hence the 30th, and June 14, passed the line a fourth time. The 16th, they met with six Dutch ships, bound for the East-Indies, who fought thirteen Spanish ships near the Salt islands, and had lost their pinnace, and vice-admiral. July 18, after suffering great hardships, three ships of Emden met them, and exchanged bread and fish, for rice and pepper. August 26, they arrived safe at Rotterdam, and were joyfully received.

In this voyage we meet with an account of captain De Weert's being found in the Streights of Magellan, and of being left there by general Van Noort. We shall here therefore add the voyage of De Weert, who was one of the best seamen in Holland, tho' no circumnavigator; and lived to distinguish himself by many successful expeditions.

## C H A P. VII.

*The voyage of captain Sebald De Weert to the South Seas, and the Streights of Magellan, by way of supplement to the foregoing chapter.*

**I**N the year 1598; the city of Rotterdam procured leave of the states of Holland to fit out five ships for the Streights of Magellan. The largest of these was called the Hope, of 500 tons, and 130 men; James Mahu, admiral; the second called the Love, of 300 tons, and 110 men, Simon de Cordes vice-admiral, commander; the third called the Faith, of 320 tons, and 100 men, commanded by Gerard Van Beuningen; the fourth, named the Fidelity, 220 tons, and 86 men, Jurian Bockholt captain; the fifth a yacht, called the Merry Messenger, of 150 tons, and 112 men, under the command of captain Sebald De Weert. The pilot upon whom they chiefly depended, was one William Adams, an Englishman, they had also three Englishmen more on board the admiral. June 27, in the same year, the fleet sailed out of the channel of Goree; but the wind being contrary, they lay in the Downs, on the coast of England, till the 15th of July. They reached the coast of Barbary on the 19th, and about the latter end of August arrived in the harbour of St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verd islands, where they staid till September 10, notwithstanding their pilot, and in particular Mr. Adams, strongly remonstrated against it, which so much offended the officers, that they resolved never more to call them to council, which seems the cause of all their subsequent misfortunes. September 11, in the afternoon, they were off the island of Brava, where they could not anchor, so they tacked all night, and the next morning, as they coasted along, found some fresh water, but very hard to come at; yet the sloops of Beuningen and Bockholt filled their empty casks, and got safe aboard, tho' it was night, and their ships under sail. Captain  
De

De Weert, embarking in the admiral's sloop, put into a sandy bay, and landed; and in seeking about for fresh water, saw some Portuguese and Negroes coming towards him. They did not chuse to come near, so he at a distance desired them to shew him where he might find fresh water, and to sell him some fruit. They answered, he might have water thereabouts, that they had no refreshments, but they would find enough in the island Del Fuego. After they were gone, the captain prying about, found at length four or five little houses; the door of one being blocked up with stones, he opened it, and found it full of Turkey wheat. He instantly sent away the sloop, and, with three of his men, staid to watch it: when good fortune sent a small ship, belonging to the bishop of St. Thomas, taken by the Dutch in Praya, which lay at anchor near, to this De Weert transported all the wheat. They were but eight to carry it, and having no sacks, made use of their breeches. In this place they took also two great tortoises, which had above 600 eggs in their bellies, and made many good meals of them. The next day De Weert landed again, when the Portuguese told him, he had taken away their corn, and they were starving with hunger. The captain answered, he knew this wheat was placed near the road, to be transported to St. Jago, but that he was ready to pay a better price for it, than it could be sold for there, provided they would shew him fresh water, which they promised, but were not so good as their words. De Weert, going aboard again, found the admiral very ill, and the council assembled, and his opinion was, they should stay here no longer. He, at the same time, resigned his command to the vice-admiral. September 15, the fleet sailed south east. The 22d, the vice admiral fired a gun for the captains to come on board, the admiral being past hopes of recovery, his supercargo also exceeding bad, and they both died the next night. Hereupon the vice-admiral was acknowledged admiral, and Beuningen, vice-admiral; Sebald de Weert was

made captain of Beuningen's ship, and Dirkt Ger-  
nitfz-China captain of the yacht.

This done, they sailed S. E. by S. till October 4,  
then run W. S. W., and on the 6th stood E. S. E.  
This Day the Fidelity made a signal to call the captains  
on board; but the wind blowing hard, the vice-ad-  
miral only attended, who found, that most of his  
men were sick of the scurvy. They were then in 1 deg.  
45 min. south latitude. At length this disease en-  
creased to that degree, they had not men enough to  
work the ship. The other ships also were in the same  
condition; therefore the council resolved to make to  
some island for fresh provisions. Accordingly they  
steered to Annobon, where they hoped to find fresh  
meat and oranges; about dark, the admiral fired a gun,  
to let them know he saw land, tho' all the pilots said  
they ought to have been 100 leagues distant. How-  
ever, they all soon after discover'd land, and anchor-  
ed on the coast of Manicongo. Here they lost the little  
ship belonging to St. Thomas. On the 4th of Novem-  
ber, the vice-admiral was ordered to man his sloop and  
canoe, and take a view of the country; who the next  
day, told the admiral he could discover nothing but  
trees; so they resolved to steer for Cape Lopes Gon-  
salves. On the 9th, they arrived on the coast of Guiney,  
where they spoke to some negroes, who at the sight  
of the men and ships ran away in the night. The  
general having found here a convenient place for the  
sick, sent them thither, and each captain had his own  
quarter. Captain Bockholt commanded the little Camp.  
Next day the vice admiral was sent to wait on the king  
of the country, with some presents, in order to pro-  
cure some provisions; but returned with nothing but a  
hen, some plantanes, or bonanas. The 20th, the vice-  
admiral fell sick of a fever, but after some days reco-  
vered. The 23d, Dirck Erkinson's sloop came into  
the road, whose pilot was a Frenchman, and had lived  
some time among the negroes, he promised the Dutch  
to obtain of the king what provisions they wanted;  
upon which the general sent with him captain De  
Weert,

Weert, to speak to the king, who put on his best apparel to receive him. De Weert found him sitting on a stool, about a foot high; like that of a shoemaker. He had a sheepskin under his feet, and attendants about him; was dressed in a purple cloth coat, without lining, embroidered with false gold; no shirt, shoes, nor stockings; but a kind of cap on his head, yellow, red, and blue. His face was powdered with white ashes, to appear whiter, but one might see that he was black. He had about his neck glass beads for a royal ornament; the skins of his gentlemen were painted red, and their heads covered with cocks feathers. By the king was another little seat, covered with a mat for the Dutch captain, who, by his interpreter, told his business. The king listening with great attention to what De Weert said, told him, the Dutch were very welcome, and should be supplied with all necessaries they wanted. Then the king took him to his palace, which was more like a cow-stall; there the king gave him a kid, and some bananas, for small pieces of linen cloth and iron. While they were preparing something to eat, the captain's five musicians struck up a tune, with which the king was extremely pleased: but De Weert was hungry, and would have been better pleas'd with some victuals. When the music was over, the king's wives brought, in a wooden dish, some pieces of a sea horse, and dried fish, of which the king eat but little, and the captain hardly tasted; telling his majesty, if he pleased, he would treat him with some provisions he had brought. So the Dutch spread a napkin, and served up a piece of bread, smoked beef, cheese, and a bottle of sack. The king eat heartily, and drank till he fell asleep. In the interim, the captain took a view of the town, which consisted of about 200 houses; and, not finding the king at his return, would have gone to the ships, but was prevented by a number of negroes armed with bows and arrows. So he returned to the palace, where he was told, the king was not to be seen. De Weert fearing some ill design, resolved to force his way to the sloop; this noise alarm'd the king, who  
came

came out naked, and quarrelled with his subjects, but they seemed to take little notice of his anger: upon this, he desired the captain to stay all night, and send part of his men to the sloop; so he, with eight more, tarried in the town. Next day the negroes brought some bananas, two goats, and four pullets, to exchange with them, which the captain took, and while he was in the town, some of his men went into the woods, and killed a wild boar, two buffs, and some birds; so the captain took leave of the king, and when he returned distributed his provisions to the sick. December 8, they having buried 19 men, the rest came on board; and the same day De Weert fell sick of a fever, which confined him to his bed two months. December 9, the fleet sailed, and, on the 29th, arrived under the island of Annobon. On the 17th, in the morning, they sent two sloops ashore, but were opposed by many armed men, who told them, if they offered to land they would be treated as enemies; of which the general having advice, armed all the sloops, and sent them ashore under the command of captain Bockholt, and the serjeant major. The sloops made to the shore in good order; two on the left hand, and the rest on the right: but the Portuguese, and the Blacks, had carried off every thing, burnt their huts, abandoned the fort the night before, and retired to the mountains. This being a free port, the admiral ordered all the sick to land. The seamen longing for fruit, went about the island to seek for bananas, and oranges, which grow here in plenty. One of them was murdered, and they exposed his carcase in the high way, to insult the Dutch. Hereupon the general sent a party, well armed, up the country, who brought in 27 head of cattle, which was an agreeable prize. The 24th, the admiral detached another party, with orders to march to the mountains, where they found the Portuguese intrenched, who put them in some disorder, which they soon recovered, then marched up the mountain; where finding two passages, they divided into two companies. Being advanced near, the Portuguese shot at them, and  
threw

threw down stones. De Weert's ensign was killed by a shot; and many were wounded. However, the Dutch ascended the mountain, put the Portuguese to flight, and took their fort, wherein they found 100 ton of biscuit, 2 Dutch cheeses, and some earthen pots full of Spanish wine. They also burnt 2 houses full of cotton.

The air of this island being worse than that of Guiney, the seamens diseases encreased every day, therefore, on the 2d of January, 1599, they put to sea, and the next day sailed to the Streights of Magellan. The 22d, they passed the rock of Brasil. March 12, the fleet being near the Rio de Plata, the sea appeared as red as blood. They drew up some of the water, in which were vast numbers of red worms, that leaped out of it like fleas. April 6, they cast anchor under the least of the two islands of Pengwins, 14 leagues from the Streight's mouth. The 9th, they put to sea again, and arrived in a fine bay on the 13th, called by the English Mussel Bay. Here they got fresh water and wood. The 17th, they sailed between two rocky coasts, which lay so close, that they feared they could not pass. The 18th, they cast anchor in the Great Bay, 54 deg. north latitude, in the middle of which are three small islands, full of pimento-trees, resembling bay-trees, only higher. Here they found mussels a span long, which, when boiled, weighed a pound. In this place they lost 100 men, amongst whom was captain Bockholt, who was succeeded by Baltazar de Cordes. The scarcity of victuals was so great, and the climate so sharp, and their appetites so keen, that they eat roots, and other things raw, without staying 'till they were dressed. May 7, the vice-admiral was detached with 2 sloops into an island, over against the Green Bay, to catch some sea-dogs, which are 11 feet high, of a redding colour, with long hair. As soon as the natives saw the sloops, they threw so many stones at the Dutch, that they durst not come near; and when they observed them sheer off, they jumped into their boats, and rowed with great outcries towards the sloops. The vice-admiral suffered  
them

them to advance within musket-shot, then making a general discharge, killed four or five of them, which so frightened the rest, that they ran ashore, and pulled up with their hands some trees about a span thick; but the vice-admiral returned on board. These savages were all naked but one, who had a sea-dog's skin about his shoulders. They had wooden javelins, which they threw with great skill, the point of these was like a cramp-iron, and would run into the flesh so far, as it was scarce possible to dislodge it; with these they killed 3, and wounded 2 Dutchmen. The great hardships they endured in this bay, with the loss of 120 men, made them name it the bay of Cordes, because De Cordes was their admiral at that time. To perpetuate the memory of so dangerous a voyage, the general erected here an order of knighthood, and made the six chief officers knights of it. The ceremony was performed upon the easterly coast of the Streight, and the order was named the Lion set free. They likewise erected a table upon a pillar, whereon the names of the knights were written, and called the bay the Bay of Knights, alluding to the Belgic lion, which they proposed should, from this time, be set at liberty from the Spanish yoke.

August 28, they left this bay, and put into a lesser, about a league off, where they were again becalmed. However, early in the night, of the 3d of September, they got out of the Streights of Magellan, and sailed into the South Sea with a fair wind till the 7th, when the sea, which, in those parts is stormy, began to rise so high, that the vice-admiral was forced to lie by, and hawl his sloop in. At this time an accident happened in the great yacht, which had the wind of the Fidelity, and obliged her also to furl her sails, and lie by with the yacht. The admiral continued his course, thinking the other ships followed; the fog being so thick, they could not see one another. September 8, the two yachts lost the ships, but the next day discovered them, when they joined again. Dircks Geritsz sent to the admiral, to desire his carpenters, but they were



were sick, and could not go: however, those of De Weert and De Cordes went, which proved a great damage to the Faith, and Fidelity; for they never saw them again, the wind shifting on a sudden. Then the sea grew so stormy, that the yacht was forced to lie by a second time. The vice-admiral also, who was a-head of the Faith and Fidelity, did the same: but in the night, the yacht and vice-admiral spread their sails again, without making any signal that was seen by the two other ships, who continued to lie by, being persuaded they did so likewise: when day appeared, the captains of the two first ships were sorely troubled, at not seeing the two others. De Weert, in particular, was deeply afflicted, having no master with him, and but two old pilots, with a few seamen, who were sick and weak, thro' the coldness of the weather. On the 16th, the wind blew hard, and the two ships were in danger of sinking every minute, for the space of 24 hours; besides that, the seamen grumbled, having but 2 ounces of fish a day, and a small share of biscuit. The 26th, in the night, they fell in with the coast, by mistake, thinking they were 20 leagues from land. In the morning, the crew of the Faith seeing land, were in the utmost danger; for the wind standing towards the coast, they discovered two rocks, which they could not avoid, without doubling them. The Fidelity, being a great way before, lay by, and saw the rocks, so sailed on the other side. They were 3 leagues off the Streight when they saw land, and the west wind blowing hard, they could not get off: however, the two captains determined to get into the Streight again, and there stay for a fair wind; seeing it had been previously agreed, that, in case of any accident, they should stay 2 months in the island of Santa Maria one for another. About evening, they arrived in the south point of the mouth of the Streight, and were driven by the current 7 leagues higher, where they anchored, and had fair weather till the last of September, when the south west winds forced them to drop 3 anchors, and for the 2 months they staid there, they had not a fair day to dry  
their

their sails ; so they named it the Bay of Trouble. At length, after they had staid here till December 2, the wind turning north east, they weighed anchor, but could not get off into the main, because of the whirlwind's rising between the hills and the bottom of the bay. The next day, with great difficulty, they got out of the bay, which they called the Close Bay. The 8th, they endured a more violent storm, the waves being higher than the masts. The 10th, the wind falling, De Weert went into his sloop, in order to board the Fidelity, but saw no ship. The next day he rowed towards a gulph, where he saw a mast near a low point, which caused him some joy ; for he went on board the Fidelity, and told them what apprehensions he had been under. He was obliged to leave his little boat, to help to hale the anchors and cables, which she had lost ; then he took his leave, little thinking that he should never see captain Cordes again. The next day, being Sunday, De Weert invited all his seamen to a dinner of geese, ducks, and other fowls they had taken, thanked them for their fidelity, and the hardships they had run thro'. This speech revived the drooping spirits of the seamen ; they took courage again, and rowed to the west part of the bay to get some provisions. As soon as they had doubled the point, they saw 3 canoes, with savages on board ; who, seeing the sloop, ran to shore, and scrambled up the tops of the mountains like monkeys. The Dutch went on board their canoes, but found nothing valuable but a few young pigeons. Then they went ashore, and at the foot of a mountain found a woman and two children, whom they carried on board. She was of a middle size, had a great belly, was of a reddish colour, looked fierce, and her head was shaved, according to the custom of the country. The ornaments she had, were snails-shells hanging about her neck, with a sea dog's skin over her shoulders, tied under her throat with gut-strings. The rest of her body was naked, and her breasts hung down like cow's udders. Her mouth was wide, her legs crooked, and her heels long. She would eat no boiled  
or

or roasted meat, so they gave her some of the birds they brought out of the canoe : she plucked the long feathers, and opened them with mussel-shells ; after that she pulled the guts out, clean'd the gizzard, and eat it raw. Her children eat after the same manner. The one was a girl about 4 years old, and the other a boy about 6 months old, who had most of his teeth, and could go alone. After her meal, she sat down upon her heels, like an ape. When she slept, she lay all of a heap, holding the infant to her breast. They retained her 4 days, when the weather growing fine, the captain sent her ashore, giving her a gown, a cap, and glass beads for a necklace. He also presented her with a nail, an awl, and other trifles, with which she seemed greatly pleased. He then cloathed the boy with a green gown, and decked him out with glass beads of all colours ; but they carried the girl to Amsterdam. The mother was much concerned at the keeping of the girl ; But they carried her ashore to the place she pointed at, about 3 leagues from the ship. When they were come on board again, a violent storm arose, which frightened them out of their wits. This accident obliged them to sail before the wind to the bay of De Cordes, because they knew there was a good bottom. With this view they coasted away southward, that they might be seen by the Fidelity. When they were got in, they fired a gun, to give notice to the captain, and imagined he fired another, as a signal of his hearing them. So the Faith continued her course, but the wind drove them so fast, that they lost the sloop, which was a great loss indeed.

December 16, they saw the admiral's sloop coming, whose crew was received by the captain with great respect, were all in perfect health, and told him, they had taken above 2000 birds in the great island of Pengwins. The next day, the general himself came to visit De Weert, and the day following the whole fleet joined him, and set sail. Having sailed two or three hours, captain De Weert desired the general to lend him his sloop, and three or four men, to go before,

fore, and tell captain Cordes to make ready to sail with the rest. He rowed along a small island, but finding no body, returned on board. His ship was now become very foul, and could not follow the others; and for that reason, when she was off the Bay of Knights, at ebb-water, she sailed again to the same place. December 24, they tried again to double the point, behind which the fleet lay at anchor. but could not. The captain seeing it impossible to double the point with that wind, resolved to stay till it changed, lest he should fatigue his men too much: but the general, tho' the wind was contrary, sailed away. Then De Weert, fearing he should never see the fleet again, tho' he was not far off; and well knowing that he could not go without a sloop or boat, ordered the pieces of a large old sloop to be taken out of the hold to build another, which was on Christmas day: but the next day he put off the work, in hopes of getting into the little bay; but the violence of the winds forced him back again into the bay of De Cordes. The 26th and 27th the seamen began to grumble, and grow insolent, whom the captain appeased by good words. However he got the sloop built, and on January 1, 1600, went on board her, and steered her himself on shore, for the better caulking of her.

Having doubled the south point in the afternoon of the same day, he saw the two sloops of general Van Noort, who being put back to the Bay of Knights, to see if the Faith continued in the Bay of Cordes, brought a piece of ice about four feet thick, and said, they had seen many much thicker, tho' it was the middle of summer; and the savages were all naked. Next day the general returned back, and promised to send out his sloop in quest of the Fidelity. The captain sent his, with his ensign and pilot, for the same purpose; and, as they passed by the fleet, charged them with a letter to the general, to desire he would send him biscuit for two months. January 5, the sloop returned with this answer, "that he could spare none" which much afflicted De Weert, who had no hopes of meeting

ing again with captain Cordes, so he resolved to return to the island of Pengwins, and lay in a good stock of them, that they might be able to follow the fleet. Before he went off, he wrote a letter to captain Cordes which he left at the foot of a tree, upon which the general had marked the date of his fleet passing by that place ; and nailed a board upon the tree, with these words written on it. Look into the foot of the tree. January 12, they anchored under the least of the islands of Pengwins. Coming near the shore, they saw a multitude of birds, and killed as many as they could. In the mean time, the sea grew so rough, that the three seamen, who were sent ashore in the sloop, could not get into her, but expected every minute to see her split to pieces against the rocks. In short, at low water, the sloop being aground, they providentially found an axe, with other tools, and nails, which gave them some hopes of returning to the ship again ; but it being night, they were forced to lie quiet till next day ; so they passed the night in the open air, made fires, and eat a few birds half roasted without any thing to drink. At day break next morning they all set to work, and refitted that side of the sloop which was most damaged ; the next day they mended the other side, then laded the water out of her, and loaded her with 450 pengwins, and that evening went aboard the ship, after they had been three days ashore. The full-grown pengwins weigh from twelve to sixteen pound, the young ones from eight to twelve, they are black upon the back, and white under the belly, some have a white ring about the neck. Their skin is much like that of the sea-dog's, and as thick as that of a wild boar ; their bill is like that of a raven ; their neck is short and thick, the body as long as a goose. Instead of wings, they have two fins hanging down, covered with feathers, with these they swim very strong. They seldom come ashore but when they brood, and then they nestle three or four in a hole : they have black feet like those of a swan. They walk upright, with their fins hanging down like a man's arm ; which makes them look at a distance

like pigmies. They live upon nothing but fish, and yet have no rank taste. They make their holes in the downs like coney-borroughs, and the ground about is so full of them, that you can hardly walk without slipping in up to the knees.

January 15, they came to the great island of pengwins, where they might have furnished twenty five ships; for, in less than two hours, they took near 1000. Next day, while they were salting them, a great storm arose, which carried the ship out of sight of the island, and obliged the captain to shorten the allowance of biscuit, to a quarter of a pound a man per day. The 17th, they came to the island again, where a storm rose with such violence, that they were forced to cut the cable, and continue under sail, but not without great grief, on losing their anchor, having but one left. January 21, 1600, they sailed out of the chanel with a southwest wind, and, after having spent nine months in those seas, in a deplorable condition, they left the sloop to drive into the sea. The 24th, in the morning, they found three small islands to the windward, not marked in the map, which they named the Sebaldine islands. They are 60 leagues from the continent, in 50 deg. 40 min. March 15, they passed the equinoctial line, and, on the 28th, saw the Cape of Monte, on the coast of Guiney, but having neither sloop, nor boat, and but one anchor, they could not land. April 1, they discovered fire in the night, which by day-light, they found to be on shore, being driven too near by the currents. At this time their pengwins were all gone, and they had but a small quantity of biscuit, and rice; yet, during the five weeks they steered about the coast, by reason of a calm, they found plenty of all kinds of fish, both great and small. The captain, not knowing how long he should be obliged to stay in those parts, ordered a small boat to be built, which was finished in twelve days; but they had no need of it, for on the 24th of the same month, the wind being fair, they sailed to the Azoree islands.

May

May 21, they passed the tropic of Cancer, catching a vast quantity of fish; so that they had enough both for salting and drying. But when they got off the Azores, they found no more fish, and were forced to eat those that were salted, which caused many distempers among the men; they were parched up within, and so dry, they could never quench their thirst, and their bodies were covered over with red spots, like a leprosy.

July 6, the ship reached the English channel; and the captain landed at Dover, to buy an anchor, and a cable, but finding none, he sailed the same evening. On the 15th, while he lay at the mouth of the Maese, waiting for a tide, with a pilot on board, the wind forced him into the channel of Goerte, where a seaman died, being the sixty ninth that was lost in the voyage, those remaining being only thirty six; who returned thanks to God for their deliverance.

## C H A P. VIII.

*The voyage of George Spilbergen, in quality of admiral of six Dutch ships, round the world.*

THE Dutch East India company being very desirous of making a successful voyage thro' the Straights of Magellan, to the East Indies, granted a commission to George Spilbergen, who was well skilled in maritime affairs, for this purpose; and ordered six ships to be fitted out for that service, viz. the Great Sun, the Full Moon, the Huntsman, the Sea Mew, the *Æolus*, and the Morning Star. On the 8th of August, 1614, this fleet sailed out of the Texel. They continued their voyage without any remarkable incident till October 3, when they reached the height of Madeira. They saw the islands of Brava and Fogo, and on the 23d, passed the Cape de Verde islands. December 12, in the same year, they discovered the continent of Brasil. On the 19th, they were at the mouth of Rio Janeiro. On the 20th they anchored in the road of Ilas Grandes, in 13 fathom water. On the

28th, the admiral hoisted a white flag for holding a council; wherein it was ordered that the Huntsman, should guard the shallops, that were to go for water to a river two leagues off; with express orders, for the captain to anchor as close to shore as possible; tho' when he got out of sight of the fleet, he anchored above a cannon shot distance. The 29th, the admiral's shallop and canoe went to take in water, and a body of seamen were put on shore to cut wood, who brought as much as their vessels would hold. In about three hours they went for more, but were obliged to stay all night under a hut, erected for the sick, who were here set ashore. When they came aboard in the morning, they said, that they, in the night, heard a number of voices, and a trampling of people in the wood. On the 30th, three other shallops, with ten soldiers and the Huntsman were sent to the watering-place. They had not been long from the fleet, before several cannon shot were fired from the Huntsman; upon which the admiral sent three shallops, well armed, to enquire into the cause of it; who no sooner came aboard, than they were told, that the Portuguese, and Mestizos, had attacked the three shallops, and murdered every soul in them; and that this barbarity was not in their power to revenge, by reason of two stout frigates, riding at anchor in the place, to which the Portuguese, &c. retired.

January 1, 1615, two were executed, for being concerned with certain mutinous persons, in a conspiracy to run away with the ship; soon after a council was called, in which it was resolved, that if any ship lost the rest, they should set upon a mark in De Cordes haven, stay here for a limited time, and then sail to La Mocha. March 7, they met with a violent storm, which lasted several days, and separated them. The 28th, they would have entered the Streight, but were driven back. April 2, they re-entered, but could not cast anchor, because of the shoals, where, on sounding for a quarter of a league, they found but three fathom water. Here they saw a man of a gigantic stature, climbing the mountains to look at them. This was Del Fogo, which



is at the south of the Streight. On the 16th they went ashore, conferred with the savages, and entered into commerce, giving them sack, and knives, for pearls joined together. May 6, they passed into the South Seas, and were welcomed into the Pacific ocean by a terrible storm. The 21st, they had sight of Chili, and La Mocha. On the 26th, they sent out boats to these islands, to try if they could traffic with the people; and the governor and his son dined with the admiral. They exchanged here hatchets for sheep, and coral for hens, and other fowls. On the 29th, they came to the harbour of St Mary. Next morning, they went ashore with three ensigns, at the sight of whom, the Spaniards set their church on fire, and fled. Here the Dutch found many hens, took 600 sheep, and had intelligence of three ships, manned with 1000 Spaniards, which were purposely sent out for them. June 13, at midday they came into 32 deg. 15 min and towards the evening reached the secure harbour of Quintero. Here they caught many fish, and for wood, water and other things, found the place very commodious. July 2, they came to Arica. On the 16th, they took a ship with a small quantity of treasure, which was embezzelled by the seamen: they took out the commodities, and sunk her, soon after, they discerned eight sail; which, the Spanish master of the former ship assured them was the royal fleet, sent out from Peru in search of them, under the command of admiral Don Roderigo De Mendoza, the vice-roy's kinsman. July 17, they came in sight of each other, and a bloody battle ensued, wherein most part of the Spanish fleet was sunk. In this action, the Dutch lost 40 men, and had 58 wounded. The next day, they sailed for Calao De Lima, but finding great preparations made for their reception, were obliged to retire out of the reach of their shot.

August 3, they passed between the island Loubes, and the continent, where they dismissed some of the Spanish prisoners. In this island they took two fowls of a vast size; their wings, beaks, and talons, like an eagle; their necks like a sheep; and with combs on their heads like a cock: they were two ells high, and their wings, when

when extended, three in breadth. On the 8th, they anchored near Payta; on the 10th they battered the town, and sent a number of men ashore, but the city was forsaken, and the people with their goods fled. The 21st, they put to sea again; but were greatly distressed with famine, and sickness, till October 11, when they entered the haven of Acapulco, where, hanging out a flag of peace, two Spaniards came aboard, and they agreed to exchange prisoners for sheep, fruits, and provisions. The 18th, they set sail again, and anchored on the 1st of September, before port Selagues; where they procured all conveniences they wanted, after a smart engagement with the Spaniards. On the 11th, they sailed for port Nativity, from whence they departed the 20th. December 3, they saw a new island with 5 hills, which looked like so many distinct islands; and the next day a vast rock, in 19 deg. 50 leagues from the continent.

January 4, 1616, they landed at the Ladrones; and reached the Manillas on the 9th of February. On the 11th, they went to Capul, where the people gave them fat hogs, and hens, for trifles. The 19th, they anchored before the island of Luconia, in which is the city of Manilla. Here was a curious fabric, artfully erected on the tops of trees, which looked like a palace at a distance, but who were the inhabitants they could not imagine. March 5, they had intelligence of a fleet of 12 ships, and four gallies, armed with 2000 Spaniards, besides Indians, Chinese, and Japonese, which were sent to drive the Dutch out of the Moluccas. The 29th, they came to Ternate, in which the Dutch possessed the town Macia, where these their unlooked-for countrymen, were, by the inhabitants, made very welcome. Nothing more of any consequence happened till the 12th of May, when they were informed by Mr. Casleton, who commanded four English ships, that the Dutch general John Dirksen Lam, who had sailed from the island of Banda, in the spring of the year, with 12 men of war, and a body of forces on board, landed April 10 on the island of Pulo Wai, the richest of all the islands in these parts, of which, he, with great ease, made

made himself master; and the inhabitants of the adjacent isles, being summoned before him, submitted immediately, and they all entered into a treaty with him, very advantageous to the company; hereby securing to them the sole trade of all the best nutmegs in India. On the 16th, the Dutch admiral delivered 7 Dutch seamen from the gallies and prisons of the Spaniards, where they had been confined four years. A few days after, another Dutchman joined them, whose name was Peter De Vivere; he had been prisoner among the Spaniards several years, at first in the gallies; but being an excellent goldsmith, and having married a Spanish wife, they gave him leave to work at his trade; but he found means to escape, and brought his wife away with him. This man was of great use, having a clear understanding, and being thoroughly acquainted with the nature and value of all the commodities in the Indies; he gave the Dutch governors more insight in these matters, than it was possible for them to have obtained any other way.

May 30, they sailed on a cruise, but were soon after recalled. On their return, they found 12 large Dutch ships from Amboina, in the road of Malaya, where it was debated, whether they should attack Tidore, or any other of the enemies settlements; but nothing was put in execution. June 19, the Council proceeded to the election of a governor and general of the Indies, in which command, the next day, Laurence De Reat was installed. Soon after admiral Spilbergen, receiv'd orders to sail with two ships to the island of Java, and the city of Bantam, with instructions to settle the trade there. June 27, they proceeded to Batavia, where they arrived September 7, and careened their ships. While they were thus employed, they had the satisfaction of preceiving the vast increase of the Dutch trade; for in that time, there came in 4 ships from the Moluccas, laden with the richest spices; 4 from Holland with several hundred soldiers on board to supply the garrison; also a rich ship from Japan, with a great quantity of rials, uncoined plate, and other valuable goods. On the  
20th

20th, arrived there a vessel called the Concord of Horn, Jaques le Maire captain, who had passed thro' the Streight of Magellan, and by that route arrived in the East Indies: but as it was known he did not make this voyage on account of the East India company, his ship and cargo were confiscated, and his crew distributed, among the ships in the company's service. It here may be worthy notice, how soon exclusive corporations begin to exercise acts of severity: the East India company, at this time, having not been founded above 14 years.

December 14, the admiral hoisted sail at Bantam, to proceed for Holland, with the Amsterdam of 1400 tons, and the Zealand of 1200 tons, under his command. On the 22d died Jaques Le Maire, of a broken heart. January 1, 1617, the Amsterdam lost sight of the Zealand. On the 30th, they arrived at St. Helena, where they found the Zealand, which came in some days before. July 1, they arrived in Holland, having been out two years and eleven months. From this voyage the Dutch East India company may be said to have dated their grandeur, in respect to reputation and power, the former resulted, in some measure, from his surrounding the globe; the latter, not only from his assisting in the conquest of the Moluccas, but from his bringing home the first account of that important action.

## C H A P. IX.

*The remarkable voyage of William Cornelison Schouten, of Horn, and Jaques Le Maire, round the globe, by a new passage into the South Seas.*

**W**HEN the states general of the United Provinces had granted an exclusive charter to the East India company, prohibiting all others from trading east, beyond the Cape of Good Hope, or west, thro' the Streight of Magellan; the prohibition gave great displeasure

displeasure to many rich merchants, who resolved upon fitting out ships, for making further discoveries; and in the spring of the year 1615, this separate company engaged in the undertaking, and proposed to equip, for that purpose, two vessels, the larger of which should be commanded by William Cornelifon Schovton, and that Jaques Le Maire should be the first supercargo. In the space of two months all things were ready, and a sufficient number of men engaged for navigating the two ships; that commanded by William Schovton was called the *Unity*, of 360 tons, nineteen pieces of cannon, and 10 swivels; furnished with all things necessary for so long a voyage: the lesser was called the *Horn*, of 110 tons, eight cannon, and four swivels, John Cornelifon Schovton master, and Aris Clawson supercargo. June 14, they sailed out of the Texel; and on the 17th, anchored in the downs, and hired an English gunner at Dover; on the 27th, they reached Plymouth, and there hired a carpenter. This shews in what great esteem the English artificers were at that time. The 28th, they sailed from Plymouth; and on the 13th of July following, they passed between the island Teneriff and the Grand Canary: the 15th, they crossed the tropic of Cancer, and the 20th, fell in with the north side of Cape Verd, where they anchored all night. The 25th, the Moorish Alcaid came aboard, and they agreed with him for a supply of fresh water. August 1, they left the cape; and, on the 21st of the same month, saw the land of Sierra Leona, which is the highest of all that lies between Cape Verd, and the coast of Guiney. On the 30th, they arrived before the village that looks upon the road of Sierra Leona, and anchored in a sandy bottom, a little from the shore. The village consisted but of eight or nine poor houses, covered with straw; the moors, who dwelt there, were willing to come aboard, only demanded pledges to be left ashore to secure their return; because a French ship had just before carried off two of them: Hereupon Aris Clawson, the merchant, went ashore, and staid among them, driving a small trade with them for lemons and bananas,

bananas, which they exchanged for glass beads. September 1, they drove away with the stream, and anchored that evening at the mouth of the sea, before the end of a river, where they took an antelope in the woods, some lemons and palmitos, and had good success in fishing. They departed from hence the 4th; and on the 5th of the next month, made 4 deg. 27 min. south latitude. The same day at noon they were much surprised with a violent stroke given to the lower part of one of the ships, when no rock or enemy appeared; while they amused themselves with this phenomenon, they observed the sea about them to appear red as blood; but never found out the cause of either, till they came to port Desire, and set the ship on the strand to clean her: for then they found a large horn, resembling an elephant's tooth, which had pierced thro' three stout planks of the ship, and razed one of her ribs. It stuck about six inches in the ship, and as much of it appeared without: hence they concluded, some sea monster had attacked her, and not being able to draw back his weapon after the thrust, had there broke it off, which occasioned that effusion of blood, as had tinged the sea to such a degree. They had now sailed so far, that none in the ships, excepting the master, knew where they were, till he discovered to them his design of going to find a new southerly passage into the Pacific ocean. November 3, in the afternoon, they got sight of Ascension island, under 20 deg. The 21st, they came under 38 deg. 25 min. Here the variation of the compass was 17 deg. to the north-east. December 6, they had a prospect of land, and fell in with the north side of port Desire, and entered the haven on the 7th, which lies under 47 deg. 40 min. At the entry of it they had very high water, neither did any of those cliffs, which Van Noort had described, appear. Upon this, they went on sailing so far south, as to miss the right chanel, and came into a crooked bay, where at high water they had but four fathom and a half; and at low but fourteen feet. Here the stern of the *Unity* lay fast aground; but the  
wind

wind blowing west from the land she recovered. Here also they found plenty of eggs among the cliffs, mussels, and smelts eighteen inches long; for this reason, they called it Smelts Bay. Their shallop went to the Penguin islands, and brought 150 pengwins, with two sea lions. The 8th, they sailed out of the Smelt Bay, and anchored just before port Desire, where the Unity was given over for lost, having sunk down on one side at low water, above three feet lower than the keel; and yet the succeeding flood set her upright again. This danger over, they went farther up the river, and on the 9th came to King's island, which they found full of sea-mews, and almost covered over with eggs. They saw ostriches here, and a sort of beasts like harts, with very long necks, extremely wild. On the 17th, they laid the Unity down upon King's island. On the 18th, they hauled the Horn on shore for the same purpose. On the 19th, a dreadful accident happened, while they were busy in cleaning the ships. In order to this it was necessary to make a fire of reeds; the flame of which got into the Horn, and set her on fire, and they, being fifty feet from the water side, could not extinguish it. On the 20th, at high water, they launched the Unity, and carried on board all the cannon, iron work, anchors, and whatever else they were able to save out of the Horn.

January 13, they sailed from port Desire. The 18th, being in 51 deg. they saw the Sebaldine islands. The 20th, they came into 53 deg. and observed the great current that runs south west, now reckoning about 20 leagues distant from the Magellanic Straights. The 23d, they had an uncertain shifting wind, and the water appeared white. They held their course south by west, and the same day saw land bearing W. S. W. and soon after to the south. The 24th, in the forenoon, they saw land a starboard, with very large high hills, covered with ice, and then other land bearing east from it. They guessed, the lands which this prospect afforded, lay about eight leagues asunder, and imagined there might be a good passage between them,

K

because

because of a brisk south current, which ran by them. At noon day, they made 54 deg. 46 min. where they saw an incredible number of pengwins, and such large shoals of whales, that they were forced to sail with great caution. The 25th, in the morning, they got up close by the east land, which reached E. S. E. as far as they could see. This they called States Land; and that which lay west, they named Maurice Land. At noon, they made 55 deg 36 min. and then held a south west course. In the evening, going before a south west wind, they steered south, where they had full assurance that the great South Sea was now before them, into which they made their way by a passage of their own discovery. The sea-mews here were bigger than swans, and their wings when extended, spread to a fathom's length. They would sit down tamely on the ship's side, and suffer themselves to be taken in hand. The 26th, they made 57 deg. and being driven by a storm from the W. S. W. course, they changed it for a north west one. The 27th, they were under 56 deg. 31 min. the weather very cold with hail and rain. The 28th, they held their course W. and W. by S. which brought them under 56 deg. 48 min.

The 29th, they held their course south west, which gave them a prospect of two islands; they reached them at noon, holding their course to the north, to which they gave the name of Barnevelt's islands; and found their latitude 57 deg. south. Hence they sailed north west, and in the evening saw land again, which was high and hilly, covered with snow, and lay south from the Straights of Magellan, ending in a sharp point, which they called Cape Horn, lying in 57 deg. 48 min. They now held their course west, and found a strong current running that way; which gave them strong assurance that the road was open into the South Sea. The 31st, they sailed west, the wind at north, and made 58 deg. Feb. 2, with a west wind they sailed south, and made 57 deg. 48 min. the variation being there 2 deg. north. The 12th, they plainly saw the Magellanic Straights lying to the east of them. Now, being



being secure of their happy discovery, they christened this new passage in a cup of wine, which went 3 times round the company, by the name of Maire's Streights. The 27th, they made 40 deg. south latitude, and held their course north. March 1, they saw the islands of Ferdinando to the N. N. E. and got up to them about noon, under 33 deg. 48 min. The two next days successively, they attempted to anchor close by the land, but could not accomplish their design. However, their men followed the fishing trade, in which they succeeded so far, as that they took almost 2 tons of fish with hooks only; and this too, while some of the company went to fetch water. The 11th, they left these islands, and passed the tropic of Capricorn, holding their course north west till the 15th, when they made 18 deg. and sailed west. April 3, they made 15 deg 12 min. where the best part of their company was seized with the flux. They saw a little low island three leagues distant, which they got up to at noon; but could find no place to anchor in, and therefore put out their shallop. The men that went ashore found nothing but herbs, which tasted like scurvy-grass. They gave an account of a silent sort of dogs they saw there, that would neither bark, nor snarl; so they called it Dog Island. It lies in 15 deg. 12 min. and as they judged 925 leagues from Peru.

The 14th, they sailed W. and by W. by N. and in the afternoon, saw a large island, stretching N. E. and by S. W. About sun-set they got up to it, when an Indian canoe came to meet them. The men naked, with long black hair, and their bodies of a reddish colour. They made signs for the Dutch to come ashore, and invited them thither in their own language; tho' neither parties understood one another.

They got up to the island, but could find no bottom; but however had another unintelligible conference, but could not persuade any of 'em to come on board; so they bore away S. S. W. and having made that night ten leagues, they sailed near the shore, on which stood several of those naked people, beckoning to them, as

they thought, to land. The Dutch having a mind to try if any thing could be got out of the island, sent their shallop, with eight musqueteers, six soldiers, and more of the ship's company: they no sooner landed, but 30 of those people rushed out of a wood upon them, with great clubs, slings, and long staves, endeavouring to seize the shallop, and to taken away the soldiers arms; but the musquets being discharged, prevented their intended robbery. They called this island, the Isle without Ground, because they could not anchor here. The 16th, they reached another island, about 15 leagues distant, which, tho' set round with trees, appeared to lie under water, and here also they found no bottom. It afforded them nothing but herbs, crabs, and other shell fish; tho' they found fresh water in a pit not far from shore. The pottage made of these herbs proved serviceable to those who were afflicted with the flux. This island they called Water island. The next day they made another island, 20 leagues distant from the last; and the boat, being sent to sound the depth, brought word they had found a bottom by a point of land: hereupon they came to a gentle stream, about a musket shot from the shore. This advice of water, made them send their empty casks, in hopes to have them filled; but after they had taken great pains to land, and beaten about the woods to find springs, the sight of a wild man frightened them away. Soon after they were got into the ship, 5 or 6 more of those savages appeared on the shore; but seeing them gone off, retired into the woods: and tho' they escaped from these formidable enemies, they brought others, which stuck close to them, and were a sort of black flies, of which there were such prodigious swarms, that they returned covered over from head to foot; their boat, oars, hands, faces, and cloaths, were hid by those crawling animals. It was the best part of that day's work to be flapping them away, and very difficult for a man to speak, or eat, without taking in a mouthful of these vermin. This persecution lasted four days, and they named the place, Fly Island.

May,

May 10, they sailed W. S. W. and on the 11th, made a very high island; about which time a bark came up to them; but sheered off at such a rate, as few Dutch ships could outstrip her. Sending their shallop to sound by this island, they were informed, that there was ground, but shelvy, at 12, 14, and 15 fathom, about a cannon shot from land, so they resolved to anchor. This island lies in 16 deg. 10 min. is one entire mountain, and looks like one of the Moluccas. Here they were attacked by the inhabitants, with a fleet of 800 canoes, whom they soon dispersed with their small arms. The 18th, they were under 16 deg. 5 min. where they consulted about further prosecuting the voyage. William Shovten told them, they were now 1600 leagues from the coast of Peru; and that, going on the course they had hitherto pursued, they must certainly fall southward upon New Guiney. Upon this they steered North East, towards two islands about 8 leagues distant. The 21st, being about a league from land, they were visited by 2 canoes, who rudely insulted them without any provocation, but were soon sent away by the discharge of their guns. The 22d, more of them came to the ship, upon friendly terms, bringing cocoa, ubes-roats, and roasted hogs, which they bartered for knives, beads, and nails. Their houses stood all along the strand, covered on the top with leaves, and had a penthouse of the same to carry off the water. They were about 12 feet high, and 25 in compass. The Dutch here found good water; and, on the 24th, sent 3 of the principal men of the ship to make friendship with the Indians, having in their room six Indians of quality on board, as hostages. The Dutch ashore had great respect shewed to them by the king, who made them a present of four hogs, and the Indians on board were made very welcome. The king, having a desire to hear one of the great guns fired, seated himself in great order under a canopy ashore, with his courtiers about him; but upon the discharge of the gun, he jumped off the seat, and ran into the woods, with all his courtiers after him, so that the Dutch could not possible stop him. The 25th and 26th they

they went ashore again to barter for hogs, but could get none, the Indians being reduced to some streights themselves. Yet the king continued his kindness to them, and he, and his lieutenant, pulled off their crowns from their heads, which were made of white, red, and green feathers, which their parrots, and doves supplied. Every one of the king's council has one of these set by him upon a stick. The 27th and 28th they got in all their water, and the master, and merchants, went ashore with their trumpets, with which the king was highly delighted; but they could observe he seemed fearful they had some design of invading his country, by his telling them, if they would depart in two days, he would give them ten hogs, and a good parcel of co-coas; yet, notwithstanding his suspicions, he came on board, praying in every place he entered. The 30th, was a day of rejoicing, on account of a king of another island's coming to visit him, who had a train of 300 naked Indians, with bunches of green herbs stuck about their middles, of which they prepare their drink. When the two princes came within sight of each other they bowed, and muttered certain prayers. When they met, they both prostrated themselves upon the ground; and after several strange gestures, they arose, and walked to the seats provided for them: and now to make the royal stranger welcome, the king dispatched a messenger to the Dutch ship, to get their drums and trumpets ashore. They came. The trumpets sounded, a march was beat, with which their Indian majesties seemed greatly pleased. This over, a solemn banquet was prepared, in order to which they began to make ready the liquor, which was done in the following slovenly manner. A company of fellows brought them a good quantity of cana, each of them crammed in a mouthful of it, and having chewed it awhile, put it out of their mouths into a wooden trough; then poured water upon it, and after stirring, and squeezing it, pressed out all the goodness, and presented it in cups to the two kings, who offered it to the Dutch, that were ready to spew at the preparation. Their eating consisted of ubes-roots, and

and hogs dressed very nicely ; of which they presented two to the Dutch. They gave them besides, eleven more alive, for which they received knives, old nails, and beads. These people are of a dark yellow colour, tall and big. They wear their hair, some curled, some frizzled, some tied up in knots, some have it standing upright on their heads like hogs bristles, eleven inches high. The women have very ugly features, are short, and ill shaped, with their hair cut close, and their breasts hanging down to their bellies. Both sexes are naked all to the pudenda. They are intirely void of all care and prudence, living like the brutal creation, upon what the earth produces. They have no regard to decency or modesty, for they will make use of their wives openly, even in the greatest assembly, and before the king also. During the whole month of June, they met with nothing worthy notice. July 1, in the morning, they anchored between an island, and the firm land of Guiney, and were soon surrounded by twenty-five armed canoes full of people; two of whom, fixed themselves upon two anchors, and with their girdles, began to tug the ship, hoping to draw her ashore. The rest lay about the sides of her, and gave a brisk onset with their slings, &c. but the guns, the everlasting plagues of these savages, shattered the men and canones all to pieces; killed fourteen, and wounded as many more. The 2d, they were in 3 deg. 12 min. and sailed gently W. N. W. The 3d, they saw land, bearing west, about fourteen leagues from the former island in 2 deg. 41 min. The 4th, they saw twenty three islands, great and small, high and low, which lay in 2 deg. 30 min. The 6th, they had a very high hill before them. The 7th, they sailed towards those mighty hills, and found some of them to be volcanoes. The 8th, they steered W. S. W. having on their starboard a high island, and another something lower on the larboard. Here they anchored in the afternoon, about a cannon shot from shore, at 70 fathom. This island yielded nothing considerable, except a little ginger. It was inhabited by Papoos, whose dress and deformity made them appear monsters in human shape. There were scarce any of them

them, but had something very odd in the bigness or position of their limbs; the strings of hogs teeth hung around their necks, and their perforated noses, with rings in them, short frizzled hair, and ugly faces, would shock a European spectator: neither were their houses less odious than the inhabitants. The 9th, they anchored in a more convenient bay, at twenty six fathom, where two villages of the Indians were situated near the shore, from whence some canoes brought hogs and cocoas, but held them up at so dear a price, that there was no bartering with them. Now, having sailed so long by this new land, they knew not whether it was New Guiney or not. On the 13th and 14th, they kept sailing by the coast; and on the 15th saw two low islands, about 2 deg. 54 min. south latitude. The 16th, in the morning, they anchored in nine fathom water, and the same day went ashore on the lesser island, burnt some Indian houses, and brought off a good quantity of cocoas. Upon this treatment, the barbarous people became more gentle; and on the 17th, made their peace-offerings. The 18th, they bartered for cocoas, \* cassave, and papade: the people make all their bread of the 2 last. This island lies about six leagues from new Guiney Arimea. These people seemed to have been visited by the Europeans before; for they had Spanish jars, and pots among them, and were not surpris'd at the noise of guns. The 23d, in the morning, setting sail from thence six great canoes overtook them a little from the land, bringing dried fish, cocoas, bananas, tobacco, and a small kind of fruit, like prunes; they were vastly fond of beads and iron, like the rest of the Indians; but were remarkably distinguished from those we saw last, by their gigantic size, and orange complexion. The 29th, at night, they had an earthquake, which frightened the crew so much, and shocked the ship at such a rate, that they expected she had run aground, but when they found, in the morning, the water was unfathomable, and they were clear of rocks and shelves, they concluded it was the effect

---

\* These two are East India commodities, and the last is admirably good in the West Indies. of

of a violent concussion of the submarine regions. The 31st, they passed the equator a second time, and being almost encompassed round with land, they anchored at twelve fathom, by a desolate island, that lay near land. August 1, they made 15 min. north latitude. The 2d and 3d, being becalmed, they drove with the stream, and the last day made 35 min. north latitude, saw several tortoises, with two islands lying to the west, and now imagined they were at the end of the land of New Guiney.

The 5th, in the morning, several canoes with Indian beans, rice, tobacco, and two birds of paradise came up to them, they bartered for one of these birds, which was all white and yellow. They spoke the Ternate language here, and some of them the Spanish and Malayan, which latter tongue Clawson the merchant, understood very well. They were finely clothed about their waists; some with loose silks, others with breeches, and some with silken wreaths about their heads, these were Mahometans in their company. They all had black hair, and store of rings on their fingers; they bartered with them for beads, and other toys, but had more a mind for linen cloth. They seemed fearful and suspicious, and would not tell the name of their country, tho' the Dutch now judged they were near the east point of Gilolo, and that these people were natives of Tidore, which they afterwards found true. The 7th, they made the north east point of the island Moratay. The 8th, at noon, they came into 4 deg. 3 min. north latitude. The 18th, with calm weather, they continued coasting along, and about noon were met by two canoes of Ternateens, who, to shew their design, put out a white flag. They informed them, they came from the village Sopyy, where an English ship lately arrived; and also a pinnace of Amsterdam. The 19th, they sailed into the bay of Sopyy, anchored at ten fathom, near the shore, and bartered for sago, hens, rice, and tortoise. August 13, several natives came aboard, and said that an English and Dutch ship had been lately in those parts, and were furnished with provisions

provisions for their voyage home ; which was very agreeable news. The next day they received advice that there were twenty English and Dutch ships at Ternate. August 25, they sailed, and on the 1st of September, they entered into the bay of an island, which seemed to be desert. Some of the officers went ashore, and endeavoured to ascend a high mountain, but could not. However they here saw an extraordinary curiosity, which was a worm, as thick as a man's leg, and of a prodigious length. The name of the island was Moro. On the 5th, they anchored near Gilolo, where they staid some days. The 17th, they spoke with a Dutch ship, who told them some particulars relating to admiral Spilbergen's voyage ; and also that there was a squadron of ten Dutch ships, under the command of general John Dirckson at the Manillas, to defend the trade of Holland against a Spanish fleet, designed to attack them at Ternate. The same evening, captain Schovten and Jaques de Maire, having anchored before Malaya, went on shore, and were kindly received by general Gerrard Reynet, the governor of Amboina, and the whole council of India. The 18th, they sold two shallops, with all they had saved out of the Horn, that was burnt in King's island, for 1350 reals, with part of which they bought provisions. The 27th, they sailed for Bantam ; the 29th, they passed the line a fourth time ; and, October 28, they anchored at Jacatra, where they found three Dutch ships. On the last of this month arrived John Peterson Koen, president of the East India company, at Bantam, and the very next day summoned the captain, and both the supercargoes, before the council. After a very short debate, he required them, in virtue of his commission from the East India company, immediately to deliver up their ship and cargo. They insisted the seizure was unlawful, seeing they had, in nothing, offended against the company's charter, either in the letter or intention of it ; that with respect to the former, they came not into the Indies by any forbidden way, either by the Cape of Good Hope, or thro' the Streight of Magellan ; but



but by a new passage of their own discovery, which, in its consequences, must be very advantageous, not only to the commerce of their countrymen, but to the whole trading world. That as to the latter, it could not possibly be the meaning of the states general to deprive their subjects from making new discoveries: but all they could say availed nothing. The president told them, if they thought they suffered wrong, they might appeal to the States for redress. Having, in this manner, lost their ship, some of the men served in the East India company, the rest were put into the Amsterdam, and the Zeland, which were going to Holland; their general George Van Spilbergen: the master William Cornelison Schouten, Japues Le Maire, and ten of our men, went with the general in the Amsterdam, which set sail from Bantam the 14th of December. The last day of this month died Jaques Le Maire, of grief. January 1st, they lost sight of the Zeland: the 24th, they anchored near the island Moritius. The 31st, they were under the island St. Helena, where they found the Zeland. The 24th, they passed the equinoctial the 5th time in this voyage. The 28th, they saw the north star, which they had not seen for twenty Months before. July 1, the Amsterdam arrived in Zeland, where the ship of the same name had come in the day before. Thus was this voyage round the world performed in two years and eighteen days; which, considering the nature of their course, and other circumstances, was a wonderful thing, and one would have imagined, might have induced the states general to have relieved them from those hardships, to which the pride and avarice of the East India company had subjected them. We shall conclude this voyage of Le Maire with the following remark. Never was voyage taken upon wiser or better grounds than this, and perhaps, there never was a voyage executed with greater judgement or success; of which the easy discovery of the Streights of Le Maire, and going round the world with the loss of four men only, one of whom died of grief, are incontestable instances. A-

gain,

gain, tho' it be true, that they did not discover any continent in the South Indies, yet they discovered islands there fruitful and well inhabited, between 10 and 20 degrees of south latitude: islands, well provided with canoes, and other vessels, which were an infallible proof of some adjacent continent; and surely such a people, who have so much commerce among themselves, are worth our finding out; as such a discovery much certainly have a very advantageous effect upon our navigation and shipping. If these south lands are concealed by the artifice of the Dutch, or Spaniards, it is a matter well worthy our consideration to discover them: we shall therefore, in the next chapter, give the reader a very large memorial of a Spanish adventurer, who, not only imagined, but actually saw, examined, and reported what he had there met within them; and what might not be expected from a trade carried on with those people.

---

## C H A P. XI.

*The voyage of Don Pedro Fernandez de Quiros, for the discovery of the south continent, &c.*

**I**N the year 1609, this gentleman made a voyage to Spain, and presented memorials to that court, desiring assistance for the conquest and settlement of new-found countries; having spent large sums of money, and travelled 20,000 leagues by sea and land, in 14 years time, in order to make this discovery. The continent he intended to settle, as he represented to his catholic majesty, was as big as all Europe and the lesser Asia, put together; all lying in the torrid zone, and in his opinion exceeding rich. As for the extent of this new-found country, he speaks partly from his own knowledge; but chiefly from conjecture, having only discovered so much as lay in or near 15 deg. south latitude.

He

He says, the people were of different complexions, both white, black, and tawney; that the country was populous, and as well cultivated; that the inhabitants were of a peaceable and quiet temper, having many vessels, in which they transported their merchandize from one place to another; that the country afforded all things necessary for life, as trees, plants, beasts, birds, and fishes; also gold, silver, pearls, nutmegs, mace, ginger, &c. He particularly describes the bay of St. James and Philip, which, adds he, are spacious, safe, and commodious. To another Haven he gave the name of La Vera Cruz, which, as he affirms, is capable of containing 1000 ships. This haven, continues he, lies in 15 deg. 40 min. south latitude, and in the neighbourhood of seven islands, one of which is 50 leagues round; he expatiates upon the great benefit that might arise from a settlement here, as it lies between his catholic majesty's dominions, both in the East Indies and America, and affording by its situation, an opportunity of carrying on a beneficial trade with either: he commends the wholesomeness of the air, and declares, that he had a considerable body of men with him, who, by continual labours, were almost constantly exposed to the open air; sometimes in the cold dews, and often hot, yet were none of them taken sick. The natives also are strong and healthy, and some of them very old. He likewise takes notice, that the flesh and fish were often kept two days, perfectly sweet. Besides these blessings, enjoyed by the southern continent; he remarks, that it is superior to any of the provinces of either of the Indies on the following account. Here are no thistles, briars, or thorns; no fens, or marshes, no snow upon the mountains, no standing waters in the fields, or meadows, no venomous creatures in the woods, no crocodiles in the rivers, no worms among the grain; no stinging flies, or other vermin whatsoever; so that it ought to be preferred, says he, to all the conquests made by the Spaniards in either Indies. His manner of taking possession of this fourth part of the Globe, as he calls it, is very remarkable, therefore we

L

shall

shall give it in his own words. " First, says he, we  
" erected a cross, and built a church, in honour of our  
" lady Loretto, than we had 20 masses celebrated in  
" it; and our troops hastened thither, to gain some  
" indulgencies granted. On Whitfunday we made a  
" solemn procession, and carried the feast of the blessed  
" sacrament thro' a great circuit of countries. In three  
" several places we set up our title, in each of which,  
" we erected two columns with the arms of his catholic  
" majesty garnished thereupon; so that I may with  
" good right affirm, that since this will challenge to be  
" one of the ports of the world, the impress of plus  
" ultra is accomplished, and because it stretched to the  
" continent, whether it be forward or backward can be  
" no great matter, &c. " But tho' the Spanish court had  
then so good an opinion of this gentleman's memorials,  
as to order them to be printed at Seville in 1610, the  
affair came to nothing: it has now been, for many  
years, a settled maxim in the Spanish politics, not only  
to lay aside all thoughts of prosecuting these discoveries;  
but even to treat the accounts published of 'em by  
the best authors as romances; and this with very good  
reason; for finding themselves to be no longer in a condition  
to undertake an expedition of this kind to any  
purpose, and foreseeing, that, if they should establish  
themselves in some of those islands, it would encourage  
other nations to dispossess them, and thereby not only  
gain those settlements; but also enable them to fix  
themselves between the American dominions and the  
Philippine islands, to their inexpressible prejudice: so  
they very prudently chuse to let go a present advantage,  
rather than run the risque of a future inconvenience:  
yet, however wise this conduct may appear on their side,  
it is amazing, that other nations should not make the attempt,  
when it might be made at no great expence, and with very little hazard,  
because our ships might, at all events, go safely round to the East Indies.  
If a project of this nature should ever come to be maturely weighed,  
and put in practice, we, perhaps, might

might find a way to indemnify ourselves for the loss of the *Assiento*.

## C H A P. XII.

*The voyage of Jaques Le Hermite, commander of the Nassau fleet, round the globe.*

THE ships fitted out for this important voyage, were, the *Amsterdam*, admiral, 800 tons, carrying 273 men, 20 brass, and 22 iron guns, commanded by captain Jacobson Stolk; the *Default*, of the same burden, 242 men, 20 brass, and 20 iron cannon, Cornelius de Witte captain; the *Eagle*, 400 tons, 144 men, 12 brass, and 16 iron guns, Meydert Egbertson commander; the *Orange*, vice-admiral, 500 tons, 216 men, commanded by Lawrence Quirymen; the *Holland*, 600 tons, and 182 men, 10 pieces of brass, and 20 of iron, captain Aridian Fell; the *Maurice*, 360 tons, 169 men, 12 brass, and 20 iron cannon, James Adrianson captain; the *Hope*, 260 tons, 80 men, 14 guns, Peter Slobbe commander; the *Concord*, 600 tons, 170 men, captain John Ysbrandtz. 18 brass, and 14 iron guns; the *King David*, 360 tons, 79 men, 16 brass guns, captain John Thomason; the *Griffin*, 320 tons, 78 men, 14 guns, Cornelison Hurdloop commander; a yacht, called the *Greyhound*, 60 tons, 20 men, 4 pieces of brass cannon, captain Solomon Willemson.

They were called the *Nassau fleet*, and sailed from Goeree April 29, 1623. On the 30th, they were informed, the *Eagle* had sprung a leak, and about the same time the *Orange* joined them. May 1, it was resolved in council to put into the Isle of Wight, and stop the leak in the *Eagle* if possible, the men having pumped 3000 barrels of water in a few hours. The *Hope* and the *Orange* running foul of each other, the former had her boltspit damaged, and the mizen mast of the

latter came by the board. They all anchored at Portsmouth, that afternoon, except the *Hope*; the captain of which, being a little conceited, took a different course, run ashore, and was in danger of being lost; but got off the following night, and joined them. May 2, they anchored under Cowes castle, hawled the *Eagle* on shore, and stopped the leak. On the 8th, the wind failing, they anchored without the Needles. The 14th, the admiral, having ordered a gun to be fired, as a signal for sailing, by some accident, it burst, blew up part of both decks, threw many of the seamens chests aloft, and broke one of the gunners arms. The 30th, they got into 40 deg. 40 min. when the admiral gave orders for the ships to extend themselves, and keep as near as possible to the Spanish coast, to inform himself when the plate fleet was expected. The 31st, they spoke with three Turkish Corsairs, who told them, they had been chased by six Spanish men of war, off Cape St. Vincent: in the evening, they spoke with three more, one of which so far engaged with the Dutch fleet, that the *Concord* obliged her to bring to, and the captain was ordered to come aboard the admiral. June 1, the captain returned, and demanded five slaves of the admiral, which the vice-admiral's sloop carried off when he boarded him, saying, that he purchased them at Algiers. They proved to be five honest Dutch sailors, who told the admiral there were more in the ship, so he sent for the rest, and charged the captain with a letter to the Dutch consul at Algiers. The 14th, they chased ten sail of ships with their shallops, of which they took four; on board one there were some prisoners of distinction, among which were a priest, and a Spanish nobleman, who had resided at Peru, and travelled by land to Buenos Ayres, in order to find a passage home. While they were chasing a Turkish corsair, the prizes lying a little behind; another corsair intending to carry them off, was discovered and taken, who had at the helm a Christian slave, that took this opportunity of running on board the Dutch vice admiral, into which he, and many of the

the slaves leaped. The captain of this corsair was a Dutch renegado, and demanded they should be restored : but the vice-admiral reasoning with him on the folly of deserting his religion and country, had such an effect, that he sent for all the crew, and agreed to go with the fleet. On the 8th, a council was called, upon the information given by this captain ; who declared there were thirty Spanish men of war in those seas. It was therefore resolved to bear away for the road of Safia, where were several Dutch ships, in order to put on board them the merchandize taken out of the prizes, that it might be immediately transported to Holland. Having put the best part of their effects on board the *Overyffel*, which they found in the road of Safia, they sent with her the *Greyhound* yacht to Holland, keeping in her stead the little Spanish ship, which they called by the same name, and another ; so they sailed out of the bay of Safia the 24th with 16 sail.

July 5, they anchored in the road of St. Vincent ; where it was resolved to disarm the ships, and do every thing that was needful, except taking in water, which could not be done, the hoops of their casks being bad, and no wood here to repair them. Hereupon, the vice-admiral was ordered to St Antonio, with three shallops, and to take with him the Portuguese prisoners. On the 17th, he returned, having been very well received by the Negroes, who put in his hands four letters, all certifying that the Dutch ships which came there were always well received. Every night they staid at St. Vincent they caught a great number of tortoises, and as much fish as they could dispense with ; at length, growing better acquainted with the method of hunting goats, they caught sixteen every day for the use of the ship's company. July 25, they sailed from these islands, which lie to the west of all the Cape Verde islands, from 16 deg. 30 min. to 18 deg. north latitude. The island of St. Vincent is rocky and uncultivated, with little fresh water ; but by sinking wells they supplied the ships. The goats here are fat, and the best tasted in the world. There

are no fruit trees in this island, except a few wild figs ; and its only product is coloquintida, a very rough purge. The country is excessive dry, only in the rainy season, which begins in August, and ends in February. The island of St. Antonio is inhabited by Negroes, to the number of 500 men, women, and children, who live chiefly upon goats ; here is a little cotton ; towards the sea side is a large plantation of oranges, where they gather 50,000 in a season. They saw neither hog, sheep, or fowl upon this island.

On the 11th of August, they anchored in the road of Sierra Leona, where the vice-admiral landed, and here they hauled the Greyhound ashore (the name given to one of the Spanish ships they had taken) to stop a leak. Here likewise the Negroes came on board to visit the admiral, and presented him with an elephant's tooth, and some fowls ; for which they were amply rewarded. The king's brother had on a suit of striped cloth, made in the Dutch fashion, blue breeches, and scarlet slippers ; and seemed a man that stood much upon his reputation. On the 15th, some of the men found nuts ashore, resembling nutmegs, only the sternels were bigger, they made pretty free with them ; but they were scarce come on board, before one of them fell down dead, and purple spots appear'd all over him ; tho' the rest by taking proper medicines escaped.

September 4, they left Sierra Leona. The road in which ships usually anchor lies in 8 deg. 20 min. north latitude. The mountain is large and high, covered over with trees, by which tokens it is easily known, there being no other of the like height upon the coast. Here they lost, between August 11, and September 5, forty men, by eating lemons to excess. Here are abundance of palm-trees, some ananas, and plenty of wood and water. On the rocks they found the name of Francis Drake, and other Englishmen. This day the admiral fell sick, and they sailed with a south wind till the 28th ; and, on the 29th, found themselves off the island of St. Thomas. October 7, they anchored  
in



in the road of Cape Lopes, where they took in water for the whole fleet ; and, then proceeded to Annobon, in order to procure refreshments for the sick men, who were almost eaten up with the scurvy. While they lay here abundance of seamen died, soon after taking the surgeon's medicines, which occasioned some suspicion. He was first examined, then tortured to make confession ; he endured the torture with constancy, and insolently told them, he gave himself no pain about any methods of this kind which they thought proper to take. By this his insensibility they suspected he might be possessed of some charm which prevented his feeling. They accordingly searched him ; when they found a little linen bag, about his neck, in which, was the skin and tongue of a serpent. At length, finding no room for escape, he confessed that he wilfully destroyed seven men, who gave him much trouble ; that he was descended from Spanish parents ; that he had determined to poison the admiral, vice-admiral, and every officer on board the Maurice : hereupon sentence of death was passed upon him, and the next day his head was struck off on board his own ship.

The 29th, to their great surprize, they saw the island of Annobon, and anchored in the road next morning. The following day Cornelius Jacobson, and the fischal, went ashore and were received with a flag of truce. The governor consented they should have free trade with the natives, for whatever they wanted. The shallops came on board in the evening with water and oranges. November 1, they got 40 hogs, and a great quantity of fowls, in exchange for salt. In this island a Spaniard and a Greek, whom they had delivered from slavery, deserted. The island abounds in bananas, ananas, cocoa nuts, tamarinds, and sugar canes. They have besides vast plenty of prodigious large oranges, which are neither too sweet nor too sharp, some of them weighing three quarters of a pound, and tasting as if they were perfumed, that while the fleet lay here, the Dutch, exclusive of what the seamen eat ashore, gathered 200,000. Here are lemons also ; and with respect

spect to cattle, they have oxen, cows, goats, and hogs; all which the negroes sell for salt. Here is likewise some cotton which they gather, and card, to send into Portugal. This island lies high, is about 20 leagues in circumference, and governed by two or three Portuguese; inhabited by about 150 families of negroes, who are very submissive to their rulers, but very treacherous, and ought to be dealt with very cautiously. They left Annobon November 4.

January 6, 1624, they were in 44 deg. 40 min. south latitude. February 1, they had sight of cape De Pennas, which looked like a range of high mountains. The next day they found themselves at the mouth of the Streights of Le Maire, which is easily distinguished; the country on the east which is called States Land being mountainous, and uneven, and that on the west side, which is called Maurice Land, having several hills close to the shore. Such as would make this passage easy and certain, should contrive to pass the line at the end of October, because they may then be sure of meeting with a North wind between the tropics, which will very much facilitate their passage thro' them. February 16, they were in 56 deg. 10 min. latitude, Cape Horn then lying to the east. The 22d, while they were taking in water, a sudden storm arose, which obliged some of the seamen to continue on shore, and at the same time saw a body of savages who talked with them amicably. The 23d, the storm rose again with more violence, so that 19 men, belonging to the Eagle, were forced to remain on shore all night, not being able to get off. The 24th, the shallops returned to the watering place, but found only two remaining alive out of the 19. These poor men having no arms. the savages knocked seventeen of them on the head, with their slings and clubs; without the least provocation. They found only five dead bodies, among which were those of the pilot, and two boys. The latter were cut into quarters, and the rest carried off, as it was supposed, to be eaten. The 25th, the vice-admiral went ashore, in order to visit the coast: on his return, he told

told the admiral, he saw smoke, and had found some of the savages huts; adding, also, that he there discovered Terra Del Fuego, as marked in the charts; and to go into the South Sea it was not necessary to double Cape Horn, but they might enter on the east, the bay of Nassau; and that he thought there were several passages, out of that bay into the Straights of Magellan. The most part of Terra Del Fuego is mountainous, but enriched with many fine vallies, and meadows, watered with several purling streams, which run down from the hills. It consists of a number of islands, between which, there are many good roads, where large fleets may anchor, and be supplied with wood, water, and ballast: the winds rage with more violence here, than in any other country in the world; blowing constantly from the west: and as they may reasonably be supposed to proceed from watery exhalations, such ships as are bound westerly, ought to keep as far as may be to the south; and tis very probable, they may, by this means, be brought to the desired port: as to the complexion of the inhabitants of this country, they are as fair as any in Europe; as they concluded from the sight of an infant; but the grown people strangely disfigure themselves, with a red earth, painting their heads, arms, and all the rest of their bodies white; having, from the forehead to the foot, stripes of white and red, as the fancy directs. They are very strong, and about the height of the people in Europe. Their hair is very black, thick and long, which makes them look the more frightful. They have good teeth, but as thin as the edge of a knife. The men go altogether naked: the women have only a bit of skin about their waistes, which is very strange, considering the severity of the climate. Their tents, or rather huts, are made of trees with a hole at the top, to take away the smoke: within they are sunk about 3 feet in the ground, the earth being thrown on the outside. Their fishing tackle is very curious and their hooks, which are made of stone, resemble ours. They are armed, some with bows and arrows, differently mounted; but chiefly headed  
with

with stone ; others have long Javelins pointed with bone ; some again have wooden clubs, and some slings, with stone knives, which are very sharp. They are always at war among themselves, and never go unarmed ; and for this reason they paint differently, that they may know each other. The people about the islands of Torbaltens and Schapenham are all painted black ; but those about the Greyhound bay, are all painted red. Their canoes are very remarkable, being made of the bark of the branches of a large tree. The inside is fortified with small pieces of wood, as is also the outside ; then they cover it with another bark, which makes it strong and tight. These canoes are from ten to fourteen feet long, and about two feet wide ; so that they will carry seven or eight men, and go as fast as our shallops. As to their manners, they resemble beasts more than men ; for they will tear human bodies to pieces, and eat the flesh raw and bloody. They have not the least sense of religion or policy amongst them, but are, in every respect, brutal ; inso-much, as if they have occasion to make water, they let it go against any one that stands near them, if he does not get out of their way. They are also ignorant of the use of our arms, and would lay their hands on the edges of the Dutchmen's swords. Yet are they cunning, faithless, and cruel, shewing signs of freindship one minute, and knocking those on the head, to whom they shewed them the next. They will part with no refreshments, tho' they have great quantities of cows, goats, and oxen.

March 3, at noon, they had an observation, and found themselves in 59 deg. 45 min. south latitude. On the 8th, they reached 61 deg. with a fresh wind from the south east, and fair weather. The 24th they lost sight of the Maurice and David, and the next day were in 45 deg. March 28, they saw Chili, not much above a league distant from them the coast appearing high, and mountainous. Here the admiral was confined to his bed, and expressed a great desire to put into Chiloe ; but his instructions would not permit him, requir-

requiring they should be employed in some action of importance against the Spaniards at Peru. Upon which they resolved to go to the island of Juan Fernandez, to prepare for attacking the Spanish Galleons in the port of Arica, in case they should find them. April 1, the vice-admiral also took to his bed, worn out with fatigue. On the 5th, they anchored in 60 fathom water, and a fine bay, lying N. W. and S. E. of the island Fernandez. On the 6th, the vice-admiral being grown something better, viewed all the artillery of the fleet. In the evening the Griffin came in, which they had not seen since February 2. On the 7th the Orange arrived also. On the 11th, the David and Maurice likewise joined them, On the 13th, all things being ready, they sailed. May 8, drawing near the coast of Peru, they took a Spanish ship, in which were four Spaniards, and seven Indians, or negroes, besides the captain, who informed them that the Spanish galleons had sailed the third of that month, consisting of 5 sail, two men of war, and three merchantmen; that the Spanish admiral was still at Calao, and that every thing possible was prepared for the reception of the Dutch, of whose motions they had early intelligence, every tittle of which was strictly true. On the 14th, after having discharged their prizes, about midnight, two captains, with 12 shallops well armed, rowed directly for the port of Lima, having in each a small cannon, and a considerable quantity of fireworks; at the same time a false attack was made to the north of Calao. The shallops entered the port, and burnt 50 sail of merchantmen. In this hardy enterprize the Dutch had 7 killed, and 15 wounded. At break of day nine of the flaming ships came down upon them, which obliged them to sheer off, and shelter themselves behind the island of Lima; and tho' they afterwards attempted to make several other bold and daring attacks, yet they all came to nothing: so that these fine schemes of Indian conquests, which were formed in Holland, all proved abortive. June 2, the admiral Jaques Le Hermite died, and was buried in the island of Lima with great solemnity. On the

the 8th they felt an earthquake in that island. From July 22 to 29 they were continually engaged with the Spaniards to little purpose.

August 3, the vice-admiral was installed admiral on board the *Default*, pursuant to a patent of prince Maurice; soon after, the vice-admiral Verschoor returned with the *Maurice* and *Hope*, having found in the road of Peru three vessels, two of which they burnt, and brought the other with them. Now the new admiral hoisted his flag on board his own ship the *Default*; the vice-admiral removed into the *Amsterdam*; and the rear-admiral Jacobson into the *Orange*. August 14, they sailed from the island of Lima, with their prizes, which they fitted up for service, and steered for the *Piscadores* to water. This done, they continued on for the island of Santa Clara, where the admiral sent three shallops ashore to give notice of his arrival. On the 25th, they came into the road of Puna, and there found the three shallops, who had taken a small ship laden with merchandize for Lima, but all the people both Spaniards and Indians, were fled, so that they could get no intelligence of the design of the enemy. While they were here careening the three largest ships, the admiral received the melancholy news of the miscarriage of a second attempt upon Guiaquil, and that the forces sent thither, had been obliged to re-embark with the loss of twenty eight men. September 1, the three great ships being cleaned, they began to careen the rest. On the 9th, it was resolved in council, to prosecute their intended voyage to Chili; but first to bear away towards Acapulco, pursuant to their directions, in order to cruise for the Manilla ship. On the 11th of the same month, they burnt the town and church of Puna. On the 17th, came into 3 deg. south latitude. On the 29th, the admiral thought of a scheme to gain intelligence of the time when the Manilla ship was expected; accordingly sent a message to the governor, importing he had made a great many prizes in the South Seas, and taken several prisoners of distinction, whom he was willing to release in consideration

sideration of a reasonable ransom; but this negotiation proved of no effect. December 1, they sailed out of the port, and anchored 20 leagues to the west of Acapulco. From the 24th to the 28th they continued cruising west, in hopes of finding the islands called the Ladrilleros; but not being able to meet with them, they resolved to proceed for the West Indies.

January 15, 1625, they saw some low land towards the north. On the 25th, they were on the coast of the island of Guam, one of the Ladrões, where the inhabitants came two leagues to meet them, with all manner of refreshments, which they exchanged for old iron. The next morning, 150 canoes came off with garden stuff and fruits, which were very acceptable, the scurvy having prevailed to that degree amongst the men, they had scarce hands enough to work the ship. On the 27th, the admiral, with half the soldiers attempted to land in this little island, but found it impracticable. On the 28th, the rear-admiral, having found a good watering-place, fifty soldiers were ordered to protect the seamen, while they filled the vessels; but the next day found it necessary to strengthen that detachment, which had received many insults from the natives. Guam lies in 13 deg. 40 min. north latitude, is tolerably fertile, and they sow rice in many places, and have a vast number of cocoas. The inhabitants sold them 200 fowls, but would let them have no cattle. These people are bigger than the Indians, very strong, well shaped, and generally painted red. The men go naked, but the women have a leaf of a tree to cover their privities. Such as land here should be very careful how they ramble; for while the Dutch remained ashore, they lost several men, thro' their own inadvertency in this respect. February 15, lying in the latitude of 9 deg. 45 min. they had sight of an island, which appeared to be very populous, and well cultivated. The 23d, it was resolved in council, to steer S. S. W. to the height of 3 deg. in order to reach Gilolo, and from thence to proceed to Ternate. This day, at noon, taking an observation, they perceived

M

themselves

themselves driven far north by the current, the effects of which they felt very sensibly.

March 4, they had a fresh gale from the north, which carried them to Malacca, the chief place in the island of Ternate. On the 13th, they had advice, that one of the company's ships, called the *Fidelity*, was lost on the coast of Sangi. The same day, by order of the *Sieur Jaques le Fevre*, governor of the Moluccas, they demolished the fort of Calemate, and afterwards ruined that of Motir. On the 25th, the governor *le Fevre*, sailed with the whole fleet for Machian, and sent from thence the *Concord* to Singi, to take up what could be saved out of the *Fidelity*. April 4, they proceeded to Amboina, where the governor *Herman van Speult* was ordered to the island of Ceram, for the company's service. The 15th, they arrived at Batavia, to acquaint the governor general of the effects of their expedition against the Spaniards in the South Seas. May 14, the admiral, and the two governors of Amboina, detached one ship to Louchou, and another to Cambelle, both in the island of Ceram, and soon after following them with all their forces, subdued Louchou, ordered their plantations to be burnt, their clove-trees to be cut down, and the place to be destroyed; then the whole fleet returned to Batavia.

As there was not at that time, any occasion for a fleet of that strength in the Indies, the governor and council resolved to separate it, and of employing part of the ships of which it was composed, in the manner, as appeared to them to be most serviceable to the states general, and the company. Accordingly, the command of the *Orange*, the *Holland*, and the *Maurice*, was given to governor *Speult*, who was directed to sail with them to Surat, to stay there as short a time as possible, and then to make the best of his way to Holland. The vice-admiral was sent with the *Hope*, and *Griffin*, on an expedition to Malacca. The *Eagle* and the *David* were to remain on the borders of Coromandel; the *Default* and *Amsterdam*, to go to the island of Onrust,  
to



to be careened, and then return to Holland after the Concord, in which, the admiral (finding himself extremely ill) embarked to return home as soon as possible; but died the 3d of November following, worn out with care and labour. On the 9th of July, 1626, they came, without any remarkable incident, into the Texel, having spent in the voyage three years. two months, and eleven days; so that here the expedition of the Nassau fleet is properly at an end.

---

## C H A P. XIII.

*A short account of the most famous American Bucaniers.*

**A**BOUT this time the Bucaniers, or Freebooters of America, beginning to make a great noise, and even to strike terror into the trading part of the world; we doubt not, but the reader will be curious to know the original and progress of these desperadoes; in which account we shall be as brief as possible; their particular history being already laid before the public, by Mr. Basil Ringrose, who was personally engaged in their service. They were more numerous in the western seas, than in any other parts of the known world, for the following reasons; because in many of them are uninhabited small islands, with convenient harbours, and secure places for cleaning their ships. They also abound with fresh water, sea-fowl, turtle, shell, and other fish; and if they carry in store of strong liquor, they may safely regale here, till they become fit for another expedition, before any intelligence can molest, or hurt them.

They usually, in these parts, begin their enterprises, setting out with a small force at first, and by infesting these seas, and those upon the continent of north America; if good fortune turns out on their sides, they gather strength enough to enable them to make foreign expeditions.

The rise of these rovers, or at least the great increase of them, since the peace of Utrecht, may be justly imputed to the Spanish settlements in the West Indies, the governors of which, being commonly hungry courtiers, and sent thither to repair their shattered fortunes, submit to all proceedings that bring in profit. They grant commissions to many ships of war, with pretence to prevent an interloping trade, by virtue of which, the commanders seize all vessels within five leagues of their coast, tho' few if any ships can avoid coming so near, in their voyage from England, &c. to Jamaica: so that under this commission these Spanish captains make no scruple to rob and plunder at discretion, while the sufferers can obtain no satisfaction.

Fired with resentment at these repeated depredations, several enterprising persons of different nations, fitted out vessels, at their own expence, in order to make reprisals upon the Spaniards. The first most famous pirate that was known upon Tortuga, was Pierre le Grand, or Peter the Great, and the action that rendered him so famous, was, his taking the vice-admiral of the Spanish Flota, on the west side of Hispaniola; which he performed with one boat, and twenty-eight men. The planters and hunters of Tortuga, no sooner were informed of the rich prize he had taken, but they resolved to follow his example, and cruize upon the Spaniards, about Cape de Alvarez, where they met with success, and encreased their number.

The next in fame among foreigners was Francis Lolonois, born in a territory of France, called Les Sables, D' Olone, who, in his youth, was transported to the Caribbee islands, in quality of a servant, or purchased slave. When he was out of his time, he came to Hispaniola, and joined with the aforesaid hunters; who met with success. He, on his return, well knowing the island of Tortuga would afford him many resolute and stout men, resolved to go again and pillage all the Spanish towns and villages in his way; and even to take the city of Maracaibo. Having got together above 400 men, another pirate, called Michael

De

De Basca, who had got riches-enough to live at ease, and was at that time major of the island of Tortuga, offered to share his fortune, and to go with him; they agreed upon articles, and the whole company embarked in eight vessels, consisting of 660 persons. With this small force he took Maracaibo and Gibraltar, with several prizes at sea, and returned very rich to Tortuga; where he made fresh preparations to take the city of St. James De Leon, and Nicaragua, at which last place, the Indians, soon after his arrival, took him, and tore him in pieces alive, casting his body, limb by limb, into the fire, and his ashes into the air, that no memory might remain of such an inhuman creature.

Having thus given a short narrative of two foreign Buccaneers, we shall proceed to shew the exploits of Sir Henry Morgan, who was born in the principality of Wales: his father was a rich farmer; but the son, having no inclination to that way of life, forsook his friends and came to the sea coasts, where he hired himself to the master of a vessel bound for Barbadoes, who sold him as soon as he came ashore. When he had served his time, and thereby gained his liberty, he came to Jamaica. Here meeting with two vessels of pirates, he went with them, and having performed 3 or 4 voyages with success, agreed with some of his comrades to join stocks, and buy a ship; of which he was chose captain: they set out to cruize on the coasts of Campeachy. In this voyage he took several prizes, with which he returned triumphant to Jamaica, where he found an old pirate called Mansvelt, busy in equipping a considerable fleet, who made him his vice-admiral. They had 15 ships, great and small, and sailed from Jamaica with 500 men to the isle of St. Catherine, which they took; but could not keep it, because the governor of Jamaica, fearing he should thereby disoblige the king of Great Britain, refused to give them his assistance. Hereupon, Mansvelt retired to Tortuga, and died soon after. The admiral being dead, captain Morgan equipped a ship in order to gather a fleet as strong as he could; and by degrees

effected it ; then ordered all his force to meet at a certain port of Cuba ; they soon after sailed for Puerto del Principe, and Puerto Velo, and took them both ; but the plunder they got here not being sufficient to pay their debts at Jamaica, all the French left captain Morgan : he nevertheless, with his wonted resolution, equipped a fleet with little expence, and soon after took Porto-Bello. Having here provided his fleet with all necessaries, taken with him the best guns, and nailed up the rest, he arrived in a few days at Cuba, to make a dividend of the spoil, which, in ready money, amounted to 250,000 pieces of eight, besides other merchandize ; with this they sailed to Jamaica, where he found numbers of pirates ; amongst these was an English ship, just come from New England, mounted with 36 guns, which the governor ordered to join captain Morgan. Thus being provided with 15 ships, and 960 men, he arrived at Maracaibo, took it, and Gibraltar : then defeated the Spanish fleet sent thither to block him up. This done, he equipped another fleet, consisting of 37 sail, and 2000 fighting men, with this force he sailed for Panama ; but in the way made himself master of St Catherines, afterwards of Chagre, with the loss of four ships ; where he left a garrison, and departed for Panama. In this voyage they endured great hardships, and on the 3d day, from their departure from Chagre all the men fell sick, and imagined themselves poisoned by drinking Peru wine. Their hardships continued six days, on the seventh they discovered the South Sea. and found an island, in which were many cattle, particularly asses ; which they killed, and eat. On the 9th, they got sight of Panama, and took it in four days with some loss, set it on fire, and found great riches in the ruins. Soon after captain Morgan made a dividend of the booty they had taken at Panama, which amounting to no more than 200 pieces of eight per head ; his companions murmured at his proceedings, and told him, he had reserved the best jewels to himself ; but he seemed deaf to their complaints, and resolving to cheat them, went secretly on board his own ship,

ship, put to sea, being followed only by four vessels of the whole fleet, and proceeded to Jamaica.

After Sir Henry Morgan had left off this business, a new race of bold adventurers succeeded, and procured a fleet, consisting of 9 ships, of which, Coxon, Harris, Bournano, Sawkins, Sharp, Cook, Alleston, Rowe, and Macket, were captains. They carried in the whole 42 guns, and 477 men. With this force they set sail for the province of Darien, March 23, 1679. On the 5th of April, they took the town of Santa Maria, without the loss of a man, but not meeting with so much booty as they expected, they proceeded to Panama, where they were met by three small Spanish men of war; which they defeated with 68 men only, took two of them, and then blocked up the port of Panama for 10 days, in which time they made prizes of several Spanish merchantmen coming to trade there. Here captain Coxon, with 70 men, left them, and Sawkins was chosen commander in chief. May 2, they weighed anchor at Perico, and stood off for Tavoga, another island, two leagues farther from Panama; and from thence to the island of Otoque, to take in provisions. From Otoque they sailed to the island of Cayboa, famous for the pearl fishery thereabout; and lying about 8 leagues from another island, called Puebla Nueva. May 22, they attacked the chief town, but were repulsed, and lost their chief commander captain Sawkins, to which post captain Sharp succeeded; they departed from hence to the isle of Gorgona, to careen their vessels; this done, they resolved to proceed to Arica, and plunder that rich town. August 13, they arrived at the island of Plata, where they took in provisions. On the 17th, they set sail for Arica, and took two Spanish ships by the way. After a long and tedious voyage, in which they had suffered great hardships for want of water and provisions, they, on the 26th of October, arrived within six leagues of the town of Arica. Here they left the ship, and rowed all night, in hopes of surprising the inhabitants before morning; but being discovered, and disappointed, they resolved

to

to bear away to the village of Hilo, to take in water and provisions, of which, they soon made themselves masters; but in the end were cheated by the Spaniards, obliged to retreat, and sail to the port of Coquimbo, which they reached December 2, before night; about midnight, the weather being quite calm, they hoisted out the launch, and canoes, to take a considerable city on the coast called La Serena: but to their great mortification were again discovered, and unexpectedly engaged by a troop of a hundred Spanish horse, whom they routed. On their march to the town, they perceived the inhabitants of the villages had taken themselves, and all manner of provisions clean away. It was but a small town, and they entered it with little difficulty; here they found several houses, with orchards and gardens adjoining, in which were strawberries as big as walnuts, very delicious to the taste. In short, every thing here was excellent in its kind, and far beyond what they could expect in so remote a place. But finding no considerable booty therein, they burnt it to the ground, and sailed for the isle of Juan Fernandez. December 31 having overcome all difficulties, and many dangers, they anchored in 15 fathom water, within a cable's length of the shore. About this island two men caught fish enough to serve the whole company in two hours. January 6, 1680, a mutiny arose in the ship, whereupon captain Sharp was deposed, and one of the company called Watlin was made chief commander in his stead. The 13th, they departed from hence for the isle of Yqueque, where the captain getting intelligence of the posture of affairs at Arica, resolved to attempt that rich place a second time, which they did, and took it, but were beaten out again without plunder; and with great loss of men, killed, wounded, and taken prisoners. In this attack captain Watlin was slain, and captain Sharp reinstated; who led them off thro' many difficulties, and made a bold retreat to the ship. From hence they sailed to the port of Guasco, where they found excellent fresh water, and brought away 120 sheep, and 80 goats; then proceeded to Hilo, into which village they entered in the night undiscovered, caught  
the

the friar who was chaplain of the town, and made him, with most of the inhabitants, prisoners of war. From hence they departed to the gulph of Nicoya, where forty seven of their companions left them, and returned home by land: however, they took some prisoners, and bore away for Gulpho Duce. On the 10th of July, in 1 deg. 31 min. north latitude, they took a Spanish ship called Don Pedro, in which were 21,000 pieces of eight in chests, and in bags 16,000 more, besides plate. July 21, they shared what was taken in the prize, which amounted to 234 pieces of eight a man. The 26th, they saw a sail E. S. E. and soon came up with her; but several of her crew had escaped on shore. She proved to be a packet boat, going from Panama to Lima with letters, which they discharged, finding in her nothing of value. They next day they took another Spanish ship richly laden, from which prize they shared 94 pieces of eight a man, besides 620 jars of wine, brandy, and other things. August 28, they attempted to take Païta, but the whole country, being apprized of their intention, they durst not venture to land; and bore away for the Streights of Magellan. October 11, they arrived at a place unknown to them, which they named the Duke of York's island. After they had beat about from October 12, to November 6, in search of the Streights of Magellan, and not being able to find them, they returned home by an unknown road; continuing their navigation from November 6, to December 20, without seeing any land, till they arrived at the Caribbee islands in the West Indies. January 30, 1681, at 8 o'clock in the evening, they came to the south of the island of Antigua, and sent a canoe ashore to get tobacco, and other necessaries; and also to ask leave of the governor to come into port: but on the 1st of February, he flatly denied them entry, tho' the gentry and common people were willing and desirous to receive them ashore. Hereupon, they agreed among themselves to give the ship to those of their company, who had lost all their money at play; and then to embark in other ships for their several countries.

We

We presume this account of the American Bucaniers, will be thought no unnecessary digression, especially in this place, where it comes in order of time, and naturally introduces the voyage we are about to treat of in the following chapter. These men, however blameable they may be, have rendered their names famous, and tho' we shall not here take upon us to apologize for many of their actions, yet we may venture to affirm, a bolder race of men, both in personal valour and conduct, never yet appeared either on land or water.

---

#### C H A P. XIV.

##### *Captain Cowley's voyage round the world.*

**A**S the designs of the Bucaniers generally required secrecy, so they frequently took masters, and pilots, on board, under false pretences, never explaining their true meaning, till they were out at sea, and this seems to have been the case of captain Cowley, who was a person exceedingly well skilled in the theory and practice of navigation, and at that time resided in Virginia. Here, in the year 1683, he was prevailed upon, to go master of a privateer, bound to a French port, called Petit Guaves, in the island of Domingo, where people of this sort used to take commissions; tho' in reality, the design of his seducer, captain Cooke, was to make what prizes he could, without the least formality.

They sailed from Achamack, in Virginia, August 23, in the same year, and steered for Petit Guaves, one day only; when captain Cowley, not before in the secret, was informed, that they were first to touch upon the coast of Guiney. He immediately altered his course for the cape de Verde islands, and arrived at the island of Salt in September, where they found no fruit nor water, but plenty of indifferent fish, and goats; and at this time, that island, which lies in 16 deg. latitude, and 19 deg. 33 min long. was but oddly inhabited, and as oddly governed; for there were but five men upon it,  
of



of which four were dignified with titles ; one was governor, three were captains, the other a boy, the only subject they had amongst them. They sailed from hence to the island of St. Nicolas, where they found a governor, who was a white man, and had about him four or five people pretty well cloathed, and armed with swords, and pistols ; the rest of his retinue being in a sorrowful condition. Here they dug some wells on the shore, and traded for goats, which were not very good. The country near the sea is very indifferent ; but within there are numerous fine valleys, tolerably well inhabited, and furnished with all the necessaries of life. They staid here a while, but after mature deliberation came to this wise and honest resolution ; to go instantly to the island of St. Jago, and if they met with a ship in that road, to cut her cable, and run away with her. In pursuance of this scheme, they stood away to the east, and drawing near, they saw, over a point of land, a ship at anchor in the road, extremely fit for their purpose, as they judged, but it proved quite otherwise ; for when they came pretty near her, those on board clapped a spring upon her cable, knocked out her lower ports, and putting out her lower tier of guns, convinced captain Cooke that he had caught a tartar. He instantly bore away, and tho' the strange ship sent 10 shot after him, not one of them took place. This was a happy escape ; for they were soon after informed that the ship they attempted was a Dutch East Indiaman of 50 guns, and 400 men. They sailed from hence for Sierra Leona, where they met with a ship of 40 guns, well furnished with all kind of stores, which they boarded and carried away ; steering directly for the island of Juan Fernandez. They held their course for the coast of Brasil, till they were in 40 deg. south latitude, where the sea was red as blood, occasioned by vast shoals of shrimps, which are there of a red colour. They also observed vast quantities of seals, and so many whales, that captain Cowley asserts, here were 100, for one found in the same degree of north latitude. Holding their course still south west, they  
came

came to the latitude of 47 deg. where they met with an island, which captain Cowley called Pepys island. Here was a very good harbour, where 1000 ships might ride at anchor, a place commodious for wood and water, abounding with fowls, and promising fair for plenty of fish.

In January, 1684, they sailed for the Streights of Magellan, and, on the 28th, fell in with the Sebaldivine islands, then steering south west by west, came into the latitude of 53 deg. where they made the land of Terra del Fuego, but not chusing to venture thro' the Streights of Le Maire, they resolved to go quite round. February 14th, they had a prodigious storm, which drove them out of 47 deg. into 63 deg. 30 min. which was the farthest south that ever any ship went; where it was so excessive cold, that they could bear drinking three quarts of burnt brandy a man in 24 hours, without being hurt by it in the least. Now steering north east, they got into warm weather again; and in the latitude of 40 deg. met an English ship called the Nicolas, John Eaton commander, with whom they kept company till they arrived at the island of Juan Fernandez, and anchored in a bay at the south end of it, in 25 fathom water. Captain Bartholomew Sharp had been here in 1680, and finding the place uninhabited, called it Queen Catherine's island. When he quitted this place, he by accident left behind him a Moskito Indian, who remained there from that time to this. He had with him his gun, a knife, a small barrel of powder, and a few shot. In this desolate situation, he found it difficult to hide himself from the Spaniards, who having information that he was left here, had been more than once to look for him. He chose for his dwelling a pleasant valley near the sea coast, where he erected a pretty little hut, well lined with seal skins, and had a bed of the same raised 2 feet above the ground. By the help of a flint, he turned his knife into a saw; with which he cut his gun barrel in pieces, and converted it into harpoons, lances, fish-hooks, and a long knife, by hardening them with fire and water; all this cost him

him great trouble; but when he had performed it, he lived comfortably enough. When he saw the ships at sea, he guessed they were English, and immediately dressed two goats, with a large quantity of cabbage to entertain them when they came ashore: but how great was his pleasure, when on their coming ashore, he not only saw they were Englishmen; but his old acquaintance, particularly captain Cooke, and Mr. Dampier who were on board the ship that left him there. They found the island not only pleasant but plentiful, and conveniently situated for their purpose, being 110 leagues from Valparayso, a port on the Spanish main.

From hence they steered N. N. E. till they were off the bay of Arica; here they resolved to sail on to Cape Blanco, so continued their course till they were in 10 deg. latitude, then kept on northwards to the island Lobos, in 7 deg. latitude, where they put their sick men ashore, and careened their ships. They then determined to attempt Truxillo, tho' they, at this time, had not 100 men able to carry arms: but the next day as they were weighing anchor, they saw three sail, which captain Eaton took. These proved very agreeable prizes, being laden with flour, fruit, and sweetmeats. May 19 they sailed from Lobos, for the Gallapagos islands. The first they met with, lay in 1 deg. 30 min. south latitude, which captain Cowley called king Charles's island, and came to an anchor in a very good bay at the north end. Here they found store of provisions, particularly sea and land tortoises, some weighing 200 lb. with abundance of fowls, and turtle-doves. In the duke of York's island they found wood and water; but in the rest none. Beyond the line they discovered 5 islands, to all which they gave names. They landed in the Duke of York's island 1500 bags of flour, a large quantity of sweetmeats, and other stores, to have recourse to in time of necessity; they continued here a fortnight, during which time, they put their commander Mr. John Cooke, who was very ill, on shore, and determined to return again to the American coasts, being informed by one of their prisoners, a na-

N

tive

tive of Realejo, that the place might easily be taken. Accordingly they sailed N. N. E. and the first land they made was Cape Trespuntas, where they found good water. As soon as they were in sight of land captain Cooke died. Here they left the prisoners to shift for themselves, and bore away to Realejo, where they found the Indians alarmed, and seeing it impossible to do any thing, they resolved to sail for the gulph of St. Michael, at the mouth of which are two considerable islands, called Mangera and Amapalla, both which they possessed themselves of. And in this place some disputes arising between captain Davis, who succeeded Cooke, and captain Eaton, they resolved to separate. However they remained together here to careen. This done, captain Eaton took on board his vessel 400 sacks of flour, and prevailed with captain Cowley to sail with him as master, and navigate his ship as he should direct.

They left the bay of St. Michael about the middle of August, and sailed for Cape Francisco, which lies in 1 deg. north latitude, from whence they bore away for Païta, where they took two ships at anchor, then proceeded for the island of Gorgona\*, on the west side of which is a good harbour, and tho' the place be uninhabited, there is abundance of wood and water. From hence they kept a W. N. W. course, till they came in 13 deg. north latitude, in which they continued their voyage to the East Indies. They had the trade wind from the time they were in 10 deg. latitude, and a good passage to the 14th of March; when they saw the island of Guam, in the latitude of 13 deg. 2 min. which was a prodigious run. March 15, they sailed round the island, came to an anchor in a bay on the west, and sent a boat ashore with a flag of truce. On the 19th, the Spanish governor came to a point of land not far from the ship, and sent three copies of the same letter, in Spanish, French, and Dutch, signifying, that as he was a servant of the king of Spain, he desired to be informed who they were, whence they came, and whither bound. Captain Eaton  
returned

---

\* Called by the Privateers Sharpe's Island.

returned a very civil answer in French, telling him they were fitted out by some gentlemen in France, to make discoveries, and came thither for provisions. The messenger no sooner delivered the letter, than he was sent back with another, assuring the captain he was welcome, and desiring him to come ashore, which he readily did, with a guard of twenty men armed. He no sooner set his foot on shore, than the governor saluted him with a general discharge of his fire arms, which were returned from the fleet with ten guns. At parting the governor promised him all the necessaries that country afforded, and performed his promise with strict honour. Next day at noon, a captain came on board from the governor, bringing with him ten hogs, a vast quantity of potatoes, plantains, oranges, and papas, with some red pepper; in return for which, captain Eaton sent the governor a diamond ring, worth about twenty pounds, and presented each of the gentlemen who attended the captain, with a sword. The day following, the governor sent another officer, with two ecclesiastics, to beg the favour of the English commander to let him have some powder, the Indians being in rebellion against him. The captain entertained these messengers elegantly, spared them four barrels of powder, and offered them four pieces of small cannon; they accepted the former, but declined the latter, and at the same time presented a box, wherein was the value of 14,000 pieces of eight, in gold and silver, desiring him to take what he thought proper. The captain positively refused to touch one farthing; but the governor sent him a diamond ring the next morning worth fifty pounds. On the 22d, they sent out their boats to cruise. The 23d, there came a new deputation from the governor with a French jesuit at the head of it, who brought cocoa-nuts, chocolate, and a silver pot to make it in, with half a dozen China dishes. Henceforward the governor sent them every day some sort of provisions. Captain Cowley, from hence imagining he should not meet with the like conveniencies elsewhere, resolved to heel, and scrape the ship, which was performed

with great ease, by the assistance of the Indians and Spaniards. About the latter end of March, the governor, well knowing they could not stay here much longer, sent them thirty hogs, with a proportionable quantity of rice and potatoes. The Indians now seemed to have forgotten all that passed on their first arrival; but captain Cowley knew better, and never let his people go ashore without arms, which precaution saved them at least twenty men, whom the Indians had invited to go a fishing, and when they saw about half of them on shore drawing the net, attempted to seize those that were left in the boat; but on receiving a general discharge of their small arms, from those in the boat, as well as those on the land, few or none escaped. They afterwards made use of other stratagems, all which proved fatal to themselves. April 1, they sailed from the bay, and anchored before the governor's palace, whom they saluted with three guns, and the compliment was returned by him with the same number. On the 3d, in the morning, the governor sent an officer with a present to take leave of captain Eaton, and in the afternoon they sailed with a fair wind south by west. The isle of Guam lies in 13 deg. 30 min. north, is about 14 miles long, and six broad. The valleys are exceeding pleasant, adorned with fine meadows well watered. The soil is black, very rich, and produces plenty of cocoas, potatoes, papas, yams, plantanes, oranges, and lemons. The climate is hot, but wholesome. The inhabitants are well made, large and active, some seven feet and a half high. Most of both sexes go stark naked. They never bury their dead, but lay them in the sun to putrify. The points of their lances are made of dead mens bones; and if a man chances to be wounded with one of them, if he is not cured in seven days, he must die. " We took, says captain  
" Cowley, four of these infidels prisoners, and brought  
" them on board with their hands tied behind them :  
" three of them instantly leaped overboard, and in  
" that condition swam from the ship. Hereupon we  
" sent the boat after them, and observed, that a strong  
" man

“ man at the first blow could not enter their skins with  
“ a cutlass. One of them, adds he, to the best of  
“ my belief, received forty shots in his body before he  
“ expired; and the last of the three that was killed  
“ swam a good English mile first, not only with his  
“ hands tied behind, but with his arms pinioned.”  
’Tis certain, the great Manilla ship, which annually  
goes from thence to Acapulco, touches here for refresh-  
ments both going and coming.

April 4, they sailed west by south, and came into  
20 deg. 30 min. north latitude, where they met with a  
cluster of islands to the north of Luconia, which is the  
largest of the Philippines. . On the northernmost of these  
islands they sent their boat ashore, to get fish, and dis-  
cover the land, on which they found vast plenty of  
nutmegs growing; but saw no people. This they cal-  
led Nutmeg island, and the bay where they anchored,  
English bay. On the 26th, they fell in with Mindato,  
where they met with a south west monsoon, which made  
them steer for Canton in China, where they arrived  
safe, and had an opportunity of making themselves  
as rich as they could desire, but would not lay hold of  
it. There came into that port thirteen sail of Tarta-  
rian vessels, laden with Chinese plunder, consisting of  
the richest goods in the East Indies; but captain Eaton  
could not prevail with his men, by fair words or foul,  
to fight for any thing but gold and silver; they could  
not bear the thoughts of being pedlars, as they told  
him, nor was he able to alter their resolution; so they  
sailed from Canton to the city of Manilla to wait for a  
Tartar ship, which they were informed was half laden,  
with silver. They saw her, and chased her for a whole  
day, but could not come up with her, by reason of  
the foulness of their ship; so they stood away for a small  
island north of Luconia, to wait for a wind to carry  
them to Bantam. Here they found several islands, and  
being told there were beeves here, they took by force  
what they wanted. About the middle of September  
they reached an island to the north of Borneo, where,  
having met with a convenient bay, they haled their  
ship

ship ashore, set up a tent, and planted ten small guns to defend themselves from the natives; but they, having never seen white men before, avoided them as much as possible. However, sometime after, they came up with a canoe, in which was the queen of that country with her retinue, who all leaped into the sea to avoid them. They took them up, but with great difficulty, and afterwards entertained them so kindly, that they were very good friends during the two months they continued here.

Towards the end of December 1685, they proceeded to the island of Timor, where the crew growing extremely mutinous, and paying no regard to captain Eaton's orders, our author determined to quit the ship, and procure himself a passage home at Batavia. Accordingly twenty of them, who were the same way inclined, purchased a large boat, with design to have gone in it to Batavia; but, by contrary winds, were drove into Cheribon, a factory belonging to the Dutch, on the same isle of Java. They here met with two pieces of bad news, viz. that king Charles II. was dead; and that the Dutch had deprived the English of their factory at Bantam, which was, at that time, the 2d place of trade we had in the East Indies. One cannot but wonder, that some care was not taken, after the revolution, that we should have it again; the loss of it having proved vastly prejudicial to our East India company. While captain Cowley was here, the Dutch were contriving new schemes to hurt our trade; whereupon, he, Mr. Hill, and a 3d person made the best of their way to Batavia, that they might not be involved in any disputes: they got thither with little trouble, and the governor promised them their passage home in a Dutch ship. But there being at that time about 20 Englishmen at Batavia, they purchased a sloop, designing to have gone to Sillibar, an English factory, on the coast of Sumatra: but the governor took the sloop from them, and imprisoned the Dutchman that sold it. The true reason of this capture, was his having formed a design against Sillibar, which tho' they were forced to put off, yet



yet they would not let people go thither, for fear the English should grow too strong for them.

Now, having no other way left of getting home but in a Dutch ship, captain Cowley, which his friends, embarked in Batavia road, the beginning of March; and had a very bad passage to the Cape. May 27 their capt. died; which occasioned a council of war to be called, composed of the officers of the two ships; when it was resolved, that the captain of the Critsman, called Tominall, should command the Salida, and his chief mate, named Houdin, should be captain of the Critsman. June 1, they came before the Cape of Good Hope. The following day, he and his companions went ashore to view the Dutch settlement there; of which we shall give a description hereafter, as the state of that settlement has been vastly improved, and altered, since the year 1686.

June 15, they sailed from the Cape. The 29th, they were in 19 deg. 45 min. south latitude. July 4, they came into 14 deg. 15 min. On the 20th, they came to 15 deg. north latitude, where a council of war was held upon the captain of the Salida, who was honourably acquitted from a charge exhibited against him by the purser, of willfully murdering a man of quality, his lady, and other rich passengers, in order to run away with the ship. On the 22d, according to the author's reckoning, he had sailed quite round the terrestrial globe, cutting the same line which he did when he departed from Virginia, in 1683. August 2, in the morning, captain Tominall died of an inflammation in his bowels, and was succeeded by his pilot. On the 19th, captain Cowley saw land, but the Dutch captain would not believe it. On the 26th, they found themselves in the lat. of 53 deg. 35 min. where they came up with 2 ships, one a Dane, the other English, on board which latter captain Cowley and his companions would willingly have embarked; but the Dutch captain would not suffer them to go. September 30, they arrived at Helvoetsluys, from whence captain Cowley and his companions travelled on foot to Amsterdam, where they

they found the Ann yacht ready to sail for England, in which they came over as passengers, and arrived in London Oct. 12, 1686, after a tedious voyage of 3 years, and two months.

---

## C H A P. XV.

*The first voyage of captain William Dampier round the terrestrial globe, taken from his own journals.*

CAPTAIN William Dampier was descended from a reputable family in Somersetshire, and born in 1652. His parents gave him an education sufficient to fit him for a trade; but both of them dying, and his guardians finding that he had a strong inclination to go to sea, resolved not to baulk his roving disposition: accordingly, in or about the year 1669, they bound him to a mariner, of Weymouth in Dorsetshire, with whom he sailed to France the first year, and the next to Newfoundland, where he was so pinched with the severity of the climate, that, on his return to England, he went home to his relations, having lost much of that eagerness he formerly possessed, of going abroad. However, this his ruling passion soon prevailed again; and on hearing of an outward bound East Indiaman, he made all possible speed to London, and entered himself as a private seaman, on board the John and Martha, bound for Bantam, Captain Earning commander. In this voyage he gained much experience, and returned to England in January 1672. The next year he entered on board the Royal Prince, commanded by Sir Edward Spragge, and was in two engagements against the Dutch that same year; but falling ill a day or two before the last engagement, in which that brave English seaman Sir Edward was killed; being put on board an hospital ship, he only saw the fight  
at

at a distance. Soon after this he went to his brother's in Somershire, where he met with one col. Hellier; who, having a large estate in Jamaica, prevailed with him to go to that island to manage it. With this view he went to Jamaica in 1674, and staid there about fourteen months, but not relishing the life of a planter, he was persuaded by one captain Hodsell to engage himself among the logwood-cutters, at Campeachy, for which place he sailed in August 1675. Having suffered great hardships in this employment, for near five months, he returned to Jamaica. The February following he set off for Campeachy again, being much better skilled, both in cutting and trading in that commodity than before; which engaged him in forming schemes for advancing his substance, and obliged him to return a second time to Jamaica, then to embark for England, where he arrived, in a vessel commanded by captain Loader, in August 1678. At Campeachy he came acquainted with some Bucaniers, with whom we hereafter shall find him engaged; but it is evident, that he soon was ashamed of this wicked course of life, and endeavoured, as much as in him lay, to keep it a secret.

In 1679, he arrived again at Jamaica, in a ship called the *Loyal Merchant* of London, captain Knapman commander, with an intent to have set himself up for a complete trader in the bay of Campeachy: but his mind altering, he laid out the greatest part of what he had hitherto gained, in purchasing a small estate in Dorsetshire; then agreed with one Mr. Hobby, to make another voyage before he settled in England. Not long after their first setting out, they anchored at the west end of Jamaica, in Nigral bay; where they met with Coxon, Sawkins, Sharpe, and other privateers beforementioned, with whom all Mr. Hobby's men entered, leaving no soul with him, but Mr. Dampier; who, imagining that he alone could do him little service, agreed to accompany them. At the end of the year 1679, they arrived at Porto Bello, and took it. April 5, 1680, they resolved to cross the isthmus  
of

of Darien, landed near Golden Island, and in about nine days arrived at Santa Maria, and soon made themselves masters of it without loss. On the 23d, they had sight of Panama; but having in vain attacked Puebla Nova, before which their commander in chief, captain Sawkins, was killed, they made away for the isles of Quibo. In the month of October they took Ylo. About christmas, the same year, they came to the island Fernandez, where captain Sharpe, who had the command after the death of Sawkins, was deposed, and captain Watlin chosen in his stead, under whose command they attacked Arica; but were repulsed with the loss of twenty eight men, among whom was their new commander. They sailed from hence to the island of Plata, without any chief captain. Here the crew divided into two factions, and upon a poll, captain Sharpe was restored to the chief command: but Mr. Dampier, who voted against him, with forty six of his associates, left the ship on the 17th of April, 1681, resolving to repass the isthmus, which was certainly the boldest enterprize that ever entered into the thoughts of desperadoes; and yet they accomplished their design with little loss. May 24, having passed the isthmus in twenty three days, they went on board a French privateer, captain Tristran commander; to whom they joined a fleet of the same sort of people, consisting of nine ships, in which were 600 men. With this great force, they were able to do very little, except that these daring people, who came over land, took a Tartan, and putting themselves under the command of captain Wright, sailed to the Carraca coast, and took three ships, which they brought with them to Roca, there shared them, and separated, tho' they were but sixty in all; twenty of these, among whom was our author, captain Dampier, took one of the ships, and with their share of the prizes proceeded to Virginia; where they continued for a considerable time. At length captain Cooke, of whom we have taken notice in the foregoing chapter, arriving at Virginia with a prize, and resolving to go again into the South Seas;

Seas ; Mr. Dampier, being his old acquaintance, with most of his companions, agreed to sail with him, making up one third of his company. In this voyage it was that captain Cowley acted as master, says our author, tho' he was not trusted with the true design. From this time, to the end of August, 1685, captain Cowley's account so nearly agrees with Mr. Dampier's, that we shall not trouble the reader with so unnecessary a repetition ; but proceed.

September 3, our author left captain Davis, who succeeded captain Cooke, and went on board captain Swan, when the two ships parted ; the former sailing for Peru, and the latter along the coast of Mexico, where they met with bad weather, violent tornadoes, thunder and lightning, which first blew from the N. W. kept them out at sea, and they had no sight of land till the 14th ; when they discovered the burning mountain, called Guatemala. It appears with a double peak, between which, before bad weather, fire and smoke burst out. The city of Guatemala is situated near the foot of this high mountain, 8 leagues from the South Sea, and 50 from the gulph of Matique. The country about it abounds with the four noted dyes, indico, anatta, silvester, and cochineal. They saw here abundance of pumice-stones, which were thrown out of the vulcano, and driven by the rain down the hill into the sea. The 24th, at 14 deg. 30 min. north latitude, the weather being settled, captain Townley, our companion, went ashore with 106 men, in hopes to find a landing-place, and some refreshments for our sick. We lay by till the 26th, when coasting along to the west, we saw rich pasture plains, mixed with pleasant groves : but the country near the sea being defended with hills of sand, the raging billows would not permit our men to land with their canoes. October 2, captain Townley seeing no prospect of putting his men ashore, returned on board ; but the next day, resolving to try his fate again, run his canoes to land in a sandy bay, where he got ashore with the loss of one man, having spoiled most of his powder with the salt water. Up in the

the country they found numerous torrents, and unfordable rivers, so they were obliged to return with their canoes. Hereupon they sailed again, still coasting to the west, within two miles of the shore, but could not discover either bay or creek for 20 leagues, till they came to the isle of Tangola, where they found safe anchorage. It is high, but small, pretty well provided with wood and water. They sailed a league farther into the port of Guatulco, one of the best in the kingdom of Mexico, at 15 deg. 30 min. north latitude. On the east side of the entrance of the harbour, about a mile distant, is a small isle, about a league from the shore, and on the west a large hollow rock, open at the top, thro' which the waves of the sea force a passage, as if thro' a pipe, with a great noise, and to a great height, even in calm weather. Here captain Townley landed again with his men, and marching east came to the river Capalita. A league from Guatulco, two of our men swam over that river, and took three Indians prisoners, who could not speak Spanish, but made signs to shew them a village; so captain Townley, and our author, with 140 men, went in search of it, and returned the 8th, having marched 14 miles, to an Indian village, and seen nothing but some vinelloes, drying in the sun. This fruit grows on a small kind of vine, which twines about the trees, and at first bears a sort of yellow flower, that produces a cod, about five inches long, in which are several seeds, that are black first, and when dried of a chesnut-colour. The 12th, they sailed from Guatulco, and were forced to come to an anchor at the island Sacrificio, not above a league distant to the west. The best anchorage here is between the isle and the continent, at six fathom water. At this place two of the four canoes, which they sent before to find port Angels, returned, and informed us, that they tried in vain to land there; that they saw great store of cattle, and had lost company of the other two. The 22d, they went in here and came to an anchor, at 13 fathom water in a good bay and well sheltered against the trade winds, which blow W. S. W.

It

It lies at 15 degrees north latitude. The 23d, they landed 100 men, who lived three days upon salt beef, but at length furnished themselves with store of maize, hogs, and fowls, at a house near the plain; but brought little of them aboard, by reason of its great distance from the sea. The 28th, at night, they met with the other canoes, who had been as far as Acapulco, where they got fresh water, in spite of 150 Spaniards, who endeavoured to prevent them.

November 2, they passed the rock of Alcatraz. The 3d, they came to an anchor opposite a fine river, which has a little island at the entrance, about a mile from shore, in 14 fathom. On the west side of the channel, the Spaniards had thrown up an intrenchment, defended with 200 men, whom we forced out with little difficulty, found a good quantity of salt, and took a Mulatto prisoner, who informed us of a large ship come from Lima to Acapulco. Captain Townley wanting a better vessel, it was resolved, after some debate, to fetch her out of the harbour. The 7th they had sight of Acapulco, about 12 leagues distant. It is a town and harbour, remarkable at sea for a round hill betwixt two others, and lies in 17 deg. north, on the west side of the continent, belonging to the territory of Mexico; and is the only place of commerce on the west coast; tho' only three ships come thither; two of which go constantly every year to and from Manilla, and the other to and from Lima. This last comes to Acapulco about Christmas, freighted with quicksilver, cocoa, and pieces of eight, and stays till the other two arrive; from which she takes in her cargo of silks, muslins, calicoes, spices, &c. for Peru, and returns to Lima. This is but of a moderate size; but the two former are about 1000 tons, and sail in the beginning of April, stay 3 days at Guam, and continue their voyage to Manilla; where they commonly arrive in June. Cross the entrance of the harbour of Acapulco, is a low island, a mile and a half long, and about half a mile broad, stretching east and west; at each end of which, is a channel for the ships to come in and out,

O

That

That on the west is so deep, there is no anchorage, thro' which the Manilla ships pass; but that from Lima enters thro' the S. W. channel. The harbour runs eight miles north, then closing in a narrow channel, goes about a mile farther to the west. On the N. W. side, at the entrance of this channel, close by the sea-side, the town of Acapulco is situated; before it is a platform, mounted with a good many guns, and over against it a strong castle, defended with 40 guns, within reach of which the ships commonly ride. Captain Townley, the next night, with 140 men in 12 canoes, rowed softly to Acapulco, where he found the ship at anchor within 100 yards of the castle, and platform; so, seeing it impossible to bring her off, returned much concerned. The 11th, they sailed west along a sandy bay, at the end of which is the hill of Petaplan, lying in 17 deg. 20 min. north latitude. A little farther is a little heap of round hills, betwixt which, and the point, they entered and anchored at the N. W. side of the hill, in 11 fathom. Here they sent 170 men ashore, who marched 14 miles up the country, and saw nothing but a wretched Indian village, abandoned by the inhabitants; so that they met with nobody but a Mulatto woman, with four small children, whom they brought aboard. She declared, that a caravan with mules, loaded with flour, and other goods for Acapulco, had baited on the road to the west of this village; so they sailed after them to a place called Chequetan, a tolerable good harbour, with fresh water, and wood in abundance. The 9th, they here landed 95 men, in six canoes, taking with them the Mulatto woman for a guide, who carried them thro' a pathless wood into a plain, near which they found the prize, laden with flour, cheese, chocolate, and earthen ware, all which, excepting the earthen vessels, they bore to the ship, with some beef they had killed by the way. Captain Swan went ashore afterwards, and killed 18 cows more. The 21st, they sailed with the land wind, which blows here to the north, but at sea W. S. W. The 26th, 200 men were sent to discover the rich city of Colima, who



who returned on board the 28th, without being able to find it. Soon after they saw the volcano of Colima, remarkable for its height, in 18 deg. 36 min. north latitude, which appears with two high points, issuing out fire and smoak, about six leagues from the sea. This, if we may believe the Spaniards, is a fine fruitful country, but there is no landing near it, on account of the water's impetuosity. The 29th, 200 men were dispatched to try if they could find any road leading to the port of Sallagua, lying in 18 deg. 52 min. north latitude, but could not land.

December 1. They came in sight of the port of Sallagua, which is a bay, divided by a rocky point near the middle, and looks like two harbours, in either of which is good anchorage at 12 fathom water. Here they saw abundance of Spaniards armed, to whom, the ensuing morning, they paid a visit with 200 men, but they instantly fled. Their men pursued them 14 leagues to no purpose, taking only two straggling Mulattoes. The 6th, finding nothing to be done here, they sailed west again to Cape Corientes, in hopes of there meeting with a prize, where captain Dampier was greatly afflicted with the dropsy, which the natives pretend to cure with the cod of an alligator, dried and beaten to powder; but we could here find none of these creatures. The 11th, they got sight of Cape Coronada, which appears with 3 peaks, resembling a crown. 'Tis pretty high, steep and rocky, but flat at the top. The ship from the Philippines, being obliged to make this point in her voyage homewards, they staid here, hoping not to miss her; but wanting provisions, 60 men were dispatched to the west of the cape to get some; but they returned on the 17th, without any purchase; however, they left 4 canoes behind, with 46 men, who rowed to the west, and returned to the cape the 24th, having landed in the valley of Valderas, or the valley of Flags, which is inclosed between Cape Corientes on the south east, and point Pontique on the north west. This valley, towards the sea, is bounded by a verdant hill, which affords a pleasant prospect, as do the large meadows,

stored with cattle, and the groves of guavas, orange, and lime-trees, which here grow wild in vast numbers. Here they landed 37 men, who were attacked, about three miles up the country, by 150 Spaniards: by good luck there was a wood near them, into which they retreated, and fired so furiously upon the enemy, that they killed the Spanish captain, and 17 troopers, with the loss of 4 men, and 2 wounded, which caused the enemy to move off. They continued cruising about the cape till the 1st of January, 1686, then made for the valley of Valderas, to procure some beef, and anchored in 60 fathom, about a mile from shore, where they continued till the 27th; then landed 250 men, who killed and salted beef enough to last them 2 months. While they were here busied in getting provisions, the Manilla ship gave them the slip to the east, which occasioned captain Townley and captain Swan to part; the former sailing back to the east, and the latter proceeding west. The 20th, captain Swan anchored on the east side of the isles of Chametly, being 6 small islands, a little to the south of the tropic of Cancer, three leagues from the continent. Two of them only have sandy creeks to the sea-side, which produce a fruit called pengwins, which is of two kinds, red and yellow. The yellow grows on a stem, of the thickness of one's arm, a foot from the ground, bearing leaves six inches long, with prickly edges; the fruit grows at the top in clusters about the size of a hen's egg, and full of black seeds, which taste deliciously. The red pengwin, is no larger than an onion, but in shape like a nine-pin, and rises out of the ground like a mushroom, sixty or seventy in a cluster, putting out prickly leaves on each side eighteen inches long. Here captain Swan went to the north with a 100 men, in search of the river Cullacan; on the banks of which stands a rich town, but could find no river, nor landing-place. Seven leagues from the isle of Chametly, there is a lake, called by the Spaniards Rio de Sall; on the west side of which their men landed, and took some maiz at a farm-house, where they were informed of an  
Indian

Indian town, to which their men marched. Coming near, they were attacked by a body of Spaniards and Indians, but having beaten them off, they entered the town, where they found only three wounded Indians, who said that town's name was Massactan, and that five leagues off there were two rich gold mines. They staid here till February 2, when eighty men were landed from the river Rosario, three leagues distance from the sea, who brought with them ninety bushels of maiz. The 11th they anchored to the east of the river St. Jago. This river, the most considerable on the coast, lies in 22 deg. 15 min. is about half a mile broad at the entrance, but much wider within; and on the sandy shore they could dig water at the depth of four feet. Here captain Swan ordered seventy men to seek for a town, who, having rowed about two days, found a corn field, where, while gathering it, they seized an Indian, who informed them, there was a town called St. Pecaque four leagues off. This being told the captain, he with 140 men, in eight canoes went five leagues up the river, where landing, he marched up into the country, and came to the town, which the Spaniards quitted without opposition. It is not very large, but well built, has two churches, and a market-place in the middle. Five leagues from hence are silver mines, the ore of which is carried to Compostella, the capital of this part of Mexico, inhabited by seventy white families, and 600 Mulattoes and Indians. They continued here two days, carrying off to their canoes what provisions they found: but the 19th, captain Swan being informed by a prisoner that a thousand armed Spaniards were sent from St. Jago to attack them, ordered his people to get all the horses they could, and to march all together with what provisions they would carry, but they refusing to obey his orders, he was forced to let one half of them go on with 54 horses only, and before these were got half a mile from the town, a body of Spaniards lying in wait, killed every one of them on the spot. Captain Swan came to their assistance, when it was too late. Among the slain was

Mr. Ringrose, author of the history of the Bucaniers before mentioned. From hence they sailed the 21st to Callama. Our author having been long ill of a dropsy, was here laid in the sand, and covered up for half an hour, which operation he believes produced a good effect, for it sweat him exceedingly, and he afterwards grew daily better. They staid here to careen till the 26th, but not being able to procure fresh water, were obliged to visit the valley of Valderas again, where they anchored on the 28th, but the water here being brackish, they removed near Cape Corientes. They now began to be fully convinced of their mistake, and found to their great grief, that the commerce of this country was not carried on by sea, but intirely managed at land, by the assistance of mules.

With hopes of better fortune for the future, being encouraged by captain Swan, they left Cape Corientes March 31, resolving to steer for the East Indies, and having sailed, according to captain Dampier's reckoning, 5975 miles, they saw neither fish, nor fowl, but once, when they met with a number of boobies, which, as they supposed came from some rocks a great distance off. May 20, being in 12 deg. 55 min. north latitude, they discovered the island of Guam, having provision for three days only. The 31st, they came to an anchor on the west side of that island, and obtained of the governor good store of hogs, cocoa-nuts, rice, biscuit, and other refreshments, with fifty pounds of Manilla tobacco. June 21, they arrived at the isle of St. John, one of the Philippine islands.

The Philippine islands, says captain Dampier, are a row of islands, stretching from 5 deg. north latitude, to 16 deg. longitude, the chief of which is Luconia, where Magellan was killed. Manilla, is the capital city, a sea port, and large, situated at the south east, opposite to the isle of Mindora, a place very strong, and of great trade. The Acapulco ships carry from hence vast quantities of India goods, which are brought thither by the Portuguese, Chinese, and sometimes by the English of Fort St. George, by stealth. To the south  
of

of Luconia are a dozen or more large isles, with an infinite number of small ones. This of St. John lies between 7 and 8 deg. north latitude, is in length, from N. N. W. to S. S. E. 38 leagues, and in breadth 24. The soil is rich and fruitful. The 22d. we steered along the east side of Mindanao, towards the north end, till we came in 7 deg. 40 min. where we anchored in a little bay. The isle of Mindanao, next to Luconia, is the largest of the Philippines, being 60 leagues long, and near 60 broad. The soil here is good, and the stony hills produce various kinds of trees, unknown to us. In the valleys are many fresh-water brooks, with different sorts of ever-greens, also rice, water-melons, plantains, bananas, nutmegs, cloves, &c. but above all the rest, a tree, called by the natives, the libby tree, which produces the fago. The poorer sort eat it for bread several months in the year. The bark and wood of this tree is hard, but full of white pith, like our elder. It is of this pith, prepared by stamping it in a mortar, and pouring water upon it, they make cakes. It affords also wild and tame beasts, such as horses, cows, goats, wild hogs, deer, &c. Of tame fowls, they have only ducks and hens; but of wild, pigeons, turtle-doves, parrots, and other kinds, with small birds, a vast variety. They have also plenty of good fish; nor do they want harbours, and creeks. The wind blows east from October to May, then west to October again. The inhabitants are alike in colour, stature, and religion, being all Mahometans; yet they differ in language: they are low in stature, with little heads, small limbs and eyes, short noses, wide mouths, thin red lips, black teeth, and strait bodies. Their complexion is tawny. They wear a turban of cloth, that comes once round the head, laced or fringed at the ends, which are knotted, and hang down. They wear likewise frocks, and breeches; but neither shoes nor stockings. The women tie their long and black hair in a knot, which hangs down behind, and have very little feet. Their covering is a piece of cloth, sewed together; and over it a  
frock,

frock, reaching a little below the waist. They love the company of white men, and freely allow all the liberties they dare. There is one particular custom in the city of Mandanao, which may seem somewhat odd. As soon as any strangers arrive, the men of the town come aboard, to invite them to their houses, where they are sure to ask, whether they stand in need of a pagally, that is, a female companion. The guest, out of civility, is obliged to accept the offer, by a small present; and, as the continuance of this favour must be purchased by other trifles, they in return give the stranger leave to eat, drink, and sleep, in their houses, for money. Nothing here is to be had gratis, except a little tobacco. A mean way of begging this! tho' practised among the best in the place. The capital is situated at the south side, on the bank of a river, two miles from the sea, in 7 deg. 20 min. north latitude. Their houses are built on posts, from fourteen to twenty feet high, having but one floor, which is divided into many rooms, the floors whereof are generally matted. Their common food is rice, sago, and fish; tho' the gentry eat buffaloes, and fowls, but not without a good deal of rice. They eat every thing with their fingers, making no use of spoons, or forks. The chief trades in this city are goldsmiths, carpenters, blacksmiths, and wheel-wrights, and they build good ships, either for war or trade. Their exported merchandizes, are gold, bees-wax, and tobacco; the two first come from the mountainous parts, but the last grows all over the island. For these, they take calicoes, muslins, and Chinese silks, in exchange. The inhabitants, in general, are afflicted with a dry scurf, all over their bodies, which causes violent itchings, and when scratched, raiseth little white scales on the skin, which after they are gone, leave white spots upon their bodies: but as this is not infectious, they don't mind it. They have many wives, and are under the government of a sultan, who is poor enough; but so arbitrary, that he can command every private subject's purse at pleasure: At the time they were in the island, he seemed about fifty years

years old, and besides his queen had twenty-nine concubines. When he appears abroad, he is carried on four mens shoulders, attended with a guard of ten soldiers. He had a brother, who was both prime minister and general, a cunning person, of good conversation, who could both talk, and write very well the Spanish language. In their wars, they use swords, lances, and another weapon like a bayonet, which not only the leading men; but the meanest people wear. They never fight a pitched battle in the open plain; but raise small forts, which are mounted with guns, wherein they shelter themselves, endeavouring to surprize one another by small parties; and they give no quarter. Their sabbath is on Friday, when the sultan goes twice to the Mosque, where they use a drum, instead of a bell, to call the people together. They never circumcise their males till they arrive at the age of eleven or twelve; this operation is performed by the Mahometan priest, who holds the foreskin of the penis between two sticks, and cuts it off with a pair of scissars.

When we first anchored, at the entrance of the river Mindanao, one of the sultan's sons, with his uncle before mentioned, came aboard, and, in Spanish, demanded who we were? being told we were English, he asked if we came to settle there, of which, they had some promise before, and now hoped to see it performed; that we might protect them from the Dutch, whom they very much dreaded: and, if we had seriously reflected on the matter, it might have turned out much to our advantage; considering its commodious situation, between the three isles of Meangis, all which abound in spice and cloves, and are not 20 leagues distant from the Philippines. Besides we were provided with all sorts of artificers, such as carpenters, bricklayers, shoemakers, taylors, &c. and with all convenient tools, guns, great and small, and ammunition enough for such an enterprize. But to return to the king of Mindanao's brother and nephew. They invited captain Swan ashore, and promised to furnish him with all the provisions he stood in need of. After some deliberation

beration he agreed to go with them. This city is a mile long, but not very broad. The captain was daily entertained, at the king's brother's house, who was called Raja Laut, and to such of his men, that had no money, he gave boiled rice, scraps of fowl, and the flesh of buffaloes. But notwithstanding these appearances of friendship, they soon began to discover Raja Laut's designs were not honest; for he never provided any beef, pretending he could get none; and borrowed a considerable quantity of gold of captain Swan, which he never repaid. These artifices induced part of the ship's crew to think of leaving the place; while the rest being dispersed in the country, with the captain himself, were not inclined to depart, so they deposed him from the command, chusing captain Teat in his room, and sailed away on the 13th of January 1687, leaving captain Swan with 44 of his men, besides 16 buried, behind. Six leagues to the west of the isle of Mindanao, they passed in sight of Chambungo, a town in the same island, then saw many low isles; to the south of which lay another 12 miles in length. The 17th, they anchored betwixt these isles. The 27th, they got about the west point of Mindanao, and kept the same course, till they came abreast the other Philippine isles. Feb. 18, they came to an anchor, at the N. W. of the isle of Mindora, near a small brook, which discharged itself into the sea, where they saw plenty of hogs, and oxen, but so wild, they could take none. The 23d, they came to the S. W. end of Luconia; and took two barks, laden with goods for Manilla. The island of Luconia is 60 leagues wide in the middle, and is surrounded by many small isles, especially at the north end. In the country are several large pasture plains, as well as mountains. The former afford buffaloes, cows, oxen, horses, sheep, goats, and hogs; the latter produce some gold. The inhabitants of Luconia are Indians, who live in little huts, under the Spanish yoke, and are instructed in the catholic faith, by the priests. Manilla is the chief city, situated at the foot of a ridge of high hills, in 14 deg. north latitude. It is walled round; the houses are large, strong,



strong, and covered with pantiles; the streets broad, and regular, with a market place in the middle. There are many churches and convents with a spacious harbour defended by a strong fort; in which are a number of small craft, besides the Acapulco ships. The Portuguese have leave to trade here, and many Chinese merchants reside in the city. February 26, they sailed from Luconia, and on the 14th of March anchored on the north side of the isle of Condore, which is the chief of a heap of islands, and the only one of them which is inhabited, lying in 8 deg. 40 min. north latitude, being five leagues long, but not above three leagues broad, and in some parts scarce one mile. In this island grows a tall tree, the body of which is four feet diameter; this the inhabitants cut horizontally half thro', about a foot from the bottom, and then sloping the upper part inwardly, down to the transverse cut, and making a hollow in the semicircular stump, a liquor distils thereinto, which when boiled, makes good tar, and more boiled, becomes pitch, answering both purposes. Each such tree affords two quarts every day, for a month, then dries up, and recovers again. Here also are mango-trees, whose fruit they pickle; and the grapes grow here on a strait tree about a foot diameter, bunches about its body like cocoas; they are both red and white, large and pleasant. This island abounds also with wild nutmeg-trees, whose fruit grows amongst the leaves, like our walnuts, and the tree is as large. They have also hogs, guanos, wild cocks and hens, with divers kinds of birds. The inhabitants of the isle of Condore, are originally Cochin-Chinese, of a moderate size, but somewhat darker than the Mindanyans. Their hair is strait and black, their eyes of the same colour, their noses small, their lips thin, a little mouth, and white teeth. They are civil, but poor, having no other employment but to gather the juice of tar, and to draw some oil from the tortoises. They offer their women here to all strangers, a custom used in most of these islands, as well as in the East Indies, on the coast of Guiney, in Africa, and also at Tonquin. They are Pagans, and adore the fly, the elephant, and horse, besides

Besides other images of birds, and fish. April 6, they left this place, and sailed for the isle of Ubi, from thence for the bay of Siam, which they entered the 24th; going in among the isles, at the bottom of the bay, where they found a little village, inhabited by fishermen, but no fish; then returning on a board, they were detained by a calm, and afterwards by tempestuous weather, till May 13. The 21st, they sailed back for Condore, where they came to an anchor the 24th: here six of their men, going aboard a Malayan vessel, were killed. June 4, being well provided with fuel, and fresh water, they intended to make Manilla, but by contrary winds were driven to the isle of Prata, which is inclosed with rocks, and lies betwixt Canton in China, and Manilla. June 29, they came to an anchor at the east end of the isle of St. John, lying on the sea coast of Canton, where they were forced to put out to sea again, being surprised by a violent tempest, with which, being greatly terrified, they resolved to steer for the Piscadores, which lie between the island of Formosa, and the continent of China. These are a good parcel of islands: betwixt the two eastermost is a safe harbour, and on the west side a large town and fort, in which is a Tartar garison of 300 men. The houses are low, but neatly built. July 20, they anchored here, and sending the boat ashore, were civilly received by the governor, who sent them presents; "among them, (says our author) was the finest heifer I ever tasted in my life." However, this Tantarion would not allow them either to trade there, or to go ashore. Mr. Read, who was then their commander, in return for the governor's present, sent him a silver hilted sword, a carbine, and a gold chain. The 29th, they sailed from hence, and, on the 6th of August, came to an anchor on the east side of the northermost of the five isles, in 20 deg. 20 min. north latitude, where, contrary to their expectations, they found three or four large towns. This the Dutch, who were in our ship, called the Prince of Orange isle. The northermost of two more large isles, we called Grafton isle; and to the third gave the name of Monmouth isle. Orange island

island is the largest, but not inhabited; the other two are hilly, and very well peopled. The hills in all of them are rocky; but the valleys fruitful in grafs, plantains, bananas, pine-apples, sugar-canes, potatoes, some cotton, and rivulets of fresh water; they have few fowls, but are well stored with goats, and hogs: the natives are short, and thick, round faced, have low foreheads, and full eye-brows, with hazel eyes, short noses, white teeth, and lank black hair, cut up to their ears; and are of a copper complexion. They all go bare-headed, and the major part have no cloaths, but a clout round their waist. The women wear a short petticoat made of coarse calico, reaching to the knees; and both sexes have ear-rings, made of a yellow metal, which they dig out of the mountains, that has the weight and colour of gold, but paler. Their houses are small, and not above five feet high, of which they build four rows, one above another, on the side of a rocky hill. They never kill any goats, or hogs themselves, but eat their guts, and skins, which last they broil after the hair is singed off. They also make a dish of locusts, which come at stated seasons, and devour their potatoes. They catch them with nets, and broil, or bake them in an earthen pan, which eat tolerably well. Their common drink is water, tho' they boil a sort of liquor out of sugar-canes mixed with black berries, which when put into jars, and worked about a week, then settled, becomes a fine pleasant liquor, not much unlike English ale. They call this liquor *bashee*, from whence they called the islands, *Bashee Islands*. Here we saw a young lad buried alive, as they supposed, for theft. They have but one wife, and she, with her children are very dutiful to the father. They are very civil quiet people, not only with strangers, but among themselves; for in all the time they staid here, they never observed them to differ or quarrel, with each other. Having provided themselves with about eighty hogs, and good store of potatoes, they proceeded to the isle of *Manilla*, but being prevented by Tempests, and contrary winds, they resolved to steer round the

P

Philippines,

Philippines, and pass into the Indian ocean, about the isle of Timor.

October 3, intending to pass through the Spice islands, they steered on the east side of Luconia, then directed their course west for the isle of Mindanao, where they lay before; there anchored on the 16th, between two small isles, in 5 deg. 10 min. north latitude: while they were in this place, the prince of one of the spice islands came aboard, and informed them, that captain Swan, with some of his men, were still in the city of Mindanao; but they were told afterwards, that he, and his surgeon, were overset and drowned by the natives, as they were going aboard a Dutch ship in that road; and that this was done, as they imagined, by the order of Raja Laut, who had seized all their gold. November 2, they sailed from hence to the isle of Celebes, at the south end; and on the west side of which is the rich and strong town of Macassar, belonging to the Dutch; here they anchored, being half a mile from another large island, in eight fathom water, at 1 deg. 50 min. south latitude, and staid till the 29th: the next day they steered between two shoals, at 3 deg. south latitude, ten leagues from Celebes. Towards the evening they saw three spouts\*.

December 1, steering south, they had sight of the isle

---

\* A spout, is a piece of a cloud hanging down, sometimes sloping, and sometimes bending like a bow, but never strait: after this is seen, the sea begins to foam, and the water begins to move slowly round, till increasing in a whirling motion, it flies upward, above a hundred paces in circumference at the bottom, but lessens gradually upwards to the smallness of a spout, or long funnel, thro' which the water of the sea seems to be carried into the clouds. Then you see the cloud, which was before immoveable, scud along, and the spout following for half an hour till the suction is over; then breaking off, all the water, that was below the spout, falls into the sea, with a great noise: however, they are more terrible than dangerous.

of

of Bouton, and got close to the N. W. end of it the 5th; tho' the harbour is at the east side, in 4 deg. 54 min. south latitude. This island is 25 leagues in length, ten broad, and four leagues from the S. E. end of the isle of Celebes. About a league from this harbour, and half a mile from the sea, is a long town, situated on the top of a little hill, in a pleasant plain, inclosed with a walk of cocoa-trees, about which is a strong wall. This town is called Callasufung; its inhabitants are not unlike the Mindanayans, but neater. The 6th, they brought them eggs, fowls, potatoes, &c. and the sultan afterwards came in a boat, guarded by twelve musqueteers. They staid here till the 12th, and on the 16th passed by Omba, in 8 deg. 20 min. south latitude. The 28th, they saw the N. W. point of Timor, and the next day discovered two small islands near to the S. W. end of it; being got clear of these, they stood off south for new Holland, part of the Terra Australis incognita. The 31st, at night, they stood to the north, for fear of a shoal, laid down in the charts at 23 deg. 50 min. bearing south by west from the east end of Timor, which they saw in the morning, being a spot of land, appearing above the water, with several rocks about it, 10 feet above the surface. This shoal was represented in their charts 20 leagues from new Holland, but they sailed 60 afterwards due south before they fell in with it. And our author is very positive, that no part of New Holland lies so far to the north by 40 leagues, as is laid down in their hydrographical maps; for he found the tides of New Holland, keeping their constant course, the flood running north by east, and the ebb south by east.

January 4, 1688, they fell in with the land of New Holland, and on the 5th, anchored a league to the east of a point of land, two miles from the shore: New Holland is a vast tract of land; but whether it be an isle, or part of the continent, is unknown. However, our author is certain that it joins neither to Asia, Africa, or America, thereabouts. The parts where they lay had no fresh water, except what was dug, but

various sorts of trees, and among the rest the dragon-tree, which produces gum-dragon. They here saw no fruit-trees, nor the foot-step of any living animal, except one, which seemed the track of some beast, about the size of a mastiff-dog. They have a few land birds, but none bigger than a fieldfare, and as few water fowl. The inhabitants are the most miserable wretches in the world, having no houses to put their heads in, nor any covering, but the heavens; no garments, except the bark of a tree, tied round the waist like a girdle; no sheep, fruit, or poultry, but tortoises, manatees, cockles, mussels, and periwinkles; no religion, nor government, but live promiscuously. Their bodies are strait, tho' thin; they have strong limbs, great heads and eye-brows, with round foreheads. Their eye-lids are constantly more than half closed, to keep out the flies; which are here very troublesome. They have thick lips, wide mouths, and bottle noses. What seems more strange, both sexes, old and young, want the fore teeth of the upper jaw; but whether this is a natural defect, or they draw them, is not known. They have no beards, but thick and short curled hair on their heads, like the African negroes, and are altogether as black. We could not understand a word they spoke, says Mr. Dampier, nor could we persuade them to help us carry water, being very averse to any labour. March 12, they sailed from hence N. and the 16th were in the lat. of Cocoa island, lying in  $12^{\circ} 12'$ . Nothing material happened till the 25th of April, when they crossed the line, and sailed on the west side of Sumatra, directing their course to Nicobar, an island lying four leagues from the north west end of Sumatra, the most southerly of a cluster of isles, called by that name; where they anchored May 5, and where the inhabitants trade with all the European nations: it is twelve leagues long, four broad, and lies in 7 deg. 30 min. north latitude. Here are plenty of cocoas, and mallories, a fruit which the natives boil in covered jars. They are strait limbed, and long visaged, with lank black hair, and of a copper complexion.

The

The men wear only a kind of sash round their middles; and the women a petticoat from the waist to their knees. Their language is a mixture of the Malayan and Portuguese; but they seem to have no settled government. Our author, Mr. Ambrose, and Mr. Hall, resolving to abandon an unruly crew, were here put ashore, with design to go from hence to Achin. Accordingly, on the 5th of May, they three, with four Malaysans, and a Portuguese, went in a Nicobar canoe, very little larger than the below-bridge wherries, at London, left this island, and rowed spell and spell. The 7th, they looked out for Sumatra, thinking they were within twenty leagues of it; but instead thereof saw Nicobar about eight leagues distant. The 18th, they were driven by a tempest, and in great danger of being cast away. The 19th, to their great joy, one of their Malayan friends, cried Pulo Way, that is, the Isle of Way, lying near the north west end of Sumatra, which about noon they found to be the isle itself; and the high land, which he had mistaken for the isle of May, proved to be the Golden Mountain in Sumatra. The 20th, they anchored at the mouth of the river Passange Jonca, in the isle of Sumatra, being all half dead with the fatigues of this voyage. They were carried to a little fisher-town near the river, where they were kindly used, and staid till June, then left the place, and in three days arrived at Achin. July following, our author, went with captain Welden to Tonquin, and returned to Achin, in April 1689, where he staid till September; then making a short trip to Manacca, came to Achin again the Christmas after. Soon after he went to Fort St. George, and staid five months, then came back to Bencouli, an English factory on the west of Sumatra: but, continues Mr. Dampier, before my return to England, I must not forget one passage relating to the painted prince, who died at Oxford: his name was Jeoly, and he, with his mother, were purchased by one Mr. Moody at Mindanao, Mr. Moody and I went together to Bencouli; at parting, he gave me one share in this little prince, and his mother, and

left them in my custody. They were born in the Isle of Meangis, which abounds with gold, cloves, and nutmegs, as he told me: he was curiously painted down the breast, and betwixt his shoulders behind; but chiefly down his thighs before, with flower-work. By what I could learn, adds he, this painting was performed, by first pricking the skin with a fine needle, and then rubbing on it a gum of a certain tree, called damurer, which is used instead of pitch, in some parts of the Indies. He told me, their daily food three was fowls, fishes, and potatoes; and that they wore ear-rings of gold, with bracelets about their legs and arms. He farther informed me, that, as his father, mother, and he, were going in a canoe to one of the adjacent islands, they were seized by some Mindanayan fishermen, and sold to the interpreter of Raja Laut, with whom he and his mother lived as slaves five years, and then were purchased by Mr. Moody for 60 dollars: some time after, Mr. Moody gave me a share in them, the mother died, and it was with great difficulty I saved the son's life.

While Mr. Dampier staid at Bencouli, he served as gunner of the fort; but when his time was out, he went on board the *Defence*, captain Heath commander, with his painted prince, in order to return to England. January 25, 1690, they sailed with three more ships; but soon after they were out at sea, a fatal distemper raged aboard them, which they attributed to the water, that they took in at Bencouli. To remedy this, they for some time mixed tamarinds with their water, which, as our author believes, saved the lives of many of their men; having, before this method was taken, lost so many hands, that it was with much difficulty they got to the Cape of Good Hope. This Cape lies at the southermost point of the African continent, in 34 deg. 30 min. south latitude. It affords an agreeable prospect at sea, which is occasioned by its remarkable eminencies; the most considerable of them, is the mountain on the west side, called the Table Mountain, from its flatness a-top. To the north



north of it is a large harbour, with a low isle lying off it, which may be entered on either side. The country about it produces short grafs, and some trees, tho' not in great plenty; yet when cultivated affords good crops of wheat, barley, and pease, besides apples, pears, quinces, pomegranates, and such plenty of grapes, as furnish wine, not only sufficient for their own use, but also for sale to such ships as put in there; this wine is pleasant, sweet and strong. They have here also plenty of sheep, goats, hogs, horses, and cows; but their oxen do not feed well, because of the shortness of the pasturage. Here are wild beasts also, but they saw only the ass, which is a beautiful creature, striped with black and white. They have likewise ducks, most kinds of yard fowl, and ostriches. The sea too affords them plenty of fish. Opposite the harbour the Dutch have a strong fort, where the governor lives; and to the west of it is a Dutch town: on the backside of the fort, is the East India house belonging to the company, with a large garden adjoining, stored with all kinds of fruit, herbs, &c. and embellished with flowers, walks, arbours, statues, &c. The natives of this country are called Hottentots, a middle-sized people, with small limbs, flat faces, large eye-brows, and black eyes, but abominably nasty. They build their houses round, with the fire place in the middle. The men have but one stone in appearance, which is very strange; but the women are more to be admired, who have a flap of skin naturally growing on their bodies, to cover their nakedness, and are so brutish, that they will prostitute themselves, or do whatever you please for a small recompence. Their apparel is a sheep skin over their shoulders, and a leathern cap full of grease upon their heads. Their legs are wound round with the guts of beasts. They are born white, but make themselves black with soot and grease, often repeating it, till their skins become as black as negroes. When a woman marries, she cuts off one joint of her finger, and if her husband dies, and she marries again, she cuts off another, &c. They eat any thing that is foul. If the  
Hollanders

Hollanders kill a beast, they will get the guts, squeeze the excrements out, and without more ado, lay them upon the fire, and before they are hot thorough, eat them. If a slave has a mind to have carnal knowledge of one of their women, let him give her husband a bit of tobacco-roll, and he will instantly fetch her, and make her lie with him; for tho' they beat their wives if they lie with another Hottentot, they do not value their doing so with strangers. They worship the moon, and when they expect to see it, you may see thousands dancing and singing by the sea-side. In dark weather, they say their god is angry.

May 3, they left the Cape of Good Hope, and on the 20th of June arrived at St. Helena, from whence they sailed the 2d of July, and on the 16th of September, 1690, came to an anchor in the Downs. On our author's arrival at London, being in want of money, he disposed of his painted prince Jeoly; and was afterwards informed, that he was carried about for a fight, and at last died of the small-pox at Oxford.

## C H A P. XVI.

*Captain William Dampier's voyage to New Holland, and new Guiney; by way of supplement to the former.*

**J**ANUARY 14, 1691, new stile, captain Dampier sailed from the Downs in his majesty's ship the Roebuck, of twelve guns, 50 men and boys, and 20 months provisions, to make new discoveries; being fitted out for this undertaking, which tended to the public advantage, by Thomas Herbert, earl of Pembroke, lord high admiral in the reign of William III. They took their departure from the Start, as it was the last land they saw in England, and made Cape Finisterre the 19th; the 28th, they had sight of Lancerota, one of the Canary isles, and stood off for Teneriff, where they intended

intended to take in wine and brandy. The 30th, they anchored in the road of Santa Cruz, the best port in the island for their purpose; where the best landing is in a sandy cove, near a mile to the N. E. of the road; where there is good water, insomuch that the ships from Oratavia, which is the principal part of the island for trade, besides the people, send their boats hither for it. They staid here some time, and the captain had an opportunity, to give the reader a tolerable idea of an island, so often mentioned by navigators, on account of their placing here the first Meridian, from which the degrees of longitude are generally reckoned in our maps

The town of Santa Cruz is small and open, defended by two forts only, and at this place it was that Sir Francis Drake destroyed the Spanish galleons, April 1657. Soon after their arrival, captain Dampier went by land to the city of Laguna, the metropolis of the island; and where the governor-general of the Canaries resides. The city of Laguna is pretty large, but very compact, affording a delightful prospect at a distance. One part of it stands against a hill, the other on a level. The houses are built with stone, mostly strong, and covered with pantiles; they are not uniform, but pleasant enough. There are two churches, four convents, and some chapels, besides gentlemens houses, and gardens, set round with orange trees, limes, and other fruits: in the middle of which are hot herbs, sallading, flowers, &c. On the back of the town is a large plain, four leagues in length, and two miles broad, producing fine thick grass, like the meadows in England: but the island in general is mountainous, and you may see from the town, and plain, on the S. W. a small peaked hill, of a great height east, which is called the Pike of Teneriff. The true Malmsey wine is produced in this island, and looked upon as the best white wine in the world. Here is also Canary, and verdonia, or green wine.

February 4, they sailed from Santa Cruz for the isle of Mayo, one of the Cape Verd Islands; and, on the 11th, anchored in the road to the N. W. part of the island

island. It is almost round, 7 leagues in circuit, and lies in 15 deg. north lat. The English have a considerable trade here in salt, which costs nothing but labour, for they may take it up, as the sun kerns it, and the carriage being performed by mules, is cheap. The inhabitants are negroes, and like those of Africa. Their fruits are figs, and water-melons; their best land animals are goats and asses. The sea affords them fish of various kinds, and the green tortoises lay their eggs here, in May, June, July, and August.

February 19, they left this place, and the next day anchored near the town of St. Jago, in 16 deg. north latitude. The Portuguese governor, and the bishop of all the Cape Verd Islands, reside here. The town stands scattering against the sides of two mountains. There is a straggling street, with houses on each side along the sea, with a run of water between them; which empties itself in a sandy bay, where the sea is smooth, so that here is good watering and landing at any time. There is a small fort at the landing-place, and another above the town. The town consists of about 30 houses, the people in general are black, and poor, having little trade. Their principal manufactures are striped cottons, which the Portuguese carry to Brasil. It is said also, that they send from hence to Portugal 100 tons of sugar annually. Their fruits are oranges, lemons, citrons, pomegranates, musk, and water melons, limes, guavas, quinces, custard-apples, papas, &c. The custard-apple, is a fruit as big as a pomegranate, and remarkable for its covering, which is set round with small regular knobs. The inside is full of a soft white pulp, very sweet and pleasant, much resembling a custard, both in colour and taste: the tree that bears this fruit, is about the size of a quince tree, having small, thick-set, spreading branches. At the end of these, here-and-there the fruit grows, on a stalk of its own, about ten inches long, hanging down with its own weight. The papa is a fruit about the bigness of a melon, and hollow like it; but in the middle, has a handful of blackish seeds about the bigness of peppercorns,

corns, whose taste is hot. The fruit when ripe is soft and luscious, and if boiled when green, is eaten with pork and salt beef, instead of turnips. The tree is ten or twelve feet high, and the body at the bottom about eighteen inches over. It has no branches, only large leaves growing upon stalks which proceed from the body, six or seven feet from the ground. The fruit grows the thickest among the thickest leaves, but towards the top there being none, the papas spring out from the body of the tree, as thick as they can stick one by another. February 22, they sailed from St. Jago, stood away for the bay of All Saints, and arrived before the place March 25, where they anchored very safely. This bay lies in the latitude of 13 deg. south, is secured and commanded by three several forts. The place consists of 2000 houses, most of which are hid from the harbour, those that appear, being seated among trees, give a pleasant prospect. There are 13 churches, chapels, and convents, with a nunnery in the town. The cathedral, and jesuits college, which are the chief of them, may be seen from the harbour. Here lives an archbishop, in a fine palace, and the governor's palace is likewise a stately stone building. The houses in the town are either two or three stories high, built with stone, most of them large, with balconies, but indifferently furnished, except with respect to pictures. A great many merchants always reside at Bahia, it being a place of great trade. They found there 30 large vessels from Europe, with two Portuguese men of war for their convoy; besides two ships that traded to Africa, and abundance of small craft. The merchants here are rich, and have numbers of negroes of both sexes. The chief commodities which the European ships bring hither, are linen cloths, both coarse and fine, bays, wollen cloths, serges, perpetuanas, hats, stockings, thread, biscuit, wheat, butter, cheese, iron, pewter, &c. They carry from hence sugar, tobacco, snuff, die-woods, brasil, fustic; also raw hides, train oil, &c. The European ships commonly arrive here in February and March, having generally a good passage

sage home. They have a great trade carried on here in a sort of whale fishing, which creatures, tho' small, come here in great numbers; so that the killing of them turns to good account. The inhabitants of this city are generally rich, or in very good circumstances, none of them without negroe-slaves to do their drudgery, and to carry them in a kind of hammocks when they go abroad, which are either open, or covered. Besides the bay of All Saints, there are two harbours, much frequented in Brasil, viz. Fernambuca, and Rio Janeiro; and besides these, there is a town and haven called St. Paul's, where they gather a good deal of gold, and tho' the people are a kind of lawless banditti, they have a great deal of money, and are well furnished with European commodities. The country about the city of Bahia is flat, but not very low, tho' sufficiently watered with rivulets. The soil is tolerably good, and when cultivated, produces sugar-canes, cotton, indico, tobacco, and fruit-trees peculiar to the climate. At the top of the cotton-tree grows a black thread, like horse hair but longer, of which they make cables, that are rather more serviceable than those made of hemp. They have also a vast variety of fruits trees, and ground-fruits in abundance; great plenty of wild and tame fowls, with land animals innumerable. They have here the amphibena, or two-headed snake, of a grey colour, with black streaks, whose bite is incurable, but she rarely wounds, being, as some say, blind, and living underground like a mole; she is 14 inches long, with a head at each end \*. The sea hereabouts also produces various sorts of fine fish.

April 3, in the morning, they left this harbour, and on the 27th came into 18 and 19 deg. S. L. from thence sailed to 39 deg. 32 min. without meeting with any thing remarkable, except a dead whale, whose carcase was covered over with various sorts of birds. June 2, they saw a large black bird, which was said never to fly above thirty leagues from the Cape of Good Hope,

---

\* See *Owen's Octavo Dictionary*, under A M P  
tho',

tho', by their account, they were 90 leagues from it: but captain Dampier soon found out the error, and that they were but 25 leagues from that cape; accordingly, June 3, they fell in with the *Antelope* of London, who came the day before from that very place; with this ship they kept company all the next day, then steered to the East Indies, for the coast of New Holland. After they had run 600 leagues, and were in 34 deg. 17 min. south latitude, and 39 deg. 24 min. longitude east from the cape; till July 4 they sailed 782 miles. July 25, being in 26 deg. 14 min. south latitude, they saw sea-weed like moss, and on the 30th a sort of fowls they had never seen before, of a grey colour, with red sharp bills; but otherways, not unlike lapwings.

After a voyage of 114 deg. from Brasil, on Aug. 2, they saw an opening, and on the 6th anchored in two fathom and a half water. The 7th, the captain named the mouth of this sound *Sharks Bay*, lying in 25 deg. south latitude. The land here is pretty high, the soil is sand, which, by the sea-side, produces a large kind of samphire, that bears a white flower; and farther up, there is a sort of grass, growing in tufts as big as a bushel, interspersed with heath much like Bagshot heath. Here is a variety of trees and shrubs; but none above ten feet high, and about a yard in circumference. The leaves of these trees were whitish on one side, and green on the other. Most of these trees and shrubs, had, at this time, either blossoms or berries on them. The blossoms were of divers colours, but chiefly blue, smelling sweet. They saw no land fowls, but eagles, of the larger kind; tho' there were five or six sorts of the smaller birds, the largest of which were no bigger than larks, and some small as wrens, all singing. The land animals they saw here, were only a sort of maccroons, and guanias, which last differed very remarkably from those in the West Indies, having a more frightful head, and no tail; and at the rump, where the tail should be, there appeared something like a head, which would make a common spectator imagine the creature had two heads. They are speckled like toads, with black  
Q and

and yellow, and have scales like crocodiles. They are very slow, and when you come near them will not move, but hiss, and the body when opened has an unfavorable smell. The sea fish they saw here, were chiefly sharks; tho' there are skates, thornbacks, &c. and some green turtle weighing 200 lb. of these they caught two, which served the ship's company two days, and were tolerable good meat. Of the sharks they caught a great many, which, as things then stood, the men looked upon to be good entertainment. Having anchored at three several places in this bay, they moved to the west side of it on the 7th of August, in search of fresh water, but finding none, they got some wood for fuel, and steered east. The 21st, at noon, bearing S. E. by E. the land appeared like a cape; but anchoring about five leagues from the bluff-point, they found it to be the east end of an isle six leagues long, and one broad, lying in 20 deg. 21 min. where they went ashore, and found two or three shrubs like rosemary, and for this reason, they called it Rosemary Island. They here also found two sorts of grain like beans, one growing on bushes, the other on a sort of vine. The 23d, they ran out again, and saw no land till the 30th, when, being in 18 deg. 21 min. they saw a great smoke, steered towards it, and came to an anchor at four in the afternoon, three leagues and a half from the shore, where they observed a small eclipse of the moon about two hours after sun-set that night. The 31st, early in the morning, the captain with ten men went ashore, all armed with pistols and cutlasses, carrying picaxes and shovels to dig wells. Coming near the shore, they saw three black tall men on a sandy bay a head of them; who, on their rowing in, went away. When they landed, they ordered the boat, with two men in her, to lie at anchor a little from the shore, while they pursued the black men, who were got a quarter of a mile from them, to the top of a hill, joined by eight or nine more. When they reached the top of the little hill, they discovered a plain about half a mile off, wherein stood several things, appearing at a distance like haystacks;



stacks ; but found them to be rocks. Here they searched about for fresh water, but could find none, nor house, nor people ; so they returned to the place where they landed, and dug for water. While they were at work, nine or ten of the natives came to the top of a rising ground near them, making a great noise, and threatening them. At length, one of them came forward, and the rest followed at a distance ; but when the foremost got within fifty yards of them, he ran away again. Now the captain taking only two men with him, went along the sea side, when twelve of the natives appeared at a distance, and on seeing only three going away from the rest, followed them at some distance, while the captain with his two men hid themselves behind the bend of a sand bank, not doubting but the natives would endeavour to seize them, being three times their number, accordingly the black men, well knowing they were thereabouts, began to disperse. The captain having before observed that they could easily out run these people, sent a nimble young man after them. They ran before him at first, but when he came up, they faced about and fought him. The captain fearing how it might be with the young man, ran to the top of the hill, and saw him closely engaged with them. Hereupon, he discharged his gun in order to scare them ; but they despised the noise, tossing up their hands, and crying pooh, pooh ! then coming forward, threw a lance, which he narrowly escaped. He now thought it high time to charge again, and shoot one of them, which he did, the rest seeing him fall made a stand, and the young man got away to him, having been struck thro' the cheek with one of their lances ; but he soon recovered the wound. Captain Dampier with his two men now returned to the rest, and seeing they had dug nine feet, yet could find no water ; they all returned aboard on the 2d of September.

Having spent about five weeks ranging off-and-on the coast of New Holland, and the men being greatly afflicted with the scurvy, they sailed for the island of Timor on the 8th, and had sight of it the 14th in

the evening. On the 21<sup>st</sup>, in the morning, being very near the island, they saw a large opening, which from east to west seemed five leagues broad. Into this they entered, sounding as they went, and at last anchored in nine fathom water, about a league from shore. This appeared to them as an inlet into the island of Timor; but they found it was a passage between that and another island, called Anamabao; so they stood over, and ran the ship under the Timor side of the opening, anchoring in 29 fathom half a mile from the shore. Not long after they saw a sloop coming about a point of the island to north east, which they found belonged to a Dutch fort in Timor, called Concordia; in which was the governor with forty soldiers. He told the men whom the captain sent to him in the boat, that he was surprised at their coming that way; neither did he seem willing they should come near the fort for water. He also said the natives would kill them if they went ashore, and that he took them for pirates. Captain Dampier was not in the least discouraged at this news; but the next morning he weighed, and stood towards the fort. On the 23<sup>d</sup> he sent his clerk ashore in his own pinnace to the governor, to satisfy him they were Englishmen, and in the king's ship, and that the captain desired to speak with him. After some deliberation, the governor consented that he should come ashore, and sent his lieutenant, with three merchants, and about 100 natives, to receive him; the clerk acquainted him that we wanted water, the governor said we should have some, if we would send our empty casks in a boat, and anchor before the fort, while he ordered some slaves to fill them; but that none of our men should come ashore. In the afternoon the captain ordered the boat to be sent, as he had directed, with an officer, and a present of some English beer, which the governor refused to accept, but sent off about a ton of water.

October 6, they sailed from this place, and came to a Portuguese settlement on the 12<sup>th</sup>, where they were kindly entertained. Afterwards they stood round again for the fort of Concordia, from whence the governor sent

sent a civil message to captain Dampier, and invited him ashore to dinner. He accordingly went, and there found great plenty of very good victuals well dressed, and served up in silver and China dishes and plates, on a white linen table cloth.

The island of Timor is seventy leagues long, and sixteen broad. It has no navigable river, nor any harbours, but a pretty even shore with sandy bays, and low land for four miles up the country. At the south west end of Timor lies Anamabao, about ten leagues long, and four broad. The Dutch fort called Concordia, is situated on a solid rock, close by the sea; on the east side of it, is a small river of fresh water, over which, near the entrance of the fort, is a boarded bridge, and within the walls is a neat little chapel. The natives are of a middle stature, strait-bodied, small limbed, long visaged, hair lank and black, and their skin tawny. Their houses are mean, and they wear only a cloth about their middle, tho' some have frontlets of mother of pearl, or thin pieces of gold or silver, made of an oval form about the bigness of a crown piece, curiously notched round the edges, five of which placed one by another, a little above the eyebrows, making a sufficient guard and ornament. These are so thin, and so artificially placed upon their foreheads, that they seem riveted thereon; and indeed the pearl oyster-shells make a more splendid shew than the gold or silver. They take as many wives as they can maintain, and as for religion, they have none. The country, take it altogether, is rich and fruitful. They have plenty of fruit-trees, and abundance of timber. The woods swarm with bees, which make vast quantities of Honey and wax. In their plantations they have Indian corn, and rice. They have wild and tame beasts innumerable, and fowls in great plenty. The mountains and brooks afford a good deal of gold, they have also much copper. The sea is well stocked with fish, among which the oystercrackers are most remarkable. They feed on shell fish, having two thick hard bones in their throat, with which they break to pieces

such shell fish as they feed on. As for shell fish they have oysters of three sorts; some of which are so large, that four of them will serve a meal, they being very fat and sweet. The cockles are as big as a man's head, and very good: besides these, they have crayfish, shrimps, &c. They sailed from Timor December 12.

January 14, 1700, they saw smoke from some islands to the west of them, and about seven in the afternoon came to an anchor in 35 fathom water, two leagues from a pretty large island. In the morning they weighed, and ran within a mile of the shore. The next day, in the evening, several canoes came on board with roots and fruits, which they bought. This island has no name in our draughts, but the natives call it Pulo Sabuda, and it is about 3 leagues long, and 2 miles wide, of a good height, and may be seen 12 leagues. This island affords good fruits, and some land fowl; there are pigeons also, and large sky-coloured birds unknown to us. The inhabitants of this island differ but little from the Mindanayans. They are very poor, wear no cloths, but have a clout about their middle. They continued here till the 20th, having laid in store of such roots and fruits as the island afforded. February 4, they found themselves off the north west Cape of New Guiney, which is by the Dutch called Cape Malo. The same evening they anchored near a very pleasant island, 2 leagues in length, the country high and exceedingly well covered with wood. On this island Capt. Dampier went ashore the next morning, drank his majesty's health, and called it king William's island. On the 14th they found themselves 6 leagues from the continent of New Guiney, which appeared very high, and saw two headlands, about twenty leagues distant from each other, lying east and west, the last of which is called the Cape of Good Hope. Here the variation of the compass was 4 deg. to the east. On the 15th they saw an uninhabited island, to which they gave the name of Providence, which lies at no great distance from another small island mentioned in the Dutch charts by the name of William Schovten's island.

On

On the 16th they crossed the line, and found the variation 6 deg. 26 min. to the east, and in a few days it increased to 9 deg. The 25th they saw an island to the south about 15 leagues distant, supposing it to be that which the Dutch call Wishart's Island, but finding it another place, captain Dampier gave it the name of Matthias, being that saint's day when they came up with it. This island is pretty low, and covered with wood; the trees are green, large and tall, as thick as they can stand one by another; the length of it is about three leagues; at the S. W. point is another small woody island, a mile round, and about a mile distant near a riff of rocks, which he called Squally island, on account of the tempestuous weather. In order to rid themselves of the dangers they continually experienced in steering among these islands, they now resolved to bear away for the continent of New Guiney, which to them appeared high and mountainous; tho' adorned with flourishing trees. The many large plantations on the sides of the hills, and pieces of cleared land, convinced them of its being well inhabited. They were very desirous of entering into commerce with these people, who lay round them in their proes, but they would not come near enough to receive any thing from them: therefore, they first threw out a knife fastened to a piece of board, and a glass bottle corked, with some beads in it, which they took up, and seemed well pleased. The next day they sailed out of this bay, and got close to a great island, where they saw men in a bay, out of which came three canoes labouring hard to overtake them, but could not. However, about eight at night there came a canoe close by, and seeing no more, they suffered her to come aboard. She had in her three men who brought off five cocoa nuts, for which they gave each of them a knife and a string of beads, to encourage them to come off again in the morning.

March 3, being about 5 leagues to leeward of the great island, they saw the main land a-head. The next day they had a pleasant gale, which brought them under a high island, full of plantations on the sides of the

moun-

mountains, and on the shores of its bays. This isle lies in 3 deg. 25 min. south latitude, and on the S. E. part of it are three or four more small woody islands. On the north there is another higher and somewhat larger than the great island above mentioned, which, in the Dutch draughts is called Anthony Cave's Island. As soon as they drew near Cave's Island, some canoes came about them, and made signs for them to come ashore. They endeavoured to anchor, but found no ground within a mile of the shore. The current now driving to the low island, they were followed by a canoe from Cave's island; and each of the men in it had a knife, a looking-glass, and a string of beads. They then intimated that more cocoa nuts would be very acceptable, which instantly produced three from their boat. They next shewed them nutmegs, and the Indians, by signs, let them know that such grew on that island. They shewed them gold dust also, which these strangers knew, and cried out, *Manneel! Manneel!* pointing to the land. Soon after they were gone, two more canoes came from the low island to invite them thither. The people were black, well shaped, lusty and tall, with frizzled hair; made the same signs of friendship, and seemed to speak the same language as the other. They soon after saw another island, called in the Dutch maps St. John's island; and from hence a headland, near which they saw neither smoke nor plantations; and as no Dutch charts give any account of this coast for ten leagues, they called it Cape St. George; and the bay formed by the mountain St. George's bay. The next morning they saw a burning mountain up in the country. The day after they passed by the S. W. Cape of this bay, and coming abreast of it, captain Dampier called his officers, and named it Orford bay, in honour of his patron Edward Russel earl of Orford.

March 14, they saw a point which ran pretty far out into the sea, and a bay within, where they were in hopes of fresh water, and other provisions. Here they got seven or eight tons of water this day, and the next filled

filled all their casks. The 18th some men went ashore to cut wood, and returned with two boats full the same day. Soon after the captain sent more men with some officers ashore, to search for goats and hogs; of the latter they shot and brought away nine, in about an hour's time, desiring to make another trip before night; to which the captain consented, and they returned, towards the close of the evening, with eight more, and a little pig alive. The next morning both the boats went again ashore for more provisions; but the natives had in the night carried every thing of that kind away, and the men found nothing but nets and images, which two of them brought off in a canoe. In the afternoon the captain sent the canoe to the place from whence they brought her, and in her two axes, two hatchets, six knives, six looking-glasses, a large bunch of beads, and four glass bottles. They drew the canoe ashore, and placing the things to the best advantage in her, came off in the pinnace. Being now well stocked with wood and water, and good store of hogs, they resolved to sail the next morning. This place they named Port Mountague, in honour of the captain's noble patron. They sailed from hence the 22d of March; and, on the 24th, about ten o'clock in the evening, at N. W. by W. there appeared a large pillar of fire, shooting gradually for four minutes, sometimes scarce visible, then rising again, and blazing as before. They concluded it was some volcano, and steered for it accordingly. The 25th they came within 3 leagues of the island, wherein was this burning mountain, about two leagues from the continent, and there was a good channel to pass between them; but they kept nearer the main than the island, which vomited out fire and smoke all night, and at each explosion, they heard a dreadful noise, like thunder, which was repeated every half minute. This volcano lies in 5 deg. 33 min. south latitude. The east part of New Guiney lies four miles to the west of this tract of land, and tho' in most charts they are laid down contiguous, they found a large passage between them, calling the N. E. promontory of New Guiney king

king William's Cape; and when they had perfectly discovered the island, they called it Nova Britannia. It lies in 6 deg. 30 min. south latitude. Here also they discovered another island, about 12 leagues in length, which they called Sir George Rooke's island; and soon after another, which they called Crown Island; to the N. W. of this they saw one still larger, and called it Sir Robert Rich's Isle.

April 26 they saw the island of Ceram, then made the island of Bouro, where they met with a Chinese vessel. On the 14th, they discovered the island Misacomby, on the west of which lies Pintare, and imagining there might be a passage between this last island and Laubana they lay by till morning. About ten o'clock they saw the opening, and by the help of a good tide got thro' before night, continuing their course for Timor, and got sight of it on the 18th of May. June 23, they saw the Streights of Sunda, and towards the latter end of the same month arrived safe at Batavia; where they staid above three months, and repaired the ship. October 17, they left Batavia, and arrived at the Cape of Good Hope December 30.

January 11, 1701, they departed from the Cape, and about the end of the month saw abundance of weeds, or blubber swim by them, but could not tell which. It was all of the same shape and colour, and seemed to be about the breadth of a man's hand, spread round with branches, with a little knob in the middle, about the bigness of the end of a man's thumb. They were of a dusky colour, and as they swam in the water looked like jelly. February 2, they anchored in the road of St. Helena. On the 21st, they made the isle of Ascension, and anchored the next morning at the north point of a bay, at the distance of two miles, to stop a leak, which the ship had sprung; but finding it impracticable, with the help of a good breeze, they ran into seven fathom water, and carrying a small anchor ashore, they warped her into three fathom and a half; where having fastened her, they made a raft to carry the chests, bedding, &c. off, and before eight at night got  
most



most of them ashore. Next morning the captain ordered the sails to be unbent, to make tents, and with the other officers went himself ashore. They had sent before a puncheon, and a 36 gallon cask of water, with a bag of rice ashore, for their common use; but great part of it was stolen; and many of captain Dampier's books and papers were taken away and lost. On the 26th, to their great comfort, they found a spring of fresh water, about eight miles from their tents, behind a very high mountain, over which they were obliged to pass. Now, having very good turtle by their tents, and good water for fetching, they were by God's providence, put into a condition of subsisting for some time. Next day the captain, with his officers, went to see the watering-place, and were forced to lie by the way all night. In the morning early they got thither, and found a very fine spring, issuing out of the side of a mountain; but observed that it was very unwholesome living by it, on account of the continual fogs, that hovered over the high mountain, which make it so excessive cold. However, they found near this place, a convenient shelter for the men in any weather; this was a hollow rock, and many of them repaired thither. About two miles S. W. from the spring, they found four shrub-trees; on one of these, was cut an anchor and cable, with the date of the year, viz 1642. The goats, land-crabs, men of war birds and boobies, which are here in great plenty, afforded them good food, and the air proved exceeding wholesome. April 3, four sail of ships appeared, making towards the island. They proved to be his majesty's ships the *Anglesea*, *Hastings*, and *Lizard*; with the *Canterbury East Indiaman*. The captain, and 45 of his crew, embarked on board the *Anglesea*: The rest were distributed betwixt the other two men of war.

After this happy deliverance, they sailed hence March 8, and arrived at Barbadoes on the 8th of May following. Captain Dampier, in order to vindicate his character, which he well knew would be impeached by the unlucky accident which had befallen him, took the

first opportunity of returning to England, and embarked on board the Canterbury. In this passage he met with nothing material. — The only remark we shall make on this voyage, is, that tho' the gentleman was unfortunate, yet, may his discoveries be of use to the world; and those who are proper judges of such performances, must allow, that herein many things are delivered, new in themselves, capable of offording great instruction to such as meditate future discoveries, and which, in other respects, may be of great utility to the present age, and to posterity. Again, this voyage is not only a proper supplement to the former, but also a sufficient voucher for the truth of many passages therein inserted, since captain Dampier, verified to the officers, and company, in this enterprize, the discoveries which he intended, and insisted to have made when last at sea, and this testimony of his veracity ought to give a sanction to what still rests upon his single authority.

---

## C H' A P. XVII.

*Captain William Funnell's voyage round the globe, as mate to captain William Dampier.*

**T**HIS expedition was undertaken in the beginning of the reign of queen Anne, when the Spaniards on a sudden, from being our favourite allies, became our enemies, on their creating the duke of Anjou, grandson to Lewis XIV. their king. This occasioned our merchants to imagine, that a very beneficial voyage might be made in those parts, where the Bucaniers had performed such vast exploits with small ships, very ill provided, and entered chearfully on the charges necessary for that undertaking. For this purpose they first fitted out two ships of 26 guns, and 120 men each, to cruise in the South Seas. One of these was called the St. George, captain Dampier commander, in which was Mr. William Funnell; the other was named the Fame,

Fame, John Pulling captain. They both had commissions from his royal highness prince George of Denmark, then lord high admiral, to proceed against the French and Spaniards, on the terms of no purchase no pay: but a difference arising in the Downs between the two captains; Pulling went away with the Fame, among the Canary islands, and they never set eyes of him afterwards. However, before they left Ireland another ship was sent after them, called the Cinque-Ports Galley, of 90 tons, and 63 men, Charles Pickering commander. To the forementioned desertion the misfortunes which attended the voyage were intirely owing. How careful therefore ought all societies of merchants to be, that enter upon such enterprizes, never to join discordant tempers! and it should, in all these cases, be laid down as a fundamental maxim, that the general good is always to be pursued, and the advantage of individuals will necessarily follow.

The principal design of this undertaking, according to Mr. Funnell, was, to go to the river Plata, quite down to Buenos Ayres, where, as Mr. Dampier asserted, two or three Spanish galleons might be easily taken; and if they there got 600,000*l.* to return; but if they happened to miscarry, to cruise upon the coast of Peru, for the Baldivia ships, which bring gold to Lima; and if that project failed, to go where captain Dampier thought proper: tho', after this, by orders, they were to go upon the coast of Mexico, to look for the Manilla ship, which was reported to be worth fourteen millions of pieces of eight. The reason they did not proceed to Buenos Ayres, was, because on their arrival at Madeira, which island they reached September 25, they were informed these galleons had arrived at Teneriff before; so they did not anchor here, but stood off-and-on, for the boats which were sent ashore to bring necessaries aboard. This island lies in 32 deg. 20 min. north latitude, and from London 18 deg. 5 min. west longitude, by their observation. They departed September 28, and, on the 30th, saw Palma and Faro, two of the westernmost islands of the Canaries;

R

being

being in the whole seven, and so called from Canaria, the chief; then made the best of their way for the Cape de Verde islands. May 6, they had sight of the island of Mayo, lying in 15 deg. 10 min. north latitude, but could not get their boats ashore for salt. October 7, they stood away for St. Jago, and came to an anchor, at noon, in Prior bay. Tho' this is esteemed the most plentiful of all the Cape de Verde islands, and there is good water, yet it is very troublesome fetching, and wood is dear.

The natives were formerly Portuguese, transported for theft, and other infamous crimes; but now are chiefly black, by reason of their converse with the women slaves, which are Guiney negroes. But tho' their complexion is altered, they retain their vices, thieving being their sole study. They will take your hat from your head at noon day, in the midst of company; and if you permit them to take off your goods, before you have theirs in exchange, they are certainly lost. Here the captain and first lieutenant having some words, the latter was turned ashore, with his chest, cloaths, and servant, sorely against his will.

November 2, they passed the equator, and saw abundance of flying fish. On the 8th they found the variation 5 deg. 20 min. easterly, and the latitude 10 degrees 20 min. south from the isle of St. Jago. The south winds blow here in gusts; 'tis safest therefore, to lay the best anchor to the south, and all are little enough sometimes. The islands produce nothing but wood; but have a vast many of that kind of sea fowl, which the sailors call boobies, upon them. The booby is much about the size of a duck, of which some are white, others grey; they have a web foot, and feed upon flying fish. If they are not well salted before you eat them, they are apt to cause sickness. When they are tired with flying, if you hold out your hand they will come and sit upon it, from whence, possibly, they have their name. November 24, they anchored at the Isle le Grand which is 9 leagues round, in 23 deg. 30 min. south latitude. Here are several springs

springs of good water. The soil is black; and in it are jackals, lions, tygers, &c. which make a hideous noise in the night; there are also several Indian fruits; rum and sugar, but very dear, on account of supplying the town of St. Paul's with them; near which, it is said, is a gold mine, the richest hitherto known. Here our new first lieutenant, with eight men, left the ship, on having some words with the captain. Here also Mr. Charles Pickering, commander of the Cinque-Ports, died; and his lieutenant, Mr. Thomas Stradling succeeded him. Here are various sorts of fish, particularly the silver-fish, which is about twenty inches long, and has five small fins on the hinder part of his head, and a large one, reaching from them to the tail; one on each side of the gills, and another reaching from the bottom of his belly to the tail, in form of a half-moon. December 29, as they sailed by the islands of Sebalde de Weert, a very remarkable bird, about the bigness of a duck, came off towards them: it is of a fine white colour, the bill yellow, above and below which are long grey hairs, like whiskers, and instead of feathers, at the bottom of the eye-lids, he has short, stiff, black hairs,

January 4, 1704, they steered for the South Seas; and on the 4th of February saw the isle of Moucha. On the 5th, they found the variation to be 7 deg. 20 min. east. The 7th, they had sight of the island Juan Fernandez, and anchored there on the 10th, the variation being 6 deg. 5 min. east. Here they wooded, watered, heeled, and refitted their ships, which cost them some time. February 29, they saw a sail, slipped their cables, and made the best of their way after her; and about eleven at night came up close to her, but did not engage till next morning at sun rise, which was March 1. They fought her very hard for seven hours, when a fresh gale springing up, she sheered off. She proved a French ship of 400 tons, and 30 guns, well manned. The Cinque-ports fired ten or twelve guns, then fell a-stern, and never came up again during the engagement. Considering it would be dangerous to let

her go, they were desirous to have another trial, being sure she would discover them to the Spaniards: but captain Dampier was against it: so they agreed to return to Juan Fernandez to get their anchor and long boats, several tons of water, and a ton of oil, which they had left there, with five of captain Stradling's men and a great many stores. However, after some consultation, the two captain's thought it not convenient to go in; but to make the best of their way for the coast of Peru. March 11, they fell in with it, and on the 14th passed the port of Copiapo, near which are four or five rocks, and within land it is inhabited by Indians, who make good wine; here also are said to be good meat, corn, and other necessaries. In this port they load wine, gold, and other goods for Coquimbo. They would willingly have gone ashore, but could not for want of the boats which they left at Juan Fernandez.

Having sailed by the three famous ports of Arica, Ylo, and Arequipa, March 22, they found themselves off the port of Lima, where they descried two sail of ships coming into that port. They presently gave chase, and one of them proved to be the same they fought with off the island Juan Fernandez. Having had nine men killed, and several wounded in the last dispute with her, the men were very eager to revenge themselves upon her for the loss of their companions, and to prevent her getting into Lima to give the Spaniards intelligence: but captain Dampier did not think it adviseable; which proceeding gave great offence to most of his crew; and bad consequences would certainly have followed, if they had not in a few days after taken two very considerable prizes; one of 150, the other of 200 tons, out of which they took what they thought necessary, and then dismissed them. On the 11th, they took, as if she had been sent on purpose for their service, a bark of 50 tons, laden with plank and cordage, in sight of the island Gallo, towards which they steered. This island lies in 2 deg. 45 min. west latitude, is two leagues in length, one broad, and five from the main land. When you are at the south, it  
ap-

appears like three hammocks, which look like three islands at a distance, but from the N. W. it looks much like a ship under sail. Here they anchored, about two cables length from the shore, at the N. W. part. In this island are some wild monkeys, abundance of lizards, and a large kind, called the lion-lizard; one of which they measured, that was from the head to the end of the tail 3 feet 11 inches, and about as thick as a man's arm. He has a comb on the head, like a helmet or head piece, to defend it. When he is attacked, he sets this comb an end. He has very large eyes, a large mouth, and many sharp, small teeth, full of black, yellow, and blue spots. After staying here five days, just as they were about to get up their anchors, they saw a ship standing in for the island, which, when she drew near, they went out and took. She was about 50 tons, and commanded by a Mestizo. On board her was a Guernsey man, whom the Spaniards took cutting logwood at Campeachy. When they sailed from Gallo, they resolved to attack the town of Santa Maria immediately; but the enemy, having early intelligence, laid ambuscades, and killed abundance of their men; this made them sick of their attempts ashore, so they all came on board; where new difficulties arose for the want of provisions, and five green plantains boiled, were all that could be spared for six men. In this distress, they saw a sail about 12 o'clock at night, which came to anchor pretty near them. They soon got up their anchor and took her. She, to their great comfort, proved a ship of 250 tons, deeply laden with flour, sugar, brandy, wine, and 30 tons of marmalade of quinces, a considerable quantity of salt, linen and woollen cloth, &c. Our author was put on board the prize on behalf of captain Dampier, and the master of the Cinque-ports, on behalf of captain Stradling. They carried the prize into the bay of Panama, and on the 14th anchored under the island of Tobago. Here the two captains disagreed, and parted.

June 7, captain Dampier's crew saw a sail, gave chase, and took her; she was of 100 tons, came from

Truxillo, and was bound to Panama, laden with flour, sugar, and brandy, with some bales of wrought silks. They took a packet out of her, from the captain of the French ship, with whom we engaged off the island of Juan Fernandez; directed to the governor of Panama, in which was the account following. "I fought two English privateers near the island Juan Fernandez; the smallest fired but eight guns, and then fell astern, as he believed, for want of wind, but the large one, meaning captain Dampier, fought me broadside and broadside for six hours or more, and killed me a great many men; on coming to Lima I sent 36 of my men ashore, each of whom, had lost either a leg, arm, or an eye, and it was a great chance they did not take me, for at parting we had given ourselves up for lost, having not men enow left to defend ourselves." By other letters, they found that these two Frenchmen had at sea met with a boat, in which were an Englishman and a dog, this boat belonged to captain Stradling, and got loose from him, as he chased the French ship; they were hereby also further informed, that the French ships had taken up the anchor, cables, longboat, and all captain Stradling's stores, with his five men, and a negroe boy that were left there. They likewise had advice, that the Spaniards had fitted out two men of war, one of 36 brass guns 24 pounders, the other of 36 and the same size, to take them. These ships carried 250 seamen, and 150 soldiers, and were cruising for them about the point of St. Helena, and between the bay of Guaiquil and cape Blanco: so they were forced to make off with their prize, and anchor in Sardinas bay.

This bay, on the sea side, hath 14 or 15 broken pieces of ground of a whitish colour; at the north of them is the bay, wherein they careened their ships, romaged the prize, and watered at a fresh water river, the water of which was as white as milk, and tasted very strong of musk; caused by the number of Alligators that swim in it. They saw many of 'em, and shot several; one in particular measured 30 feet long, and

was



was as big about as a bullock. This creature is scaled from head to tail, has a set of large sharp teeth, with long claws on his feet, and lives by land as well as water. When they lie on land, they look like a great tree fallen down, run a great pace, and are so strong, as to take a horse or cow, carry it to the water, and there devour it. The Indians are not much afraid of them, either on land, or in water. On land, they run in a circle, and the unweildy monster, cannot turn his body so quick. They go likewise into the water to seek them, with a piece of iron like a harpoon at both ends, and another piece of iron a-cross. They hold this in the middle, and when the alligators put their heads out of the water to bite, they hold out to them this piece of iron, which fastens in their mouth, and holds it open like a gag. They are of the oviparous kind, and the females lay 100 eggs at a time, about the bigness of a goose's. June 21, they saw a sail, and next day came up with her, She proved the Spanish man of war of 32 guns, which they fought from 12 till night; when, contrary to their expectations, she made off. They now made for Tacames, designing to leave the coast of Peru; having weathered point Gallera, they anchored in that bay, and sent a boat on shore, which brought word they had met with an Indian village, containing 50 houses; but the inhabitants were fled, and had left nothing behind them. About seven leagues to the north, is the bay of St. Mattheo, about which the land lies very high; and two leagues up the river, are several villages inhabited by Indians, who, when the Spaniards come hither, furnish them with cocoas, plantains, bananas, and other fruits, For the reader's information, it may not be improper to give a description of the two latter in this place, the cocoas having been before described. The plantain-tree is about 14 feet high, and four round, the leaves about nine inches long, and two broad; the fruit grows at the bottom of the leaf, upon a great stalk in a cod, 8 inches long, of a fine yellow colour, often speckled with red. This being taken off, the inside is white; but

but the plantain itself is yellow as butter, and soft as a ripe pear; there grow fifty or sixty sometimes on a stalk, and five or six stalks upon a tree. They are very good food, and there are plenty of them both in the East and West Indies. The banana tree is much the same, only the fruit is not so long as the plantain, they being about eight, and the banana not above six inches long; the fruit is extraordinary sweet and good. July 31, they left the bay of Tacames, and carried with them a little prize, which they called the dragon, intending not to touch any where till they came to the gulph of Nicoya. August 16, they anchored near some islands, called by the Spaniards the Middle Islands. Here captain Dampier and the carpenter went ashore in our little prize, which we called the Dragon, up the river Changel, and found two canoes haled on land, brought them away and caught eight turtles, which they fed upon during the time they were absent; and brought word they had found out a secure place at the island of St. Lucas to careen our ship. In the mean time the chief mate was sent in the Dragon, with 25 armed men, on a cruize; when, after six days, he returned with a Spanish bark of about 40 tons, in which were a few jars of brandy, some wine, and sugar. They took out of her powder, shot, and other ammunition, with two quarter-deck guns. September 2, Mr. Clipperton, our chief mate, and captain Dampier, quarrelled, the former hereupon drew away 21 of his men, made himself master of the bark, in which was lodged all their ammunition, with the best part of their provisions while the ship was repairing, then got up his anchor, and went without the islands, sending word, he would put ashore the shot, powder, and other ammunition, in an Indian house, which he accordingly did, and they sent the canoes to fetch it on board.

These islands are very pleasant and fruitful, abounding with fish, amphibious creatures, and various kinds of birds; of the latter the most remarkable are the mac-caw, whose feathers are of all the colours in the rainbow; the carrion crow, as the people call it, but for

for what reason, no one knows, being as big as a small turkey, and in all respects like one; the pelican, almost as big as a swan, its colour whitish, only the tips of the wings are brown, the bill twenty inches long, with a large crop joining to the lower part of it, hanging down to the throat, like a bag or satchel; of a largeness almost beyond credit; into which she receives her prey of shell-fish, there retains them till digested, then vomits them up, and picks out the meat. As for making a hole in their breast to feed their young with their blood, says our author, I don't believe it, having never saw any such thing, tho' I have seen thousands both old and young, and have eaten many of them: they taste fishy, have web feet like ducks, but commonly roost on rocks, or trees, and always sit with their bills to the winds, resting them upon their crop. The guana is an amphibious animal, about three feet long, very ugly, having great sharp black scales from the fore part of the head to the tail; a set of sharp teeth, with four large claws on each foot: they commonly breed in the roots of old trees, near the water: when they are stewed with a little spice, they make good pottage, their flesh looks white, and eats well; but if not boiled very much, is dangerous; making people sick, and often throwing them into a fever. Here also is the pearl oyster, about the bigness of our common oyster, but broader. The pearl lies in the thickest part: the Spaniards make several voyages to Nicoya, and to California for them.

They sailed from the Middle island September 23, and on the 7th of October were in 13 deg. 7 min. north latitude, where they saw the volcano of Guatemala, which sometimes throws out stones as big as a house, with such eruptions of fire, that at the distance of two leagues, in a dark night, they could see to read a letter. On the 9th, they took a bark of 80 tons, commanded by captain Christian Martin, a Spaniard, born at the Canaries, but educated in London. He was servant to captain Eaton, and spoke good English. At this time their crew consisted of sixty-four men and boys,  
all

all well, and in high spirits. On the 4th of December they came into the bay of Nativity, where they took a new ship of 60 tons, laden with ammunition and military stores for the Acapulco ship, for which the whole crew longed for as earnestly, as if it was only to see her, and take her. December 6, being off the vulcano of Colima, they discovered a sail, and soon came up with her, gave her a great many broad-sides, she not being prepared for them. While they were in this hurry of making ready to fight, captain Martin advised to lay her on board, alledging, if they gave her time to get out her guns, she would certainly get the better, and so it happened; for while they were quarrelling about the matter, the enemy got out their lower tier of guns, and proved too hard for us, insomuch as being much damaged, a signal was made to stand off. On this disappointment the men grew discontented, and insisted upon going home; so they went in search of a proper place to water the ship and bark, in order to sail for the East Indies. January 5, they met with such a number of albigores, that in an hour they caught sixty, from 70 to 90 lb. weight. The albicore is about five feet long, has eleven fins on his back, a large one near the gills, and twelve under his belly. It is a very fleshy fish, having no bones but the back bone, and very delicious eating. Hereupon they sailed to the gulph of Amapalla to water, where they came to an anchor the 26th. Here a new revolution happened, thirty seven of the men, with our author, went aboard the bark; and thirty agreed to stay with captain Dampier. On the 26th, all the provisions that were left were equally divided, and to the bark were assigned four pieces of cannon, with a proper proportion of arms and ammunition. The next care was water, with this view they landed on the island of Conchagua, where they found a large plantain walk, cut down a sufficient quantity, and returned on board the next day. While captain Funnell, with his crew, were watering the bark, captain Dampier was busied in refitting his ship, when two more of his men went over to captain Funnell; so that Dampier had

had only 28 men and boys, most of them land men. February 1, the bark left Amapalla, and the *St. George* at anchor there; while our author, in his bark of 70 tons, and but two masts, without boat, carpenter, or doctor, proceeded to India; and surely a bolder design, all circumstances considered, was never attempted by such a handful of men, which nothing but the desire of seeing their own country again could have supported them under. February 2, they had fine weather, and caught abundance of yellow-tails, which came swimming about the vessel. This fish is about four feet long, has 66 fins, a large head, a great eye, and a yellow tail, half-mooned, from which they have their name. From the 3d to the last of February they lived intirely upon plantains. The beginning of April, they were forced to have recourse to flour, each man having only half a pound weighed out for a day's subsistence, which was white and fine a few days before, but now full of maggots, spiders, and other vermin. Some little occasional assistances they met with in this tedious course, such as dolphins, boobies, noddies, &c. In this miserable condition, they passed ten weeks. April 11, in the morning, they saw the island of Magon, and when they came within a mile of it, several fishing-boats came to them with figs, eggs, plantains, potatoes, &c. the men in the boats were large-limbed, tall, and of a swarthy complexion, stark naked, with long black hair reaching to the middle. This island lies in 13 deg. north latitude. The boats these fishermen came on board in, are forty feet in length, eighteen inches broad aloft, and three below; they are very convenient, and so ingenious, we can build nothing like them. May 5, about ten in the morning, they were all sensible of an odoriferous smell; upon this they began to search their charts, imagining they were near land, but found none laid down in these parts. The same day they caught two bonitos, which made a good meal for all the ship's company. They are about three feet long, and two round the body. About noon, they saw three low islands, affording a beautiful prospect at sea.

sea. The eastermost lay in 42 min. north latitude. The 7th, about day-break, they found themselves upon a great ledge of rocks near the northermost island, which, on account of their escape, they called the Island of Deceit. They stood in for the most westerly island, which is the biggest of the three, and, as they drew nearer to it, forty or fifty of their flying proes came off with 450 men, about ten in each, and they discerned numbers of people on shore. They called to the flying proes to come near them, but they refused. At length, by beckoning several times, one of them ventured within a ship's length. In her were ten men, and in the midst an old man, of a grave but pleasant aspect, who on his head had a four-corner'd cap without a crown. As to the rest, they were quite naked. On their first coming they sung a song, which lasted an hour; they could not understand the words, but thought the tune very pretty. When this song was over, they came to the side of the vessel and sung another. Then they put themselves in a praying posture, and made several bows and cringes, according to the custom of their country. Then one of the men in the boat having a fore leg, held it up, and by the signs he made, they understood he would have them cure it. They probably having seen no white men before, seemed to imagine the English were not mortals. Now they poured some water into a glass, and pointing to their mouths, shewed they wanted victuals and drink, at which they shook their heads by way of denial. But seeing us still coming nearer the island, one of them, says our author, blowed a horn, at the noise of which, all the other boats came round the ship; we believing they would board us, fired a gun over their heads, at which they seemed amazed, and drew back, threatening us at a distance. So finding there was no good to be done here, they resolved to leave the place, and called this the Island of Disappointment.

May 8, in the morning, they saw the coast of New Guiney, distant about eighteen leagues, and here they had leisure to consider this part of that country with  
attention

attention. Soon after they saw part of the great island of Gilolo, designing to pass between that and the coast of Guiney, for the East Indies. On the 12th, about eight in the morning, they shot thro' two headlands, distant from each other about two miles, and got thro' about noon. This passage was about seven leagues long, and three miles broad. This they called St. John's Streight, after the name of their ship, and believed they were the first Europeans that ever passed it. At this time an Indian proe came aboard them, in which was a freeman of Amboyna. They acquainted him with their distress, having nothing to eat but flour and water. He bid them go to the island of Manipa, and he would be their pilot, where they might have rice enough for money to last them to Batavia. Here they anchored about twelve the same night; when the Dutch pilot sent the governor an account of their wants. The 23d, a Dutch corporal with two soldiers came on board, telling them from the governor, that no ships but such as belonged to the Dutch East India company should have any provisions there; but that they must go to Amboyna. The island of Manipa lies in 3 deg. 25 min. south latitude: on it grows vast plenty of cloves and rice, which they send to Amboyna. It is governed by a Dutch serjeant, three corporals, with a master gunner, and has a small fort of six guns to the south west. The inhabitants are fishermen, and catch abundance of fish, not only for their own use, but to supply Amboyna.

After this unexpected disappointment, they made a division of all their provisions, which amounted to 6 lb. 3 quarters of flour, and five pounds of bran per man; and on the 28th at noon, they came just off the harbour of Amboyna, which they thought a great happiness; tho' they had cause afterwards to look upon it as their greatest misfortune. So vain are the hopes of man! so apt are we to covet what tends to our own destruction! Here they met with two ships laden with cloves for Batavia. The captain of one of them came aboard, and took the journal of their voyage, promising to re-  
S turn

turn it when they came to Batavia. That night they stood into the harbour; and, the next morning, two Dutch orambies rowed by forty men, with the fiscal, secretary, and several Dutch gentlemen, came on board, took possession of their bark, nailed up their chests, and on the 31st in the evening they were all sent ashore, and confined in two rooms near the Stadthouse, and their goods and vessel were soon after sold at a public sale. They were here obliged to buy their victuals of the keeper, who made them pay a Spanish dollar, worth five shillings and a penny, for as much meat, as, if they had their liberty, might have been bought for five pence. The island of Amboyna, so infamous for the cruelties formerly committed there by the Dutch upon the English, is from north west to south west twelve leagues. It is high and mountainous; but the valleys are fertile, the soil is black, and the surface affords salt petre; the middle of it lies in 3 deg. 4 min. south. The inhabitants are Malayans of a middle size, and tawny. The women are brighter, with black hair that reaches down to the calves of their legs; their faces are round, and their features small. They wear a linen waistcoat, which reaches below their breasts, and about their middle a piece of cloth four yards wide, and a yard deep; this they roll about them, and it serves for a petticoat. None of these natives are allowed to wear a hat except their king. The Dutch have here a strong castle, mounted with six guns, besides other fortifications about the island. Near the castle is a town, of about 100 Dutch houses, built of brick and stone, but low. While they were here was an earthquake, which lasted two days, by which several houses and families were swallowed up. The Malayan women are reported to be great whores, of which they are not ashamed. They are often married at nine years old, and have children at ten and eleven. The island is governed by a council, consisting of five persons, namely the governor, the chief merchant, the Malayan king, and the fiscal, who is in the nature of a judge. Those who live by the sea side are under the Dutch government, but



but those who live in the country, called the Hill Malayans, are Mahometans, always at war with the Dutch, and never give any quarter. When they take a Dutchman prisoner, they keep him, and put him into a jail for five days, without victuals or drink, and then bringing him out, first rip up his belly with a knife, and take out his heart, at which there is great rejoicing, then cut off his head, and embalm it with spice to keep, leaving his body to be devoured by birds and beasts of prey. To retaliate this usage, the Dutch, when they take any of the Malayans, load them with many irons, and lay them in a dungeon, where having lain some time, they cut off their ears and noses, and then send them to prison again for a further time; at last, bring them out and rack them to death. If they are found guilty of theft, they often cut off their noses and ears, then put an iron chain about their legs, and make them slaves for life. Of these poor wretches, while they staid, there were near 500 employed in hewing stone, and sawing timber, carrying burdens, or other labour. The chief products of this island are cloves, a few nutmegs, ginger, rattans, and canes. The clove tree has but a slender body, but is from twelve to thirty and forty feet high. The branches are small, the leaves about five inches long, and two broad, which, if you rub between your fingers, smell strong, but otherwise have no smell at all. The cloves grow at the tip of the branches, ten or twelve in a cluster, being white first, then green, and when ripe of a dark copper colour. To gather them, they spread sheets under the tree at some distance, then shake it, and those which are ripe fall down; the rest are left upon the tree a week longer; this method is repeated four or five times, till the trees are cleared. These trees bear sixty or seventy pounds twice in a year, viz. in October, and February. Those which are ripe in October, are called the winter cloves, and not so good as the other; these they usually preserve, and put them into small jars, holding about a quart, to be transported to many parts of the world: those that are ripe in February they call the summer cloves, which are

by much the strongest. Here are a few nutmeg trees, which are much like the peach ; but they grow chiefly at the island of Banda ; from whence two or three ship-loads are exported every year. It is also reported, that in this island there are some gold mines. One of the Malayans, says our author, shewed me some of the ore, which he told me was taken out of them, but this is a great secret, and if the Dutch should know it, he said, I shall be severely punished ; for they keep it, as much as they can, from the knowledge of the Europeans. Of beasts, here are beeves, hogs, wild deer, &c. Of fowls, here are various kinds, the crocadore, the cassawaris, the bird of Paradise, &c. The crocadore is of different sizes, some as large as hens, and others no bigger than pigeons ; all their feathers are alike white, excepting a bunch which lies close in a dent on the head, and is not to be seen but when they are frightened, then they set it up an end, and it spreads like a fan, being always either red or yellow. The flesh and legs of this bird are very black, and smell sweet, and when they fly about the woods, they cry crocadore, crocadore. The cassawaris is about the bigness of a Virginia turkey, and has a head like them, with a hairy beard upon his breast before. His legs are as thick as a man's wrist, with five great claws on each foot ; he has a high round back, on which are long hairs instead of feathers, and the same on the pinions of his wings. It lays an egg so large, that the shell of it will contain a pint, is pretty thick, and spotted with green and white, looking exactly like China ware ; this bird is very good eating. The birds of Paradise are about the size of pigeons, and are never found or seen alive, nor is it known from whence they come. Here they saw several of them embalmed, which are sent, as curiosities, to many distant countries. In the months of February and March, they resort to the places where the nutmegs grow, particularly to Banda, and this island, where they eat of the outward rind of the nut, after which, they fall down dead drunk, and swarms of ants gather about them, feed upon

upon them, and kill them. Of fish here are plenty ; but the most noted is the sea-porcupine, about three feet long, and three and a half round. It has a very large eye, two fins on the back, and two on each side near the gills, very full of sharp-pointed quills, from whence its name. There is no anchoring about this island, but in the common harbour, except in the Ley, which is at the west end, running up a great way, and almost dividing it in two ; at the entrance of which, to the east, is a small fortification of six guns, and close to it 20 fathom water ; about a league farther up is the harbour, under the command of their great castle, which ever since the bloody massacre of the English has been called the castle of Victoria : about two leagues farther to the north, is the place where the English had formerly a factory, and the hole into which they were thrown, after they had been inhumanly murdered by the Dutch ; we expecting the same fate. During their stay here, they were so plagued with Moskitoes, which are a kind of gnats, that they were forced to put themselves into a bag before they could get any rest. They remained here from May 31, to September 14, 1705, when three of the company's sloops, laden with cloves for Batavia, were ready to sail, and twenty five of them were put aboard. September 28, our author, with four more men, were sent in a Chinese vessel after them ; what became of the five remaining they never heard.

On the 21st of October they entered the harbour of Batavia, and as soon as they landed were sent to the rest of their companions, who were still in custody. Soon after, the major of the castle demanded an account of the losses they had sustained at Amboyna, that the governor might make them satisfaction : accordingly every private man drew out his bill, and the major carried them to the governor, who returned for answer, they should all soon be set at liberty. October 27, they were sent for to the fort, and most of their ready money was repaid, but for their goods, loss of time, and imprisonment, they could have no satisfaction ; only the

general told them, he had delivered all that the governor of Amboyna had sent him; that he knew of nothing more, and they were now at liberty to go where they pleased. In the space of seven weeks that our author remained here, he made the observations following. Batavia, says he, is the chief place the Dutch have in India, to which all their eastern products are sent by shipping. The inhabitants are of various nations, Dutch, Portuguese, Chinese, Persians, and negroes; but the natives are Malaysians. They are under the Dutch government, who have here a fine large town, with several stately houses, built after the European fashion, and 7 churches. It is well walled, and moted round, and the walls are abundantly provided with cannon. In the middle of the town, in a spacious square, stands the stadthouse, wherein all public business is transacted. The town, &c. is governed by one of the states of Holland, who has the title of General of India, and has under him 12 rads, or such as have formerly been chief governors of their several settlements in India. The town is divided by canals, over which there are bridges and booms laid across to prevent boats coming in after sun-set. Their fruits here are oranges, lemons, pomegranates, mangastans, and rumbostans. The mangastan is about the size of a golden runnet; the outer rind is like that of a pomegranate, tho' somewhat darker, but the inside is very white, and lies in cloves like garlick, of which there are 5 or 6 generally in each, very juicy, and under them a small black stone. The Bumbostan is about the size of a walnut, when the green husk is taken off; of a deep red, full of little knobs of the same colour. Within this lies the fruit, which resembles a white jelly. It is exceeding delicious, and if you eat of it voraciously, it does you no harm, provided you swallow the stone with it. The wind and weather are here very regular. In the eastern monsoon the land winds blow S. E. and the sea winds N. E. The chief produce of the place is pepper, of which they export vast quantities. All along the island of Java, from Madura to Batavia, is free from

from rocks, and has a fineousy soil, affording vast quantities of rice, with which they supply all their out-factories, as also very good plank for ship-building. September 2, they had notice, that if they desired to return to England, they must immediately repair on board the Dutch East India fleet; which they all did. On the 3d of February 1706, they arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, of which we have before given a full description. They were now to continue their voyage to Europe, and met with nothing material till the 10th of August. When two of the English ships that bore them company fell a-stern, left the fleet, and put into St. Helena, where, says captain Funnell, as I was afterwards informed, they were taken out of the road by the French.

St. Helena is about nine leagues long, but not quite so much broad, lying in 16 deg. south latitude, about 300 leagues from the continent of Africa. Next to the sea it is almost every where surrounded with rocks, there being but one place for landing. Within there are mountains, but most of them covered with wholesome herbs and plants, and the valleys produce whatever is brought from other parts and planted here, in great perfection. It would certainly be one of the most delightful spots upon the globe, if it was somewhat larger, lay nearer the continent, or was more frequented; which it would soon be, if the inhabitants had a free trade; but that the East India company at present denies them. The air is wholesom, the fresh water excellent, the fruits in the highest perfection, and the sea abounding with fish, &c. July 3, they made the islands of Fara, and on the 5th met with their convoy: on the 17th they arrived safe at Amsterdam; and on August 26, our author, with his companions, came happily to their native country.

It has been the just complaint of those who read voyages, that they are sometimes left in the dark with respect to material occurrences, when at the same time they are fully informed as to circumstances of little consequence: and, indeed we have often been surprised, that considering the frequent editions which Dampier's voyages have passed, some care was not taken to supply

ply their deficiencies, we therefore having here informed the reader of that part of these transactions which Mr. Funnell has related, shall proceed to give him satisfaction in other particulars. The reader must recollect, that on the 19th of May, 1704, captain Dampier, in the *St. George*, left captain Stradling, in the *Cinque Ports*, at King's Island, in the bay of Panama; from this time, he has heard nothing more concerning them; captain Stradling's force was very trifling, he therefore, well knowing that he could not support himself long in the South Seas, made the best of his way to the island of Juan Fernandez, and his ship and crew were in such a condition when they arrived there, that one of his men called Alexander Selkirk, chose rather to stay by himself on that island, than run the hazard of returning into the South Seas, by which action his great judgment was distinguished; for the *Cinque Ports* actually foundered on the coast of Babacora, and only captain Stradling, with seven men, got ashore alive, from whence they were sent prisoners to Lima, where the former was living, at the time captain Rogers came into the South Seas; but what became of him afterwards, is not known. The next person that left the famous Dampier, was his mate, Mr. John Clipperton, of whom we shall have occasion to speak much in the following Chapter.

But first, it will be requisite to shew what became of captain Dampier, after so great a part of his ship's company left him. He had now but 28 men with him, and even these he prevailed upon to stay, by representing to them, there was nothing easier than to make their fortunes; by surprising some little Spanish village, and as they were but few, their shares would be more considerable. After some consultation they resolved to attack Puna, a hamlet, consisting of 30 houses, and a small church. Accordingly they landed in the night when it was very dark, surprised the inhabitants in their beds, and took possession of the place with no loss. After plundering this town, they sailed to the island of Lobos de la Mar, and took by the way a Spanish bark well

well laden with provisions. After some consultation, they resolved to quit their own ship, and endeavour in this vessel, to continue their voyage to the East Indies. Hereupon, they left the St. George at anchor under this island, and then put in practice their former resolution, in hopes all their misfortunes would have there ended. In this, they were again mistaken; for on their putting in at one of the Dutch settlements, their bark was seized, their goods sold, and themselves turned loose into the wide world to shift as they could. This was the end of captain Dampier's unfortunate expedition, who returned naked home, with a melancholy account of his misfortunes to his owners, chiefly owing to his own odd temper, which made him so self-sufficient and imperious, that none of his officers cou'd endure him. Yet notwithstanding all his failings, the public expressed some compassion for so eminent a seaman. On his coming home, even in this distress, he was introduced to the queen, had the honour to kiss her hand, and to give her some account of the dangers he had run thro'. The merchants, however, were so sensible of his want of conduct, that they never more would trust him with a command. This, with his poverty, brought upon him by his last unlucky voyage, obliged him to make the tour of the globe once more; in quality of pilot, on board the Duke, commanded by captain Woodes Rogers.

---

## C H A P. XVIII.

*The voyage of captain Woodes Rogers in the Duke, and captain Stephen Courtney in the Dutchess, round the world.*

THE principal encouragers, and proprietors of this expedition, were 20 merchants of Bristol, with some gentlemen of London, who were not concerned till the ships were at sea. Their first care was

was to chuse proper commanders, in which they were very fortunate. Captain Woodes Rogers commanded in chief, and captain Stephen Courtney, who contributed largely towards the expence of the voyage, commanded under him. The next thing was to lay down rules for their conduct, and to appoint directors to be of the council on board each of the ships, in case they should be separated from one another.

All things necessary being provided, says captain Rogers, we sailed for Cork, to make up our number of hands. The ship which I commanded being called the *Duke*, of 300 tons, 30 guns, and 170 men, with captain Dover 2d captain, and 3 lieutenants, &c. The *Dutchess* had captain Courtney commander, captain Edward Cooke 2d captain, and 3 lieutenants, burden 270 tons, 26 guns, and 151 men. Both ships had legal commissions from Prince George of Denmark, at that time lord high admiral of England, to cruize in the South Seas against her majesty's enemies, the French and Spaniards, and to act jointly as belonging to the same owners, the Merchants of Bristol. June 15, 1708, we towed down from Hong-road to King-road, to fit our ship, and staid till August 1, then weighed, and on the 15th had sight of the Irish shore. We spent our time at Cork till August 27, in taking in fresh hands, and discharging such as were unfit for our purpose. The 28th, we fell down to the Spit-end. While we were at Cork our men were daily marrying, tho' they expected to sail every moment. Among the rest was a Dane coupled to an Irish woman, by a Romish priest, without understanding a word of each others language, so that they were obliged to make use of an interpreter; yet this pair seemed more concerned at parting than any of the rest. Our number of seamen in both ships was 333, of which at least one third were foreigners. Several of the British subjects on board were tinkers, haymakers, taylors, fiddlers, pedlers, &c. one negro, and ten boys. With this motley crew we hoped to be well manned, as soon as they had learnt the use of arms, and got their sea legs.

September



September 10, about six in the morning, we saw a sail, and instantly gave chase, came up with her about three in the afternoon, and then she bore down upon us, shewing Swedish colours: I went aboard her in my yawl, captain Courtney's boat being just before me. We examined the master, suspecting he had contraband goods on board. The next morning, after having strictly searched the ship, and finding it difficult to prove her a prize, we let her go off. She belonged to Stadt near Hamburg, carried 22 guns, and of about 270 tons. While I was on board the Swede our men mutinied, their ring-leaders being the boatswain, and three inferior officers, who insisted that I and captain Courtney had manifestly given up their interest, by letting the Swede go without plundering her. On the 14th, our intestine troubles grew higher, and a sailor came up to me at the steerage-door, with the major part of the ship's company at his heels, demanding the boatswain out of custody. I desired to speak with him by himself on the quarter deck, he came accordingly; here by the assistance of the officers I seized him, and made one of his chief comrades whip him. This method, with other different corrections, allayed the tumult. The next evening we sent the boatswain on board the Crown galley in irons, with letters to our owners by the commander to justify our conduct; then discharged all the prisoners out of irons on their submission, which put the crew in exceeding good humour, and they were extremely brisk and diligent to shew their gratitude.

On the 18th, we saw a sail right a-head, between Fuerteventura and the Grand Canary, which we came up with and took, being a small Spanish ship, bound from Teneriff to Fuerteventura, with men and women passengers, and laden with sundry goods. The next day we dispatched the prize's boat with one of the owners agents, a priest, and the master, to Oratavia to treat about ransoming the vessel; which they refused to do for some time. Hereupon we resolved to cannonade the town, and carry off the ship and prisoners, if they would not make us amends for our loss of time,  
and

and pay the money demanded: accordingly on the 22d, at four in the morning, we stood in for shore making a clear ship; but soon saw a boat coming, with our owners agent, and Mr. Crofs an English merchant, bringing five butts of wine, and other refreshments. We lay off the town, took the goods out of the prize, and sold her to Mr. Crofs for 450 dollars, putting the prisoners aboard her. The 30th, we came to anchor in the harbour of the isle of St. Vincent. Here, seeing several men ashore, and knowing the island was not inhabited, we sent captain Cooke, in the pinnace armed, to see what they were, and found them to be Portuguese, come from the island of St. Antony to catch tortoises, who told him we might wood and water here. This island lies in 16 deg. 55 min. north latitude, and abounds with Guiney hens, some hogs and goats, and in the road are plenty of fish. In the woods are spiders as big as walnuts, and their webs very difficult to break thro'. While we lay here new disorders arose amongst the men, concerning the effects taken in the last prize; for having here an opportunity of buying things, every one wished for money to lay out. To put an end to such disturbances for the future, we determined to frame such articles, as might inspire the seamen with courage and constancy, which, tho' they cost some trouble to adjust, that was amply compensated, by finding they affectually answered our purpose; and that, among so many people, not one refused to comply. The articles were,

1. That all plunder taken aboard any prize by either ship, shall be equally divided between the companies of both ships, according to each man's respective whole shares, as shipped by the owners, or their orders.
2. That what is plunder shall be adjudged by the superior officers and agents in both ships.
3. That if any person on board either ship do conceal plunder, exceeding the value of a piece of eight, during 24 hours after the capture of any prize, he shall be severely punished, and lose his share of the plunder. The same penalty for being drunk in the time of action,

or disobeying the superior officer's command, or concealing himself, or quitting his post in sea or land service.

4. If any prize be taken by boarding, then whatsoever is taken shall be every man's own, as follows, viz, a sailor, ten pounds; any officer below a carpenter twenty pounds; a mate, gunner, carpenter, boatswain, forty pounds; a lieutenant or master eighty pounds, and the captains one hundred pounds each, above the gratuity promised by the owners to such as shall signalize themselves.

5. Public books of plunder are to be kept in each ship, attested by officers, and the plunder to be appraised by the officers chosen, and divided as soon as possible after the capture, every person to be sworn and searched as they come aboard, by such persons as shall be appointed for that purpose: the person or persons refusing shall forfeit their share of the plunder, as above.

6. In consideration that captain Rogers and captain Courtney, to make both ships companies easy, have given the whole cabin-plunder, which in all probability is the major part, to be divided as aforesaid, we do voluntarily agree, that they shall have 5 l. per cent. to each of them, over and above their respective shares, in consideration for what is their due out of the plunder aforesaid.

7. That a reward of twenty pieces of eight shall be given to him who first sees a prize of good value, or exceeding 50 tons in burden.

8. That such of us as have not already signed the articles of agreement, indented with the owners, do hereby oblige themselves to the same terms and conditions as the rest of the ships companies have done, half wages and half shares.

9. And for the true execution of the above articles, according to the intent and meaning thereof, and to prevent frauds relating to plunder, we do actually agree, that four men shall be chosen out of the Duke, and four men out of the Dutches, two for the ships company, and two for the officers of each ship, who are to receive plunder into their possession, and to search

T

every

every man aboard, and coming from each prize; and we make this public, to the end that no person, either officer, or foremast-man, may refuse being searched by those men chosen for that purpose, on penalty of losing their shares in the prize and plunder, and undergoing such punishment as the captain shall think proper to inflict upon them.

To which articles of agreement we have set our hands, as our full intent and meaning without any compulsion, dated October 7, 1708, signed by the officers and men of both ships.

This over, we were under some difficulty on another account. We had sent our linguist ashore for refreshments, and after staying two days to heel and clean our ships, our boat returned with nothing but limes and tobacco, bringing no tidings of the linguist. It was indeed but an indifferent place to leave him, but as he disobeyed orders, and that we might not lose the advantage of the season of the year, we resolved to stay no longer, and on the 8th gave orders for sailing.

November 18, we anchored in eleven fathom water, before the island of Grande, where new quarrels arose, and came to such a height on board the Dutchess, if captain Courtney had not put eight of the ringleaders in irons, which frightened the rest, they very probably had ran away with the ship. Nor did this clear them of ill humours; for on the 25th, in the afternoon, two Irish landmen stole into the woods, with design to leave us, tho' two such sparks got away on the 25th from the Dutchess, and in the night were so scared with tygers, as they thought, tho' in reality they were only monkees and baboons, that they jumped into the water, hollowing to the ship, till they were fetched aboard again. Next morning the watch upon deck saw a canoe, and called to her to come aboard, but the men refusing, caused us to send the yawl and pinnace after them, imagining that they concealed our runnagates, who were lost two days before. They fired to stay her, but the canoe got off the faster, at last they wounded one of the Indians that rowed her.

He

He that owned and steered her was a frier, and had a quantity of gold in her, which he got at the mines, as we supposed, by confessing the ignorant; so we took the father, his slaves, and the gold all on board. The next day we met with our two deserters, and put them in irons, and the last day of this month left the place.

The island Grande is very high, with a little cliff in the middle of the highest land, which is easily discovered at sea, in a clear day. There is likewise a remarkable round white rock standing in a small island on the larboard side nearest to Grande. The island is about nine leagues long, and all the land you see near the water side is covered with wood. It abounds with monkees, and other wild beasts, has excellent water, plenty of fire wood, &c. with oranges, lemons, and guavas, growing wild. We got here sugar and tobacco, which they sell very dear; some fowls and hogs, but the latter are scarce; beef and mutton are reasonable enough, but no great quantity of these are to be had; nor have they any bread. We had fine weather, but very hot. They have a monster here called Liboya, which the Portuguese governor told me is 30 feet long, as big round as a barrel, and will swallow a roebuck at a mouthful. Tygers are very common here, but not so voracious as those in India. The product of Brasil is red wood, sugar, gold, tobacco, whale-oil, snuff, and other drugs. Some persons of credit told me the gold mines here increase very fast, and it is got much easier than in any other country. The Brazilian women are very fruitful, and have easy labours, go into the woods and bring forth alone, then wash themselves and the child, and return home; their husbands lying abed the first 24 hours; being nursed as if they endured the pain. The Topaiars, who inhabit the west part of this country, are the most barbarous of the natives, and stronger than the rest, they wear little sticks thro' their cheeks and under their lips, are reported to be man-eaters, and use poisoned darts; they live by hunting and fishing, and alter their dwellings according to the seasons. Their kings and great men are distinguished by their long nails and

shaven crowns. Their priests make them believe, that the devils come in the shape of insects; they perform their diabolical rites in the night, when the women make a dismal howling; they allow polygamy, but punish adultery with death; when young women are marriageable, and courted by nobody, they take them to their kings to deflower, which is a great honour. We continued our voyage, coasting very far south during the months of December and January, where we endured great cold, which affected our men to such a degree, that a third part of the ships companies fell sick.

February 1, 1709, we came before the island of Juan Fernandez, in 34 deg. 10 min. south latitude. In the afternoon, we hoisted out our pinnace, and captain Dover with the boats crew went ashore, tho' we were four leagues distant. When the boat was about a league from the island they saw a light ashore, on seeing which, they came back to the ships. Various were our conjectures about this light; some imagined they saw a fleet of French ships at anchor, others a Spanish garrison, some again a large body of Frenchmen, or a crew of pirates. Such were the strange notions our people entertained on the sight of the fire. In short, we expected an enemy, and sent captain Dover, Mr. Fry, and six men armed ashore. The boat did not return, so we sent the pinnace with an armed force, to know the cause of the yawl's stay; for now we really imagined the Spaniards had a garrison there, and seized them. Immediately the pinnace returned with abundance of cray-fish, and a man cloathed in goat-skins, looking wilder than their first owners. He had been on the island four years and four months, being left by captain Stradling in the Cinque-Ports; his name was Alexander Selkirk a Scotsman, who had been master of the aforesaid ship, which came here last with captain Dampier, who told me, that he was the best man in her; and I immediately agreed with him to be mate of our ship. He made the fire last night when he saw our ships, judging they were

were English. While he staid upon this island, several ships passed by, but two only came to anchor; and as he went to view them, he found they were Spaniards. Had they been French he would have surrendered himself; but chose rather to die alone in that island, than to fall into the hands of the Spaniards. They had landed before he discovered who they were; and came so near him, it was with great difficulty he made his escape; for they not only shot at him, but pursued him to the woods, where he climbed up a tree, at the root of which they made water, and killed several goats in his sight, but saw him not. — He told us, he was born at Largo in the county of Fife in Scotland, and bred to the sea from a child; he had with him his cloaths and bedding, a firelock, some powder, bullets, and tobacco; a hatchet, a knife, a kettle, a bible, some practical pieces, his mathematical instruments, and books. For the first eight months, he found himself much addicted to melancholy, and the terror of being left alone in this desolate place, had like to have thrown him into despair. He built two huts of pimento leaves, covered them with long grass, and lined them with goats skins: when his powder being almost spent, he got fire by rubbing two sticks of pimento together. His two huts were at a distance from one another. One he made his bed chamber, the other his kitchen. In the former of these, which was much the largest, he employed himself in reading, singing psalms, and prayers, “so that, says he, I was, in this solitude, a better christian than ever before, and I fear, shall ever be hereafter.” At first he never eat till hunger constrained him, on account of grief, and for want of bread and salt; nor did he go to bed till he could keep no longer awake: the pimento wood served him both for fire and candle, and refreshed him with its grateful smell. He could get fish enough, but durst not eat them fresh, because they gave him a looseness, except crayfish, which are here as big as lobsters. These he boiled and broiled, as he did his goats flesh, of which he made good broth, they not being so rank as ours. He

kept an account of 500 he had killed whilst here, and caught as many more, that he marked in the ear and turned up. When his powder became low, he took them by speed, for his method of living, with continual walking and running, cleared him of all gross humours, and he ran thro' the woods, up the rocks and hills with incredible swiftness, as we perceived when we employed him to catch goats for us. We had a bull-dog which we sent with several of our nimblest runners to help him; but he tired both dogs and men, bringing the goats to us on his shoulders. He came at last to relish his victuals very well without salt and bread; and had, in the season, plenty of good turnips, which were sown there by captain Dampier's men, and now overspread some acres. He had cabbage enough from the cabbage-trees, and seasoned his meat with the fruit of pimento trees, which is the same as Jamaica pepper. He found here also a sort of black pepper, very good to expel wind. He soon wore out his cloaths and shoes by running in the woods, and at last, being forced to go without, his feet in a little time became so hard, that he could run any where without difficulty; and it was a long time before he could wear any, his feet swelling when he put them on. After he had got over his melancholy, he at some intervals diverted himself with carving his name on the trees, the time of his being left, and his continuance there. He was at first much pestered with cats and rats, the latter of which would gnaw his feet and cloaths when he was asleep; this obliged him to feed the cats with goats flesh, and at length they grew so tame, as to lie about him in the house, and drove away all the rats; he also brought up some young kids tame, and would now and then sing and dance with these tame creatures for diversion: so that by the blessing of heaven, and the vigour of youth, being now but thirty years old, he got the better of all the inconveniences of solitude, and began to make himself easy. When he had worn out his cloaths, he made himself a coat and cap of dried goats skins, which he sowed together with little thongs  
of



of the same, that he cut with his knife, and his needle was a nail : when his knife was worn to the back, he made others of old iron hoops, that he found on the shore, which he thined at one edge, as well as he could, and ground them upon stones. Having with him some linen cloth, he made himself shirts, sewing them with the worsted of his old stockings, which he unravelled for the purpose, and had the last on his back when we found him. When he came first aboard he had so much forgot his mother tongue, that we could hardly understand him. We offered him a dram, but he would not touch it, having drank nothing but water all the time he had been there, and it was some time before he could relish our victuals. Pimento trees are here plenty, and we saw some sixty feet high, and two yards thick, the cotton trees are much higher, being near four fathom round the body. Here are also, as Mr. Selkirk informed us, a sort of black plumbs, very good, but hard to come at, growing on the tops of the mountains and craggy rocks. The climate is so temperate, that the trees, herbs, and grass hold their verdure all the year. The winter holds no longer than June and July, and is not then severe ; there being about that time a little snow and hail, but often great rains. The summer heat is equally moderate, and there is not much thunder or tempestuous weather of any sort. He saw no venomous or savage creature of any kind, nor any kind of beasts but goats ; the first of which were put ashore for breed by Juan Fernandez, who settled here with a few families, till the Spaniards made themselves masters of Chili ; this tempted them to quit this island, judging the continent more profitable. February 3, they got a smith's forge to land, set the coopers ashore, and made a little tent for me to have the benefit of the air. The Dutchess also had a tent for her sick men, for whom, the late governor never failed to procure two or three goats a day ; by which and the help of greens, with the wholesome air, they soon recovered of the scurvy. Here we spent our time till the 10th, in refitting our ships, and taking in wood and water ; making  
all

all the haste we could, and being unwilling to lose time ; for we had been informed at the Canaries, that five stout French ships were coming to these seas. This island lies in 33 deg. 49 min. south latitude, is high ragged land, six leagues in length, and about three in breadth.

Nothing farther remarkable happened till the 15th of March, when we saw a sail, to which the Dutchess, being nearest, gave chase, and soon took. She was a little vessel of 16 tons from Payta, bound to Cheripe for flour, with a small sum of money to purchase it ; the master a mestizo, begotten between an Indian and a Spaniard, and his crew eight men. We enquired of 'em for news. They assured us, that all the French ships sailed out of these seas six months ago. After we had put our men aboard the prize, we haled off close on a wind for Lobos, where there is no coming in for ships, but to the leeward of the islands. On the east island is a round hammock, and behind it a small cove, convenient enough for ships to careen in. There we haled up and fitted up our little frigate. The soil here is a hungry clay, and there is no fresh water or green thing on the island. Our prisoners told us, they expected the widow of the late viceroy of Peru would shortly embark for Acapulco, with her family and riches, and stop at Payta to refresh, or sail near, as usual, in one of the king's ships of 36 guns ; and that about eight months before, a ship with 200,000 pieces of eight, liquors and flour on board, passed Payta for Acapulco. Upon this, they resolved to cruise at some distance from thence for some time and not discover themselves. April 1, they took a ship of 300 tons, built in the manner of a galleon, laden with dry goods and negroes, and the next day took another prize. The 12th, it was resolved in a committee, to send the Beginning prize into Payta, for fear of being discovered, and to attempt the town of Guiaquil. The enterprize to be carried on under the conduct of the three captains, Dover, Rogers, and Courtney. The first to command a body of 70 marines ; the 2d a company of officers and sailors of 71, and the 3d another body of 73. Cap-  
tain.

tain Dampier, with the artillery, and, for a reserve, 22 men; in all 238. Captain Edward Cooke to command the Dutchess, with 42 men; and captain Fry the Duke, with 40 men; total 320 men; the Blacks, Indians, and prisoners about 266 more. On the 13th, we haled in for Cape Blanco, distant 10 leagues E. S. E. The 15th, in the morning, we saw a sail, after which, the Duke's boat commanded by captain Fry, and the Dutchess's by captain Cooke rowed directly, and kept her in play till captain Courtney came up, when she struck, and we clapt her on board. This ship was about 270 tons, carried 24 guns, but had only six mounted. She came from Panama, and was bound to Lima, had 70 blacks, and many passengers, some of whom were considerable merchants of Lima, with a large quantity of pearls and bale goods aboard. Captain Cooke remained in her, sending the captain and prisoners to the other ships. This had been a French vessel.

The 21st, in the morning, we sent the Beginning ahead to point Arena, on the island of Puna, for fear of danger, where she found only an empty vessel, abandoned by the men. All apprehensions were now removed, and at five in the afternoon, we rowed for the town of Guiaquil, at 11 saw a light in it; when we came within a mile of the place, we heard a centinel call to another to bring fire. Finding we were discovered, we rowed over to the other side, right against the town, and saw several lights, heard them ring the alarm-bell, and fire several volleys, to give notice we were come up the river. Hereupon a council was held in the stern of one of the boats, to resolve, whether to land now, or stay till day-break. It was agreed to stay till it was light, all our forces being not come up. When we were all joined, we proceeded up the river, and sent a flag of truce, with the captain of the French-built ship, the governor of Puna, and another prisoner. When the captain came to the mayor of the town, he asked our number, which he was so kind as to magnify. He answered they are boys and not men; to which the captain

captain replied, he would find them men; for they fought him very bravely in their open boats; tho' he had killed one of the commanders brothers, and wounded and killed some more, for which reason he advised him to agree for the ransom of the town; for tho' he had 3000 men, they would not be able to oppose them. The corregidor, or mayor, answered, his horse was ready. The 23d, all the barks being towed up close to the pinnacle, lying before the town, they rowed up the river, after some vessels, and brought six of 'em to anchor by our barks, we also took possession of two new ones, of 400 tons each; then went ashore with a flag of truce; and the governor came aboard, to treat about the ransom of the town and ships; they could not agree, so he promised to come again in the evening, but forfeited his word. The 24th, the governor came again, when our officers would have seized him, but he insisting it was contrary to a flag of truce, they let him go, giving him an hour's time to make his men ready. Our men landed about four in the afternoon, and attacked them with so much bravery, that the Spaniards ran away after the first volley, whom they pursued to their cannon, which they soon gained; then marched in a body through both towns, driving the enemy before them; placing guards in the three Churches, and setting fire to five or six houses in the old town. In the mean time the Dutchess's pinnacle, which was commanded by lieutenant Connely, went up the river with 22 men, and landing at every house, took their plate, and what else of value he could meet with. The 25th, we had some skirmishes with the enemy, in which one man was wounded, and as we expected to be attacked, one of our centinels, in the night, shot another of our men, who was going from his post, and would not answer, tho' he was three times challenged. Some more accidents of this nature happened. The afternoon was spent in carrying off provisions; and in case the enemy should advance in the night, the captains thought proper to join all their forces at the main guard, where we had cannon mounted. The 26th, messen-

gers

gers came with a flag of truce about ransoming the town; but could come to no agreement; however this affair was at length settled at 30,000 dollars, and on condition they should send three hostages, and we to stay at Puna till the money was raised. The hostages came, and were put on board, with whom came a boat loaden with brandy. We hoisted a flag of truce, and fired a gun, that the people might know all hostilities ceased, and that we had agreed to stay for the money. The 29th, having discovered a sail, going up the river, we sent both ships boats after her, and about four in the afternoon she struck to them. She was a Spanish bark from Cheripe bound to Guiaquil, with 330 bags of meal, 3500 lb. of sugar, some onions, quince, and pomegranates. This, with the six barks, and the two great ships ransomed, with the town of Guiaquil, makes 14 prizes taken in these seas.

*Contract for the ransom of the town of Guiaquil.*

“Whereas the city of Guiaquil, lately belonging to Philip V. king of Spain, is now taken by storm, and in the possession of the captains Thomas Dover, Woodes Rogers, and Stephen Courtney, commanding a body of her majesty of Great Britain’s subjects, we whose names are under-written, are content to become hostages for the said city, and continue in custody of the said captains till 30,000 pieces of eight shall be paid to them for the ransom of the said city, two new ships, and six barks, during which time no hostility is to be committed on either side, between this place and Puna, the said sum to be paid at Puna within six days from the date hereof and then the hostages to be discharged, and all the prisoners to be delivered immediately: otherwise the said hostages do agree, to remain prisoners till the said sum is discharged in any other part of the world: in witness whereof we have voluntarily set our hands this 27th day of April, old stile, and the 7th of May new stile, in the year of our lord, 1709.”

The

The plunder taken here, besides the ransom for the town, was 230 bags of flour, beans, pease and rice; 15 jars of oil; 160 jars of other liquor; cordage, iron-ware and nails a good quantity, a ton of pitch and tar; four half jars of powder; a quantity of cloathing and necessaries; about 1200 pound in plate, ear-rings, &c. 150 bales of dry goods; a parcel of guns, 200 usefess Spanish arms, and musquet barrels; a few packs of indico, cocoa, and anotto, with a ton of loaf sugar. The hostages told us, that during the treaty, 80,000 pieces of eight belonging to the king were sent out of the town, besides plate, linen, and other things of the greatest value. May 2, the last day we had agreed to wait for the money, none came, nor did any boat appear, which gave us some uneasiness; at length, however, the boat arrived and brought us 22,000 pieces of eight; we dispatched her again as soon as we had received the money, telling the men we should depart the next morning, and would take the hostages with us, if they did not send the rest. Nevertheless we staid till the 6th, when captain Courtney would stay no longer, for fear the French and Spaniards should by this time have notice of us at Lima, and fit out a fleet to take us. We were preparing to sail, when Mr. Morel, a relation of our prisoners, came on board with 3500 pieces of eight more towards the ransom. This put us in good humour again, and we released all our prisoners, except the Morels, the three hostages, and four more. This gentleman had a gold chain, with some other things of value about him, with which he bought our bark the *Beginning*, which was now to us usefess. We gave the captain of the French ship three negroes, Mr. Morel another, and their wearing apparel to most of the prisoners. Here it may be proper to give the reader a brief description of the town of Guiaquil, as we found it.

Guaquil consists of two parts, the old and the new town, in both of which are about 500 houses, and the towns are joined by a wooden bridge, above half a mile in length. It stands on low ground, and is very dirty in winter. They have but one regular street, which

which runs along the river-side to the bridge. Here is a handsome parade before the church of St. Jago, but the said church lies in ruins. Here are four other churches, viz. St. James, St. Augustin, St. Francis, and St. Dominic; and before this last another parade in a semicircle. They are all decently adorned with altars, pictures, and carved-work; in that of St. Augustin is an organ. The houses are built of brick, wood, and bamboes split; some of them neatly furnished. The morass ground about it is full of the largest toads I ever saw, says our author, some of them as big as a twopenny loaf in England. There were 2000 inhabitants of all sorts. The town is extremely well situated for trade, and ship-building, lying from point Aréna 14 leagues, and 7 from Puna, up a large river, with many villages and farm-houses adjacent. The water is fresh for four leagues below it; on its banks grow mangroves and sarsaparilla. They have plenty of beeves, sheep, goats, hens, and ducks. The town is governed by a corregidor appointed by the king. Their cocoa is ripe, and mostly gathered between June and August; but their natural fruit is some green, and some ripe all the year.

May 11, we bore away for the Gallapagos islands, in a deplorable condition, having above 20 men aboard the Duke, and 50 aboard the Dutchess, seized with a malignant fever, catched, as we supposed, at Guiaquil; in which place, as we were now informed, 10 or 12 persons were carried off every day, about a month before we came, by a contagious distemper. About this time also captain Courtney was taken ill, and in 24 hours after, we had 50 men down; and our comfort 70. The 17th we saw land, and the next day were within 4 leagues of 2 large islands. We sent a boat ashore to look for water, who brought us word there was none to be found. May 26, captain Dover and I went aboard the Dutchess, where, after a consultation, we resolved to run to the isle of Plata to water, and come off again, for fear of two large French ships, and a Spanish man of war, which we heard were in quest of

U

us.

us. We sailed on the 27th, and in this course the Dutchess took another prize of about 90 tons, bound from Panama to Guiaquil, called the St. Thomas de Villa Nova, Juan Navarro captain. She had about forty people aboard, among whom were eleven negroes, but few European goods, except some iron and cloth. June 8, our boats brought in another prize, which was a bark of fifteen tons, with ten Spaniards and Indians, and some negroes; no cargo, but a little gold dust, and a gold chain, worth about 500 l. together; which we put on board the Dutchess; and on the 19th we had another consultation, when it was resolved to go to the island Malaga, where was a road to leave our ships in, while our boats rowed up the river for the gold mines of Barbacore; but being informed by the Morels, and other prisoners, who had been there, our design was impracticable, we came back to Gorgona.

June 23, we anchored in forty fathom water, and resolved to careen our ships, and erected tents for the armourer and cooper's crews, as also for the sick; and in fourteen days caulked our ships all round, careened, rigged, and stowed them again, fit for sea. Our sick men's coming ashore here, and walking about, had so good an effect, that while our sound men were employed in refitting our ships, they gathered strength enough to return to their duty.

While we lay here it was agreed to fit out the Havre de Grace prize with 20 guns, and put men out of each ship aboard her under captain Cooke's command. This work employed us from that time to July 9, when she was finished, and we gave her the name of the Marquis. The next thing of consequence was to get rid of our prisoners, who now became a burden to us, and of no use; so the next day we put 72 of them aboard the bark, and in our 2 pinnaces, and sent them to the main; these vessels returned again in the morning of the 11th, and brought off seven small black cattle, 12 hogs, and six goats, with some limes and plantains. On the 15th came on board, in a canoe, one Michael Kendall, a free negro of Jamaica, who had



had lived a slave for some time in the village our men plundered, and happening to be out of the way then, as soon as he had an account of it, ventured his life to come to us. The 17th the Morells came aboard again, whom we had set on shore seven days before, to ransom what they could of us. We sold them good bargains, 'tis true, but they ran great hazards in trading with us, always trusting us with their persons and money, when we had the effects in our own hands. The 18th, a negro belonging to the Dutcheffs, was bit by a small brown speckled snake, and died in 12 hours. There are abundance of snakes on this island, I have seen some as thick as my leg, says captain Rogers, and above three yards long. The same morning the Morells went to the main a second time for money.

August 1, the officers were chosen to appraise the plunder, and made an end of the clothes the 3d in the afternoon, which at a low rate amounted to 400 l. and the silver plunder, consisting of sword hilts, snuff-boxes, buckles, &c. at 4 s. 6 d. per piece of eight, amounted to 743 l. 15 s. besides 3 lb. 12 oz. of gold, in gold chains, snuff-boxes, ear-rings, &c. Next morning we had like to have had a mutiny among our men. The steward told me they had last night made an agreement, and he heard some of the ringleaders say, that sixty men had already signed the paper. Being ignorant what this confederacy meant, I sent for the chief officers into the cabin, secured two of the mutineers, and soon after two more. He who wrote the paper, we put in irons: by this time all hands were upon deck, and we got the paper from those that were in the cabin. The purport of which was, not to take their plunder, till they had justice done them, as they termed it. There being many concerned in this conspiracy, captain Dover and Fry desired I would discharge those in confinement, upon begging pardon, and promising not to be guilty of those things again. On the 7th we gave the Morells their ships and all the goods we could not carry, for what money our agents received of them, and agreed for the effects in the bark, and the arrears

due for the ransom of the town of Guiaquil, at 15,000 pieces of eight, which were brought in 12 days, when captain Cooke valued the money now on board for the use of the company, at 20,000 l.

August 11 we sailed, and as our ships were but thinly manned, and there was likely to be more action than since we came into these seas; we mustered the negroes on the 16th on board the Duke, and found them to be thirty-five strong fellows, fit for service. When they were together, I told them, if they would behave bravely and act faithfully, they should have their freedom; on this 32 of them engaged, and desired to be instructed in the use of arms. Hereupon I made Michael Kendall their leader. To confirm their contract, I made them drink a dram all round to our good success, and gave them bays for cloaths. The next morning we saw a sail, both the Dutchess and we gave chase, and took her in an hour's time. She was a vessel of seventy tons, and had in her 24 negroes, men, women, and children. Now we stood over to the bay of Jecames, where the Indians are free, and, by the assistance of a priest, entered on trade with them, and got provisions at an easy rate. September 1, we sailed from hence, and on the 6th made one of the Gallapagos islands. The next day captain Dover and Mr. Glendall went ashore in the pinnaces. The Dutchess's pinnace returned very soon, laden with turtles. In the interim we came to an anchor about half a mile from shore. The 12th I sent to the Dutchess, to know how they were stocked with turtle, who sent word they had about 150. Some of the largest of the land-turtles are 100 pounds weight, and those of the sea 400. They are the ugliest creatures in nature. The shell not unlike the top of an old hackney coach, as black as jet. The legs and neck are long, and about the thickness of a man's wrist, they have clubbed feet like the elephant, with five thick nails on the fore-feet, and four behind; the head small, like a snake, and they look old and black. When first surprised they shrink their head, neck, and legs under the shell.

October

October 1, we made the main land of Mexico, which when captain Dampier saw, he declared it was in the neighbourhood of this place, he attacked the lesser Manilla ship in the *St. George*. Here the men began to relapse, and two of them fell down on the deck, but were recovered by being blooded. The next day we came to Cape Corientes, and now our chief business was to find the islands named *Tres Marias*. The next morning we discovered 2 islands, and on the 6th sent lieutenant Fry ashore in the pinnace to seek for a good road, or conveniency for us to recruit; he returning, told us, there was bad anchorage, no fresh water, nor any thing else but wood. We haled on the wind for the second island, which captain Dampier remembered he was at, when he sailed with captain Swan, and found water; and as we wooded, watered, and got fresh provisions at these places, very little known, I shall describe them. These islands, called *Tres Marias*, lie north west in a row, about four leagues asunder; they are all high ground, and full of trees, in which are abundance of different kinds of parrots, pigeons, and other birds, of which we killed numbers; also excellent hares, but less than ours. We saw a vast quantity of guanas, and some raccoons; the latter barked like a dog, and snarled also, but were easily kept off with a stick.

November 1, we saw high land, which proved to be the point of California, called Cape *St. Lucas*. On the 16th the bark was sent to look for water on the main, and returning next morning, they said they had seen wild Indians, who paddled to them on bark-logs: they were afraid to come near our people at first; but at last we prevailed upon them to accept a knife and some bays, for which they gave us 2 bladders of water, a couple of live foxes, and a deer-skin. We dispatched the bark and boat a second time with trifles, in hopes of getting some refreshment; and on the 18th before sun-set saw our bark near the shore; and having little wind she drove most part of the night to be near us. In the morning we sent our pinnace,

and brought the men aboard, who told us, their new acquaintance were become very familiar, but they were the poorest wretches in nature. They came willingly aboard, to eat some of our victuals, and, by signs, invited our men ashore; when they swam to guide the bark-logs our men were on, there being too much sea to land out of the boat. When they were ashore the Indians led each of our men betwixt 2 of them, to an old naked gentleman, with a deer-skin spread before him, on which they kneeled, our people doing so too. These who led our men took the same care of them a quarter of a mile farther, thro' a narrow passage to their huts, where they sat on the ground with them, and eat broiled fish: then they brought samples of every thing they had, except their women, children, and arms, which are not shewn to strangers. Their knives made of shark's teeth, and other curiosities, our men brought to me, which I preserved to shew what shifts may be made. On the 14th it was resolved, that the Marquis should go into the harbour to refit, and on the 21st we bore away for the same port, and at nine next morning the man at the mast head saw a sail about seven leagues off. We bore away after her immediately, the Dutchess did the like. About eight o'clock we began to engage her alone, when we came close aboard each other we gave her several broad sides, and plied her with small shot for about three glasses, then she struck her colours three parts down, about this time the Dutchess coming up, gave her five guns with a volley of small shot and she submitted. This prize was called *Nuestra Senora de la Incarnacion Disenganio*, Sir John Pichberty commander; she had 20 guns, 20 patereroes, and 193 men; whereof nine were killed, ten wounded, and several blown up with powder. On our side, I was shot thro' the left cheek, and the bullet took away part of my jaw, so that my teeth fell upon the deck; and one Powel, an Irish landman, was slightly wounded in the buttock. We sent our pinnace aboard for the officers, and having examined them, found there was another ship come out of Ma-

nilla,

nilla, of sixty guns and as many patereroes; but they had lost her company above three months, and believed she had reached Acapulco before this time. About four in the afternoon we came to an anchor, and received the compliments of the Marquis on our unexpected success. At eight in the evening we consulted on the two grand points; what should be done with the hostages, and how to act with respect to the other Manilla ship. As to the first it was agreed, (that since we had good reason to believe the hostages from Guiaquil, and the commander of the Manilla ship were men of honour, the latter being a French gentleman, and brother to the famous Mr. Du Cass,) to make the best terms we could with them, and give them their liberty. As to the other point we met with greater difficulty. I was desirous of going out with the Dutchess to cruize for the other ship; but captain Courtney was resolutely bent to go out with the Marquis, and that I should stay in the harbour, which was much against my will; so he put ten of my best hands on board the Dutchess. She and the Marquis sailed on Christmas-day. As soon as they were gone, we put part of the goods on board the prize into the bark, in order to send away our prisoners. The agreement made with them was, that as there were now 4000 pieces of eight due for the ransom of Guiaquil, they should have the bark and cargo for 2000 more, and we would take Monsr. Pichbert's bills, payable in London, for the whole 6000.

On Christmas-day we placed two centinels on the top of a hill, with instructions, when they saw three sail of ships in the offing, to make three wafts with their hands. On the 26th in the afternoon they made the signal, and we got under sail at 7 o'clock. The chace had made signals to our ship all the day and night, taking us for her consort, which we had in possession. In the morning, as soon as it was day, the wind veering, put our ship about, and the chace fired first upon the Dutchess. We kept as close aboard her as possible, and fired as fast as possible for four glasses, then,  
receiv-

receiving a shot in our main mast, it was much disabled, so we fell astern in our birth along side, where the enemy threw a fire ball out of one of her tops upon our quarter-deck, which blew up a chest of arms, and cartouch boxes, all loaded, with several cartridges of powder in the steerage; by which Mr. Vanbrugh, our agent, and a Dutchman, were miserably scorched. Now captain Courtney and captain Cooke came aboard, where we, considering the condition of our three ships, agreed to keep the enemy company till night, and then make the best of our way into the harbour. We engaged first and last about seven hours, during all which time we had on board the Duke but eleven men wounded; amongst whom, I was again hurt in my heel with a splinter, so that I could not stand, but lay on my back in great misery, part of my heel-bone being struck off, and my ankle cut half thro'; the loss of blood weakened me very much before it could be stopped and dressed. The Dutchess had 20 men killed and wounded; one of the former, and three of the latter, were my men. The Marquis had none killed, nor wounded, but two scorched with powder.

The enemy's was a stout new ship, and few of our shot entered her side. She was called the *Vigonia*, of 60 guns, and as many patereroes, all brass. They were the better provided for us, on hearing at Manilla, from the English settlements in India, that two small ships were fitted out at Bristol to cruise in the South Seas; and that captain Dampier was pilot. Thus ended our attempt on the largest Manilla ship, which was a great disappointment to us, and gave, no doubt, great reputation to them: tho' perhaps, they were as much indebted to our continual broils, as to their own conduct and courage, of which we were made sensible, when it was too late.

January 1, 1710, we returned into the harbour, resolving to go as soon as possible to the East Indies, giving our prisoners the bark, with all necessaries sufficient for their voyage to Acapulco. We employed ourselves till the 7th in refitting, wooding, and watering; and it was

was with no small pleasure we found bread enough in the prize to last us our long run to Guam. After many debates, captain Courtney and his officers, with those on board the Marquis, would compliment captain Dover with the command of the prize, as being a considerable owner; but I, and my officers were against it. Hereupon they framed a protest against us, which was immediately answered by a protest from me; and the council met again to endeavour an accommodation. After some farther debate, they voted Mr. Fry and Mr. Stretton to act in equal posts, and to take the charge of navigating the ship, tho' under captain Dover; and that we should put 30 men aboard her, the Dutchess 25, and the Marquis 13, which, with the Manilla Indians, and other prisoners we had left, made her hands 110. The majority being against me, I was obliged to comply. Thus the affair ended, we drank to our safe arrival in England; and then appointed the place of rendezvous to be Guam, in case of separation.

Before I quit America, says Mr. Rogers, it may not be amiss to give the reader an account of what I was eye-witness to, with respect to California. The Spaniards pretend, that some of their people, have sailed as far betwixt this place and the main as 42 deg. north latitude; but this account cannot be depended upon, and I rather chuse to believe it joins to the continent. What I can say of it to my own knowledge, is, that the land which we saw for the major part is mountainous, barren, and sandy; bearing nothing but a few shrubs and bushes, which produce fruits and berries of several sorts. Our men, who went to view the country above 15 leagues to the north, say it was covered with high trees. The bay in which we rode, had but indifferent anchoring in deep water; yet, during the time we staid, the air was serene and healthful. The natives we saw here were about 300, strait, tall, with large limbs, and a very black complexion; their hair black, hanging down to their thighs. The women had a covering over their privities, but the men were stark

stark naked, and all we saw were old and wrinkled. They seemed to fancy nothing we had but knives and edge tools, and yet were so honest, as not to meddle with those of our coopers or carpenters, if they were left ashore all night. We saw nothing like European goods or utensils among them of any kind; their huts were low and not covered enough to keep out rain. They had no gardens, nor any provisions, which made us conclude they had no fixed habitations here; and that this was their season for fishing; tho' we saw neither nets nor hooks. Some of our people told me, they saw one of 'em dive with a wooden instrument, and while he was under water put up his striker with a fish, which was taken off by another, who attended him on a bark-log. Instead of bread, they use a little black seed, which they bruise with stones, and eat by handfuls. Our men thickned some of their broth with it, and said it had the taste of coffee. They have some roots, and various sorts of fruits, unknown to us in England; but we saw no extraordinary birds here. The entrance into the harbour is easily known by four high rocks, which appear like the Needles off the Isle of Wight.

January 12, we took our departure from Cape St. Lucas, with little or no refreshments; so that we were forced to allow but a pound and half of flour, and one small piece of meat, to five men in a mess, with three pints of water a man for 24 hours. On the 16th, in our prize the Batchelor, was found a large quantity of bread and sweet meats, but very little flesh; of bread we had 1000 weight; the Dutchess as much, and the Marquis 500. We spoke with the Dutchess, and agreed to sail W. S. W. till we got into 13 degrees; and to keep the parallel till we reached the island of Guam, where we anchored March 11, in the afternoon, in twelve fathom water, half a mile from shore, near a little village. The necessity of our touching here was very great, having not provision enough for 14 days, at short allowance. As we were turning into the harbour, several proes came off towards us, one of them



them with Spanish colours, in which were two Spaniards: on assuring them we were friends they came aboard us, and soon after a message came from the governor, to which we sent a very respectful answer: he made us a generous offer of what the island afforded. The day following an entertainment was provided on board the Batchelor for the Spanish gentlemen, to which I was carried, being unable to move myself; there it was agreed, that a deputation should be sent from every ship to wait upon the governor, with a present for his great civility. On the 16th our pinnace, with several officers, went to the governor's palace, who received them with great friendship, having 200 men drawn up in arms at their landing; and his officers, with the clergy of the island, to conduct them to his house, which was a very pretty seat. They were entertained with 60 dishes of various kinds, and the best the island afforded. When they came away, each fired a volley of small arms. The presents they carried to the governor were, two negro-boys, dressed in liveries, 20 yards of scarlet serge, and six pieces of cambrick, with which he seemed well pleas'd. The next day we received 60 hogs, 99 fowls, 24 baskets of Indian corn, and 800 cocoa-nuts, with fourteen bags of rice, and 44 baskets of yams. On the 18th, there was an entertainment aboard the Duke, at which were present most of the officers, and four Spanish gentlemen from the governor. After this we got some more cattle, which, tho' small and lean, were to us very acceptable; each ship had fourteen, and the next morning each ship had two cows and calves more. Having now got our dividend, we steered a west by south course, and made directly to the south east of Mindanao, and from thence to Ternate. April 14 we saw three water-spouts. May 25, being in the latitude of the island Bouro, we dropped our former design, and resolved to make for the streights of Bouton, where, if we arrived safely, we might get provisions enough to carry us to Batavia. In pursuance of this resolution, we stood away S. W. by S. for them, and fell in with  
a parcel

a parcel of islands to the east of Bouton, then stood off north east from the land till next morning; when we saw it stretching from S. by E. to S. W. by S. about six leagues distant, and as we stood in, perceived an opening between the islands, with three lying athwart the outlet. Upon this, I and the Dutchess sent our pinnaces ashore, from whence they returned with some cocoa-nuts, and told us they were Malayan inhabitants, who seemed friendly enough. Abundance of these people came off with cocoa-nuts, Indian-wheat, yams, papas, potatoes, hens, and several kinds of birds, for which we gave cloaths, scissars, knives, and other toys. These two islands are called Cambava, and Wanshut, lying in 5 deg. 13 min. south latitude; from whence we sailed the next day, and getting into the latitude of 5 deg. 50 min. I, on seeing land, called a council, in which it was agreed to stand back, and make as little sail as possible all night. Next morning the weather being clear, we made land very plain, which seemed very high, with some islands under it: but our misfortune was, we could find no ground that would hold our anchors. I sent out our boat to try farther, which returned with some of the Malayans on board; but we could make no use of their intelligence for want of an interpreter. I sent to the Batchelor, who had one, but captain Dover refused to let him come, tho' he had no use for him. I sent a second time, that I might, if possible, find a good anchoring-place for the ships, but could not keep the people, or persuade them to go on board the Batchelor; tho' at parting they made signs to us, and pointed to the northward which they called Booroo. Our pilot, captain Dampier, said he had formerly been thro' these streights, and remembered a town near the south part of them, where the king lived, but knew nothing of it now. Upon this we agreed to send him with Mr. Vanbrugh, and Mr. Connely, to wait upon his majesty, and solicit for a supply of provisions.

April 30, a proe came from the king, with a nobleman aboard, who had neither shoes, nor stockings on,

on, and a pilot to bring us up to the town. The 1st question the Indian lord asked, was, "How we durst come to anchor there, without leave first obtained of the king of Bouton?" He, however, brought each commander a piece of Bouton striped cloth, a bottle of arrack, some rice in baskets, &c. as a present from the king, and a letter from the officers on shore, informing us they were kindly received; that the town where the king lived was walled round, was very large, and had several great guns mounted on the Walls. We wooded and watered at the island Sampo, and several proes came off with Indian and Guiney corn, fruits, and some fowls. The people seemed very civil, but sold dear; yet our officers staying much longer than was intended, we began to suspect they were detained. June 5, the Dutchess's pinnace came down with Mr. Connely, who told us there were four lasts of rice coming, which was bought of the king for 600 dollars, and that Mr. Vanbrugh was detained for the payment of the money, which a great man came to receive. The next morning it came, and was equally distributed among the four ships. After this, provisions became cheaper. The town of Bouton is situated at the side of a hill, on the top of which, is a fort inclosed with a stone wall, and upon it are mounted guns and patereroes: in this fort lives the king and a considerable number of people. The king has five wives, besides concubines, and four men called Pury Bassas, who carry large canes with silver heads, to manage his affairs. His majesty wears a green gause spangled over his long black hair, goes always bare-footed and bare legged, and is sometimes clad like a Dutch skipper; but when he appears in state, has a calico gown over his short jacket. He is a great admirer of music, as are all his subjects. Their houses are built upon posts. On the 17th, our pinnace returned with Mr. Vanbrugh, and all our men, and we began to unmoor our ships. The next day we made three islands to the north of Zalayer. On the 20th, our pinnaces came up with a small vessel, bound for Macassar, a Dutch factory, and brought the ma-

ster of her on board, who promised to pilot us, not only thro' the streights of Zalayer, but also to Batavia, if we would keep it a secret from the Dutch. About four o'clock we entered the freight, steering thro' N. W. by W. then made the southermost part of the Celebes. Next morning the pilot promised to carry us along the channel, thro' which the great Dutch ships went to Batavia. On the 24th we ran thro' the island Madura. On the 27th we made the high land of Cheribon, which bore south west. Next day, about noon, we made the land, which was very low. In the afternoon we saw ships in the road of Batavia, and got happily to anchor just after sun-set, in five fathom water; the town bearing south by east and a mile and half distant; and the isle of Onrust bearing N. W. by N. distant two leagues and a half. At this island the Dutch careen all their ships, and have all conveniences necessary for that purpose, but we could not, at any rate, get leave of the government to repair thither; tho' they allowed us to go to the little island Horn, which is near the other, and inhabited by fishermen. Here we fitted the Duke and Dutchess, and returned again to Batavia road, where we rigged; then sold the Marquis to captain Opie and captain Oldham, and distributed the officers and men among the other ships, except one Dutchman, who ran away. The weather being exceeding hot while we lay here, many officers and men fell ill, and I, made one of the number. The master of the Duke, the gunner of the Dutchess, and several men died of the flux. A young man named John Read, belonging to the Dutchess, venturing to swim here, had both his legs snapped off by a shark, which, at a second bite, took off the bottom of his belly; so that he was dead before we could take him in.

October 14, we sailed from Batavia, and on the 17th arrived at the watering-place on the main. On the 19th, we came to an anchor about a league to the westward of Java head, where we continued wooding and watering till the 28th. In the evening we sent a boat with several of our men to Pepper Bay, to buy fowls

fowls and other provisions, for knives, and other toys, which are more acceptable to them than money. We were in some pain about them on account of their long stay; but to our great satisfaction, they returned on the 25th, with twelve doz. of fowls, some mangoes, &c. November 8, Mr. James Wase, our chief surgeon, died. And on the 18th of January, 1711, we arrived safe in the harbour of the Cape. I was much against staying to lose time here; and on the 1st of February, delivered my sentiments in writing to captains Courtney and Dover, with the rest of the committee; but the majority was against any thing but going home with the Dutch fleet all together. April 6, in the afternoon, we all weighed, being sixteen Dutch, and nine English ships; nothing material happening till the 23d of July; when we got sight of Holland, and came to an anchor. On the 24th, in the afternoon, I went up to Amsterdam. On the 26th we got down to the Texel, where we found our convoy. The 30th we weighed, October 1, about 11 o'clock, we anchored in the Downs, and on the 14th got up to Eriff.

---

## C H A P. XIX.

*The voyage of captain John Clipperton round the world.*

SOME merchants of London being of opinion, that we should soon be engaged in a war with Spain, fitted out two stout ships for the South Seas; one called the *Success*, of 36 guns and 180 men, captain Clipperton; the other the *Speedwell*, of 24 guns and 106 men, captain Shelvocke. February 13, in the year 1719, they sailed with a fair wind; but with a very odd circumstance, which was this: the whole stock of brandies, wines, and other liquors, for the supply of both ships, were still on board the *Speedwell*. On the 15th they had fresh gales, and in

the evening the *Succes* was obliged to shorten sail for her. Captain Shelvocke says, that he this day came under the lee of the *Succes*, and made complaint to captain Clipperton of the crankness of his ship, which, as he said, was owing to his having too much weight aloft, therefore desired him to send for his wine and brandy, which would afford him an opportunity of striking down some of his guns into the hold, and enable him (captain Shelvocke) to sail much better. But this was neglected, and certainly a great omission in captain Clipperton. On the 19th a violent storm arose, about ten at night. The gale encreasing, the *Succes* made a signal for the *Speedwell* to bring to, which captain Shelvocke readily obeyed, and both ships lay naked all night. On the 20th, about noon, the storm abated, and captain Clipperton made sail, steering south by east, but captain Shelvocke, pursuant to his own journal, bore away north west, so that by meer accident, they never saw each other again till they met in the South Seas.

Captain Clipperton, now out at sea, was very indifferently provided for, without his consort. The first place of rendezvous appointed, was the Canaries, therefore he hurried thither so expeditiously, that he reached them on the 5th of March, and having taken in some wine, for which he had occasion, he cruised in that station ten days, and then having no hopes of seeing his consort, he continued his course to the Cape Verde islands, the next place of rendezvous; leaving Gomera on the 15th, in order to be early in his next station. These islands are in all seven. The great Canary is by much the largest, and contains 9000 inhabitants. There is a mountain on the Teneriff, called the Pic of Teneriff, which is looked upon to be the highest in the whole world, and may be seen at sixty leagues distance. There is no getting to the top of it but in July and August, all the rest of the year it is covered with snow. It is three days journey to the top, from whence you may see sixty leagues.

The

The 21st, in the evening, he got sight of St. Vincent, and came to an anchor in the bay next morning; this was the next place of their meeting. He tarried here ten days, in hopes of meeting with his consort, but in vain. On the 29th of May, they found themselves in 52 deg. 15 min. south latitude, being then off Cape Virgin Mary, the north point of the entrance of the Straights of Magellan. Going still higher, they came to queen Elizabeth's island; here they sent their pinnace ashore to a fresh water river, but at this time it was frozen up. They saw large flocks of ducks and geese here, but they were very shy. They staid some time at this island, which is dry and barren: the only useful herb they found upon it was smallage, which they eat raw, and boiled in their soups, and kept the juice of it in bottles: this, with what other greens they found, were of infinite service to them that were afflicted with the scurvy. June 22, they anchored in a fine bay, which from its depth, they named No-bottom Bay. The 29th came a canoe with four Indians in it, viz. 2 men, a woman, and a boy. They were of a middle size, of a dark complexion, round broad faces, black short lank hair, without cloaths, except a piece of skin, to cover their middles. What seemed most worthy notice in them, was, a sort of a ring or streak round their wrists, of an azure, perfectly beautiful. Captain Clipperton ordered them some bread and cheese, tho' it was very scarce with us, of which they eat heartily, or rather greedily: then he offered them a dram of brandy, the smell of which proved to them disagreeable, and they would not be persuaded to taste it. These savages are extremely jealous of their wives; for, notwithstanding all that we could say to them, they would not permit the woman to come aboard. They brought us wild-ducks, and geese, for which we gave them knives. July 6, they buried the master gunner ashore, under a treble discharge of their small arms. At the head of his grave, they drove down a strong plank, on which were cut the following words: Mr. William

Pridham, gunner of the *Success*, died July 7, 1719, in this Streight, and lies buried here. On the 20th, captain Mitchell, and lieutenant Davison, went to Terra del Fuego, or the south shore, in order to discover the passage, thro' which, it is said, a French Tartan went in 1713, to seek for a good anchoring place beyond Cape Quad. They returned on the 29th, having found the passage; but it was so narrow, they thought it very dangerous to go far that way; yet they found several good bays to the north west of Cape Quad to anchor in. August 1, captain Mitchell, with three more officers, set off again in search of this new passage, but after strict examination could not be convinced that it led into the South Sea; therefore they resolved to pass thro' the Streights, which, with much danger and difficulty they did, being the whole time at short allowance. On the 18th they came into the South Seas, but in so weak a condition, it was impossible for them to attempt any thing immediately. Captain Clipperton resolving closely to pursue his instructions, steered for the island of Juan Fernandez, where he came to an anchor on the 7th of September, where he searched diligently in hopes of finding some marks of the *Speedwell's* having been here, as this was their last place of rendezvous; but all his enquiry proved fruitless. He therefore, pursuant to orders, determined to remain and cruise about the island for a month; then ordered an inscription to be cut in a remarkable tree, fronting the place where they landed, which was this: captain John W. Magee, 1719. This Mr. Magee was a surgeon on board the *Success*, and very well known to Mr. Shelvocke and all his ship's company. He then carried his sick men ashore, and used all possible means for their recovery; but found it very difficult to restore the sick to health, or to keep up the spirits of those who were well, without a drop of wine, brandy, or other strong liquor; being so dejected at the thoughts of not having a cordial. To pacify the ship's company, and hinder them from continually cursing captain Shelvocke, for running away with their liquors; captain Clipperton



Clipperton told them, he must now cruise alone, for it was his opinion, that the *Speedwell* was lost. One thing very extraordinary happened here, which was as follows; the agreeableness and fertility of this island, compared with the hazards and hardships they were sure to meet with in the South Seas, determined four of captain Clipperton's men to enter into a scheme to remain in so valuable a country: they accordingly ran away from the ship, and fled to the mountains: but it being very inconvenient to lose so many good hands, especially at this time, the captain used all possible means to recover them, but to no purpose. At last, the very day before the ship was to leave the place, he sent captain Mitchell, with other officers, in the pinnace to the east part of the island, to look for them, who had now been absent fourteen days, where they found that two of them were already secured by the goat-hunters. The prisoners confessed, that for the first five days, they were hard put to it, and lived chiefly on cabbages; but having by accident found some fire one night, which was left by the goat-hunters, they afterwards dressed their meat, and filled their bellies. October 7, they prepared to sail, when captain Mitchell went ashore again in the long boat, to set up a cross already prepared for the purpose, and at the foot of it he buried a bottle, into which a letter was put for captain Shelvocke, appointing another place of rendezvous, &c. October 8, in the morning, they weighed from the island Fernandez, and left the two men behind, who are to be considered as successors to governor Selkirk. From hence captain Clipperton steered north till he was in the parallel of Lima, intending to do something in the weak condition he was, having lost thirty men from the time he passed the equator, to that of his leaving the island of Juan Fernandez. His men now growing a little uneasy in respect of plunder, to clear up that point, he affixed the following paper to the main-mast, to which the whole ship's company assented.

1. The man who first sees a sail, proving a prize, to have five dollars for every ton she measures.

2. Every man on board a prize found drunk, or in any indecent act with a white or black woman, to be punished according to the nature of the offence.

3. Every man, of whatsoever degree, concealing any money, or other thing, above the value of half a dollar, shall forfeit his share of such prize, and 20 dollars out of his share in the next that shall be taken.

October 25, being in the latitude of Lima, they saw a sail, gave chase, and took her. She was their first prize, and no good omen of their future success, being a snow of forty tons, laden with sand and rubbish for Manure. All they could find in her worth any thing, was 2 jars of eggs, as much treacle, and 2 pieces of eight in ready money. The next day they met with a ship called the St. Vincent, of 150 tons, laden with wood from Guiaquil; on board which were two friers, sixteen Indians, and four negroes. The 30th they took a larger ship, called the Trinity, of 400 tons, bound from Panama to Lima; she had been taken ten years before by captain Rogers, when he plundered Guiaquil. She had many passengers aboard, and goods of a considerable value. November 2, they took another prize of 70 tons, on board which was the countess of Laguna, many other passengers, and a good sum of money, with 400 jars of wine and brandy, very much wanted. Captain Clipperton asked the lady if she pleased to remain aboard the prize, or to accept of such accommodations as he could provide for her in the Success. She chose the former, and the captain sent an officer of marines with a guard to protect her, and strict orders, that they should let nobody enter the cabin, but her own domestics. On the 12th, they discovered a London-built pink, at some distance, of 400 tons, bound from Panama to Lima with wood, of no use to them; but the captain kept her also. Her name was Rosario, and the master being a very artful fellow, soon saw captain Clipperton's error; readily guessed from the number of prizes he had taken, that he could  
not

not send many men on board his ship, and resolved to make an advantage of the mistake. Having about a dozen passengers aboard; he directed them to hide themselves in the hold, under the command of a French boatswain, with orders, on his making a signal, to seize all the English that came down, while he with the ship's crew would take care of the rest. As soon as the ship struck, captain Clipperton sent lieutenant Serjeantson, with eight men, to take possession; who as soon as he came aboard, ordered all that seemed to him to be seamen, Indians and negroes, into the great cabin, and placed a centinel at the door. The men now imagining all things secure, went down into the hold to see what was in the ship; upon which, the passengers that were concealed sallied out, and knocked most of them down; at the same time, the French boatswain came behind Mr. Serjeantson, knocked him down also, and then ordered them to be all bound: during this, the Spaniards in the great cabin secured the centinel. The ship being now recovered, the captain resolved to get ashore at all events, accordingly run his ship against the rocks, putting his own life, with the lives of all his company, in the utmost danger; then commanded all the Englishmen to be unbound, and by good luck, every soul got safe ashore. This done, he sent Mr. Serjeantson with all his men to Lima. The viceroy of Peru, was no sooner informed of this gallant action, than he ordered a new ship to be built at Guiaquil for the captain, to encourage others to behave in the same manner. When the prisoners arrived at Lima they were strictly examined, and one of them divulged every particular, how 2 men were left at Juan Fernandez, and a bottle with a letter in it for the Speedwell, &c. Upon this confession, a small ship was immediately sent for the 2 men and the bottle. On the 20th, as soon as captain Clipperton found his last prize was retaken, he began to consider what was fittest now to be done to prevent the ill effects, which might be reasonably apprehended from her crew's getting safe ashore. The next morning, therefore, he prudently determined to set all his

Spanish

Spanish prisoners at liberty, not only to save provisions, but to make their good usage more speedily known. On the 24th, they took another prize, named the *Ca-jetan*, of 200 tons, laden with wood from Panama to Lima. She had 40 negroes, and 30 Spaniards on board, mostly passengers. On the 27th they, with all their prizes, anchored at the island *La Plata*, where the captain began to consider how to dispose of his goods to the best advantage for his owners. He knew all the coast was alarmed, and that two men of war, one of 50, and another of 30 guns, were fitted out to take him, and that the goods would not be ransomed in this part of the world, therefore, pursuant to captain Rogers's proposal formerly, he resolved to send a cargo of them to *Brazil*. Accordingly he fitted out the bark, in which he took the countess of *Laguna*; mounted her with eight guns, put on board thirteen Englishmen and ten negroes, with all the provisions and necessaries he could spare, and called her the *Chickly*. In this vessel he put a cargo of European goods, to the value of 10,000 pounds. On the 27th she sailed for *Brazil*, under the command of captain *Mitchell*. As soon as she was gone, captain *Clipperton* resolving to get shut of his other prizes, presented them both to the Spaniards, after taking out what he thought valuable, keeping only the captain of one of them for his pilot. December 12, they saw a sail, and took her; she was called the *Rosario*, or *Rosary*, bound from *Cherippe* to *Panama*, laden with provisions: Having taken as much of these as they could well stow, they cut her main-mast by the board, and let her go. These prisoners informed the captain, that his men, who were taken by the Spaniards, were sent by land to *Lima*. The 17th, they came to an anchor in *Guanchaco* bay, where they found two ships, and fired a shot at each, but had no return. Sending on board, they found them both abandoned, and all the lading taking out, except a little bread, and a few jars of water. They hung out a flag of truce, and fired a gun in hopes some body would come to ransom them, and

and remained there till the next day; but finding it in vain to wait any longer, they set the Spanish ships on fire: after which, they resolved to bear away to the Gallapagos Islands for provisions, and, towards the latter end of the year, put their design in execution.

January 9, 1720, they anchored on the north side of the Duke of York's island, immediately under the equinoctial, where they found good water, careened their ships, and after ten days sailed to the northward. This intirely justifies captain Cowley, who has been accused by later writers of giving a fanciful account of these islands. On the 21st they made a sail, which struck, on their firing the first gun. She proved to be the Prince Eugene, bound for Panama, and had on board the Marquis de Villa Roche, with all his family. This was the very ship, in which captain Clipperton was taken in his last voyage to these parts; and tho' he was ill used by this Marquis, who now was his prisoner; he treated him with all imaginable civility. February 26, a Spaniard dying of a wound he had received at the taking this vessel, the Marquis desired they might bury him in their own way, which was granted, and performed thus: the corps was got ready and laid on a grating, with a large bag of ballast fastned to his feet, over which the office for the dead was performed; then it was thrown over-board, the Spaniards crying out, *Bon Viage*, that is, a good voyage: but what is most remarkable; the body continued floating as far as they could see it; which the Marquis concluded was an ill omen. March 8, the priest and boatswain of this prize, asked leave to go ashore on the island Velas, which was allowed; on condition they would prevail with the inhabitants, to drive some cattle towards them; they returned on the 16th with four head of cattle, some fowls, and some fruit, as a present to the Marquis from the governor; who declared he would not permit them to trade. They told him also, that captain Mitchell had been ashore there, and shot some cattle, but 200 armed men appearing, he was forced to retire, which seemed more probable, they having linen  
and

and cloaths which belonged to captain Michell's men in their hands. The following day some letters from the Marquis were intercepted, little suitable to that hour, to which the Spanish nobility pretend. He endeavoured to persuade the people, to surprize their men, and take off the boat when they came ashore for water. Upon this, the captain confined him for a few days; yet, on the 20th, he allowed the Marquis and his lady to go ashore, on leaving their child for a hostage. They soon returned with the governor; an agreement was made for their ransom, and the Marquis only was to remain as an hostage. The prize hereupon was soon delivered to the captain. In all these transactions captain Clipperton was imposed upon; for the nobleman basely forfeited his word, which provoked the crew to murmur against the captain for trusting him. April 20, they came to an anchor in the gulph of Amapala, where, not being able to water, they proceeded to the island of Tygers, where they got it with ease. June 4, they sailed to Gorgona, and took another prize on the 24th, which proved the St. Vincent, that they had taken once before. She was now laden with timber and cocoa nuts. August 11, they anchored, with their prize, at the island of Lobos de la Mar, where they cleaned their own ship, and took what was valuable out of the other.

While they lay here, murmurings and heart-burnings arose among the ship's company. At length a plot was formed to seize the captain, with all the other officers, and run away with the ship. However, this wicked design was discovered on the 6th of September, when two of the ring-leaders were severely punished; but all the rest pardon'd. On the 17th, they took a fishing boat, with a large quantity of salt fish well cured: but found the St. Vincent, which they left at anchor near the isle of Lobos, was sunk: hereupon they put 38 Spanish prisoners on board the fishing boat, and sent them away. November 1, they came into the bay of Conception, and from thence bore away for Coquimbo, and took a ship laden with tobacco, sugar, and

and cloth, in their passage. The 6th, in the evening, they opened that harbour, and saw there three men of war. The Success, as soon as she espied them, haled close on a wind, and the prize did the like; upon which the Spanish man of war that sailed best, gave them chace, and took the prize, in which they lost their 3d lieutenant, Mr. Milne, with twelve men. The captain of the Spanish man of war, who took her, was the famous Don Blas de Lesso, who was governor of Cathagena, when it was attacked by admiral Vernon. Don Blas, finding he had only retaken a Spanish prize, and missed the English privateer, was highly enraged, and struck Mr. Milne over the head, when he first came aboard, with the flat part of his sword; but when his passion was over, he sent for him up, and, on seeing him stripped by his men, ordered him a new suit of cloaths, asked his pardon, and kept him on board his ship for some time. He afterwards procured his liberty, paid his passage to Panama, gave him a jar of brandy, another of wine for his sea stores, put 200 pieces of eight in his pocket, and sent him to England. On the 16th they saw another sail, and gave chace, which after a few guns exchanged on both sides, sheered off; this was a second lucky escape; she being a ship of force, fitted out to take captain Shelvocke. These successive disappointments damped the spirits of the crew, and had an ill effect upon captain Clipperton, who now took to drinking; and as this vice usually grows upon unfortunate people, he was very seldom sober.

In this deplorable condition they resolved to cruise to the northward, not so much for the sake of plunder, as provisions; but met with very bad fortune. On the 17th, being in sight of St. Helena, they resolved to set the Spanish prisoners ashore, which were taken in their last prize; and to go once more to the Gallapagos, to refresh quietly, and raise the people's spirits. December 4, they lost Mr. Fairman, their purser, and the same day made the Gallapagos islands, in the latitude of 36 deg. north, but could discover no anchoring;

choring; so, unwilling to lose more time, they stood away for the island of Cocoas, and on the 17th had the good fortune to make it, being about nine leagues distant to the north west. This was a great comfort to them, as their men daily fell sick. On the 18th, they all went ashore as could be spared from the ship, with intention to erect a booth for the reception of their invalids, who, as soon as it was finished, were all carried thither. The Marquis of Villa Roche also went ashore. Here they found plenty of fish, fowl, eggs, cocoa-nuts, and other refreshments. Here also the captain tapped the last hoghead of brandy for the use of the ship's company, and allowed every man a dram every day. On New-year's-day he gave a gallon of strong beer to every mess; and, by having such plenty of good provisions, the sick began to grow better, and were soon able to wood and water, tho' with some difficulty, on account of a great swell constantly coming in from the north.

January 17, 1721, the captain prepared for sailing; but could not get his people aboard before the 20th, and then three Englishmen and eight negroes were missing. It is difficult to conceive what should induce the former to hazard themselves in a place so little frequented by ships, and so far distant from the continent; but, it must be attributed to their dread of future dangers and fatigues; or probably, to some promises, which the Marquis had made of sending a ship to bring them off when he got his liberty; but we have reason to doubt this was never performed. On the 25th they arrived on the coast of Mexico, and on seeing a sail sent their pinnace to give chase; to whom she struck. On the return of the pinnace, they were surprised to hear this was a Spanish ship called the *Jesu Maria*, now in the hands of captain Shelvocke, who himself commanded her, and the account he sent by her was this; that he had no more than forty of his men aboard, the rest being all dead; that he lost the *Speedwell* at Fernandez, where he staid five months, and built a bark out of the *Speedwell's* wreck, with which they put to



sea, and coasted along Chili and Peru, till they came to Pisco, near Lima, where they met with this prize, the very ship they looked after. On the 27th captain Shelvocke put out St. George's colours, and fired three guns, for a signal to speak with them; when the Success lay to for his boat, which brought a letter to captain Clipperton, who instantly sent back for the purser, to be examined with respect to their actions on the coast of Brasil and elsewhere. They sent away the boat, but kept Mr. Hendric the purser, who gave but a lame account of the treasure for the owners. At eight captain Shelvocke came aboard, being sent for by captain Clipperton and his agent. The boat also brought Mr. Dod, their lieutenant of marines, to stay in the Success; who asserted that he had been used ill, for espousing the owners interest, which captain Clipperton and his officers firmly believed. The ensuing day captain Shelvocke sent them on board six chests of pitch and dammer, two barrels of tar, and six slabs of copper. Captain Clipperton furnished him with 24 quarter-deck guns, some large shot, and a compass; but Mr. Hendric and Mr. Dod staid on board the Success, who still keeping to the northward, saw captain Shelvocke several times. On the 16th they made a sail, which proving to be him, they brought to, and captain Shelvocke with his officers came on board, where, in a general council, it was agreed to attempt the Manilla ship jointly, if they could meet with her, and if it should happen to be the biggest to run her on board at once. Accordingly they cruised for her; and on the 15th captain Clipperton held another consultation, in which fresh proposals were agreed upon, sign'd, and sent to captain Shelvocke, setting forth, that if he, and his crew, would refund all the money shared among themselves, and put it into the common stock, then both companies should unite, and continue to cruise for the Acapulco ship. This proposal was but coldly received by captain Shelvocke's people, who were not willing to part with what they had already got, and therefore returned no answer. Hereupon captain Clipperton, and

his people, resolved to manage their own affairs as well as they could, and without loss of time to proceed to the East Indies. In order to this, without consulting captain Shelvocke any more, they concluded to leave the South Seas, and make the best of their way to the island of Guam, which they performed in 53 days. In this passage they lost six people, and all the rest were sick and feeble. May 13, they anchored in the road, and sent their pinnace ashore with a flag of truce, to get provisions; but the people sent no answer, only, that without the governor's consent they could not trade with them. Applications were readily made to him for that purpose, which had now a favourable reception. Mr. Godfrey, one of the agents for the owners, went up to Umatta, where the governor resided; and on the 16th came back in one of their proes, intimating, that if they behaved civilly, and honestly, they should have provisions. Soon after, their own launch arrived, and brought on board cattle, fruit, sugar, brandy, greens, and bread; and on the 17th the governor sent them a present of palm-wine and brandy, with some chocolate: but this was the last act of civility that passed between them.

May 18, their prisoner the Marquis de Villa Roche went ashore, in company with the agent, the lieutenant and doctor, having agreed with the governor for his ransom. Our launch was busied for near a week, in fetching wood, water, and provisions aboard, during which time, the governor desired some arms and ammunition in exchange. Hereupon, captain Clipperton sent him a dozen fuses, 3 jars of powder, sixty round shot, four pair of pistols, with cutlasses, long swords, and daggers. The 26th they received a letter, in which the governor demanded all the Marquis's jewels, some consecrated plate, and two negroes, besides some subjects of the king of Spain; also a certificate sign'd by the captain and his officers, that peace was proclaimed, keeping Mr. Godfrey and Mr. Pritty till this was done. The captain sent a letter with a certificate, that the captain of their last prize told them that there was a peace

peace between Spain and England, but withal, assured the governor, that if he did not send the ransom, with the two gentlemen, in twenty-four hours, he would lay all the houses on the shore in ruins, burn the ship in the harbour, and do all the mischief he was able on the Philippine islands. Soon after the governor, by another letter, desired more ammunition, which the captain refused, and without staying for any answer, sent the pinnace a-head to sound, and made all the haste he could to the ship in the harbour. During this sham treaty the people raised a battery, and began to fire at their pinnace, which being returned, taught them to know, that the channel they found was within pistol shot of the shore. About six in the afternoon, making up to the ship, they ran aground. At nine they got foul of the rocks, and were forced to cut away two anchors, in getting the ship off; while the enemy, from a new battery erected on a hill, fired upon them continually with stones and shot, whereby their hull and rigging suffered extremely. They also lost their first lieutenant Mr. Davison, and had three men wounded. In this emergency, the captain, overcome with liquor, was in no wise capable of commanding the ship; the officers resolving to get clear of the enemy, signed a paper to indemnify Mr. Cooke, if he would take upon him the command, who with much difficulty got the ship afloat, after having stood a fair mark for the enemy to fire at no less than 50 hours; in which time they lost both their bow anchors and cables, the stern and kedge anchors, four hawsers, four of the lower-deck guns, and nineteen barrels of powder; had four men killed, and six wounded. At ten in the afternoon they began to splice their rigging, not a rope having escaped a shot; while the carpenters worked all night to stop the holes in the bottom, &c. Next day, at seven in the morning, they stowed their guns in the holdbar in the ports, hoisted in their launch and pinnace, and at noon steered away west, being under great concern for Mr. Godfrey and Mr. Pritty, not knowing how they might be used. At six in the

afternoon the island of Guam bore east seven leagues, from whence they took their departure, 13 deg. 20 min. north latitude, allowing half a point north east variation, proceeding to China.

They now entered upon a very dangerous voyage, and on the 23d of June, after strict examination, found their ship in a very bad condition. The 24th, they got sight of the Bashee islands, and on the 31st saw the island shoals of Prata: July 1, they fell in with other islands, and found several fishing boats, tho' no such are mentioned in any charts; so being unable to form any judgment of their true course, they anchored under one of them, and sent their pinnace for intelligence how Macao bore from them. The pinnace returned the next day, and brought with them three Chinese sailors. All they could learn from them, not understanding their language, was, that Canton lay to the south west; thus not being able to get a pilot, they resolved to sail for Amoy. Here they saw abundance of snakes, which were brought down by the rivers that empty themselves on that coast. The entrance of the port of Amoy is very remarkable, having a high mountain, and on the top of it a tower, which is to be seen 20 leagues off at sea, and a little island lies immediately before the bay. July 6, they were highly pleased to find themselves once more in a place where they might hope for refreshments, and be in a condition to repair their ship.

They no sooner anchored, than they were visited by ten custom-house officers; the customs being under the direction of a single Mandarin, called the hoppo. The first thing they demanded, was, what the ship was reputed to be, and what business she had there. Captain Clipperton answered, that the ship belonged to the king of Great Britain, and was driven in by stress of weather, in order to procure provisions, and other necessaries. Their next demand was, an exact account of their men and guns, their cargo, and the time they intended to stay; all which they put down in writing, and went away. The next morning the men mutinied,  
and

and insisted the captain should pay them their prize money that instant, because they were fully convinced the *Succes* was not in a condition to put to sea again; so that here was now an end of all regular proceedings. The people brought aboard a good quantity of rice, with some cattle, fowls, wood, and water, for which they were paid. On the 12th the officers went to wait on the hoppo, who treated them civilly, gave them leave to anchor in the harbour, and stay there till morning, for which he demanded and received a very large compensation, under the term of port charges, amounting to 400 l. sterling. After this, all things fell into confusion; the men would not work till they were paid their prize money; and to shew they had no more regard for the credit of their own country, than respect for their officer, they applied to the chief Mandarin of the town, whom the Chinese call Hihung, and begged, he would do them justice against their captain. He immediately summoned Mr. Clipperton before him, to shew cause why he refused to give his men satisfaction. The captain produced the articles, setting forth that they were not to have any share of the prize money till they came to London; but captain Cooke, for so he was now called, gave another account of the case in favour of the men. This evidence caused a guard of soldiers to be sent aboard, and a peremptory order to the captain to settle the shares immediately, and pay the men; with which he was obliged to comply.

September 16 this dividend was made, pursuant to the Mandarin's order, and without allowing any thing for those who were taken prisoners, the assigns of the deceased, or the 2 gentlemen who came aboard from the *Speedwell*, the account stood as follows.

	dollars.
The share of money and plate — — —	280
The share of gold — — — — —	100
The share of jewels — — — — —	89
<hr/>	
The total of a foremast man's dividend — —	419
	Which,

	l.	s.	d.
Which, at 4 s. 8 d. a dollar, make }			
English money — — — — }	97	15	4
According to this distribution, the cap- }			
tain's share was — — — — }	1466	10	0
The second captain — — — —	733	15	0
The captain of marines, lieutenants of }			
the ship, and surgeons — — — }	488	16	8

But, notwithstanding captain Cooke, and his adherents, had the good luck to carry their point, yet captain Clipperton's defence, had so much weight with the principal Mandarin, that, before he obliged him to pay their shares, he ordered one half of the cargo to be secured for the owners, which amounted to near 7000 l. sterling, and was caused immediately to be put on board a Portuguese East Indiaman, called the *Queen of Angels*, Don Francisco la Vero commander; which ship was unfortunately burnt near the coast of Brasil June 6, 1722; so that the owners received, no more of these effects, the charges of salvage deducted, than 1800 l. The reader will readily observe, that there is an odd mixture of justice and violence in the conduct of the Chinese Mandarin, with respect to captain Clipperton and his people; for this reason I presume, it will not be unacceptable to him, to be informed, that the chief Mandarins, and all the people of Amoy, have, for some ages past, amongst their own countrymen, who certainly know them best, acquired to their port the epithet of *Hiamuin Booz*, that is, Amoy the knavish. The fishermen on the coast shake their heads, and pronounce these words with an emphasis, when they meet with an European ship bound for that port.

On the 30th of September they left the bay of Amoy, in order to make sail to Macao, in the road of which they anchored October 4. As soon as the *Success* entered this port, they saluted the fortrefs. The compliment being returned, the captain went ashore, and finding in the place the captain of the Portuguese man of war, that undertook to carry what belonged to the owners

to

to Brazil ; he absolutely declared in favour of the commander ; therefore Mr. Cooke, and another gentleman, proposed going to Canton, to consult Mr. Winder, the son of one of the proprietors, about what course should be taken, with regard to the Success, in carrying her home. On their return, the ship was surveyed, and sold for 4000 dollars, which was little more than half what she was worth ; but for this captain Clipperton was not in the least to blame : however, to shew, that he still persisted in his former opinion, he agreed with the persons who had purchased her, for his passage in her to Batavia ; from whence he procured a passage home in a Dutch East India ship, and arrived in the beginning of June 1722 at Galway in Ireland ; where he died, with a broken heart, about a week after his arrival, with his own family, that was left during this voyage in that kingdom. The rest of the ship's company returned as opportunity offered ; but, as to captain Mitchell, who was sent to Brazil with a small crew ; he was never more heard off, and either went to the bottom, fell into the hands of the Spaniards, or, what is still more probable, was destroyed on the island of Velas, where he went ashore for provisions.

## C H A P. XX.

*Captain George Shelvocke's voyage round the world,  
from his own account.*

**H**A V I N G, in the former voyage, set forth the burden and force of this gentleman's vessel, and also the names of his principal officers ; there needs no more to be said on that head. February 13, 1719, we sailed, says captain Shelvocke, from Plymouth, in the Speedwell, in company with the Success, captain Clipperton ; but kept together no longer than the 19th, when, between nine and ten at night, a violent storm of wind came from the north west, which obliged us to  
take

take in our topsails. The storm encreasing, and we being sore pressed, I haled up my foresail under the lee of the *Succes*; hereupon the *Succes* made a signal for bringing to; but we were not able to suffer one knot of canvas all night. About midnight, a sea drove in one of our quarters, also one of our stern dead lights, and we took in great quantities of water before we could stop them, being in continual danger of foundering. We could neither get the ship before the wind, nor work the pumps upon deck, and having a succession of prodigious seas, none could stand on their legs. Under these melancholy circumstances, the only thing we could have recourse to, was the chain-pump, by which, and the hand of providence, we were delivered from impending destruction. On the 20th, we lost sight of the *Succes*, nor could we see any other vessel, so we set our sails double-reefed, and stood to the north west. In the morning our helm-coat was washed away, and we did not secure it again without great difficulty. The ship's company was so terrified at this storm, that they determined to bear away for England. I endeavoured to appease them by reason, and good words; but in spite of all I could say, they persisted in their resolution. At length, having recourse to my officers, they came upon quarter deck, well armed, and seeming resolute, the spirits of the mutineers were damped, and they all returned to their duty; except two or three stubborn fellows, whom I sent to the geers; but the crew interposing, and they promising to amend their conduct for the future, obtained their pardon.

We now made the best of our way to the Canaries, which was the first place of rendezvous, met several ships in our passage, and strictly enquired after our consort, but could hear nothing of her. March 17, we arrived at the Canaries, cruised there the time appointed by our instructions, and took a small prize of sixteen tons, with some salt, and a little wine on board. The next place I thought of going to was the Cape Verde islands, in hopes we might, amongst them, hear something of captain Clipperton. On the 14th we came



came into the road of the isle of May, where we saw a wreck, and an English ensign, near which was a great smoke on the land. We stood in for information; a boat came off, and told us, that it was the Vanzitern Indiaman, captain Hide, who had the ill fortune to run ashore three weeks before. Here I was in hopes of supplying myself with what necessaries I wanted, but able to get nothing more than three sheathing-boards, and a few tons of salt. Not long before we arrived here, my gunner, named Turner Stevens, with great gravity, proposed to me, and the other officers, cruising in the Red Sea; "For Gentlemen (said he) there is no harm in plundering those Mahometans; but the poor Spaniards are good Christians, and doubtless it would be a sin to injure them." I ordered him to be confined, when he threatened to blow up the ship: for these, and many other reasons, I discharged him at his own request. I also left my chief-mate on this place, at his desire; he having been guilty of many misdemeanors. On the 18th we left the isle of May, and the same day got into the road of Porto Praya, on the island of St. Jago, which is the chief of the Cape de Verdes. Here I met with many fair promises from the head officers, but could get nothing more than a small quantity of provisions. Here also I sold our little prize to the governor, for 150 dollars; but finding there was no depending upon the Portuguese officers, I determined to go to the isle of St. Catharine's, on the coast of Brasil, in 20 deg. 30 min. south latitude. We sailed from St. Jago the 20th, and had a very bad passage, being 21 days before we crossed the equinoctial, having the most uncertain weather imaginable. We were 55 days in going to St. Catharine's, and met with nothing remarkable, except that on the 4th of June we made Cape Frio, bearing distance seven leagues, at 23 deg. 41 min. south latitude; and on the 5th saw a ship, which proved to be a Portuguese, from Rio Janeiro, bound for Pernambuco.

On the 23d of June we anchored before the island of St. Catharine, to come to which place, you must continue to sail in the channel between the island and the  
con-

continent, till you come near two small islands, which as yet are nameless. Over against the northermost of these is the watering-place, at the entrance of a small salt-water-creek; opposite to these, you may come to six or seven fathom very safely, the bottom being a grey sand. Here, says captain Shelvocke, I sent the carpenter ashore, with such hands as could be useful to him, for felling timber, and sawing it into planks. In the mean time the inhabitants came off every day with fresh provisions. Thus we preserved our sea-stores while we staid in this island; which is about eight leagues and a half long, and two broad; but the channel between the island and the continent is not above half a mile wide. It is all over covered with inaccessible wood, and the plantations excepted, there is not a clear spot in it. The smallest isle about it abounds with a vast variety of trees and underbrush of briars, thorns, and brambles, which prevent any access. In brief, the whole continent of Brasil may be termed a vast wilderness. The sassafras grows here so common, that we laid in a good quantity of it for fire-wood. Here are plenty of oranges, both China and Seville, with lemons, citrons, limes, bananas, palm, cabbage, melons, and potatoes. They have the sugar-cane very good, but cannot make it for want of utensils, so that rum and molosses are very dear. The woods are full of parrots, which, tho' there be hundreds in a flock, are observed always to fly in pairs. Here are also variety of other birds, curious in colour, and peculiar in shape; particularly one about the size of a fieldfare, which has a spear in the joint of each wing. The flamingoes are seen here in great numbers, of a fine scarlet, and appear very beautiful when flying: they are about the bigness of a heron, and shaped like them. They have also abundance of very good fish of various kinds; as also delicious oysters. Among the rocks by the sea side you find what is called the sea-egg; its outward form is like a dock-bur, only these are four times as large, and of a purple colour. Within they are divided into partitions like oranges, each of which contains a yellow substance, which, in my opinion, if eaten raw, exceeds

exceeds all the shell-fish I ever tasted. On the Savannahs of Areziliba, on the continent, opposite the southernmost part of St. Catharine's, are great numbers of black cattle, which we were supplied with at a reasonable rate. They are here much infested with tygers, and forced to keep a number of dogs to destroy them, and I have been informed that a tyger has killed eight or ten dogs in one night.

July 2, while we lay here, we saw a great ship at anchor under Parrots Island. Upon which, I sent my launch, well armed, under the command of a lieutenant, to know what she was, strictly enjoining him not to go aboard. About noon the launch returned, and the officer told me she was the *Ruby*, formerly an English man of war, but now of Martinet's squadron, and commanded by M. la Jonquiere; that most of their crew were French, and their number 420, having quitted the South Seas, on a report of a rupture between France and Spain. Soon after I was informed, that lieutenant Hatley whom I sent to her, had plundered the Portuguese captain from Rio Janeiro, whom we met with off Cape Frio, of 100 moidores, and had given part of them among his crew to engage them to secrecy. I examined very strictly into the affair, with design, if I had found him guilty, to have left him in the hands of the captain of the Portuguese island; but not being able to get sufficient proof, all I could do, was, to protest against him, which protest I delivered to captain Clipperton in the South Seas.

July 6, the French captain, with some of his officers and passengers, came to dine with me; when Mr. Hudson, my boatswain, raised a mutiny, which was quelled by my French guests. When all was over, M. la Jonquiere talked to them very handsomely on the madness of their conduct, which worked a very good effect; for the next day they all appeared very submissive, and laid the whole blame upon the boatswain, who excused himself, by saying he was drunk and mad, begging of me to let him go home in the *Ruby*. To this his request I readily consented, know-  
Z
ing

ing him to be a dangerous fellow. On the 15th we saw a large ship lying in the harbour's mouth, which, as soon as they saw us, turned out again; this filled M. la Jonquiere with such doubts, that he resolved to put to sea, and when night came weighed, fell down the harbour, and saluted me with five guns at his departure. Three Frenchmen belonging to me went away with Hudson; but I had two Frenchmen, and one Morpew an Irishman, in lieu of them. On the 25th, the large ship appeared again under French colours. She was called the *Wife Solomon* of St. Malo, commanded by M. Dumain Girard, bound for the coast of Chili and Peru to trade. Soon after my men mutined, by the advice of one Matthew Stuart, who was chief mate, with respect to the prize-money, and drew up a paper, to which they had all put their hands, containing articles relating to plunder, and insisting on its being made the rule of our voyage: they likewise drew up a letter of attorney to this Matthew Stewart, and sent him to solicit my consent to their demands. After mature deliberation, both I and my chief officers thought it adviseable to sign, rather than suffer them to run away with the ship. At this they expressed great satisfaction; and promised they would be always ready to hazard their lives in any undertaking I should think conducive to the interest of the owners and ourselves.

August 3, there came in the *Francisco Xavier*, a Portuguese man of war, of 40 guns and 300 men, from Lisbon, bound for Macao in China, commanded by captain Riviere. I doubted not but this gentleman would be informed of captain Hatley's affair, and therefore told him, I expected he would go and vindicate himself to the Portuguese officer; to which he replied, I will. To give him the better opportunity of doing it, I sent a compliment to that gentleman, to whom he acquitted himself so well, as to give full satisfaction. On the 6th, three of my men deserted, and on hearing they were gone to our tents, I sent one of my mates in the pinnace after them, ordering him  
to

to go no further; but to return as soon as possible, for I was heaving my anchor; but he missing them at the place, went up two leagues higher to the Portuguese plantation. It being about midnight, the inhabitants thought it was Hatley, who had used them ill before, and suffered him, with the rest to go to their houses, and search for those they wanted; but my men suspecting mischief, made the best of their way to the boat. In the interim, some Portuguese had placed themselves in ambuscade to kill them. They no sooner got into the boat, than they heard them rushing from the woods, and hooting out, kill the dogs! kill all the English dogs! then they fired a volley of small shot, and wounded three of them, two thro' the thighs, and one thro' the arm. This accident obliged me to weigh again next morning, to return into the road, and endeavour to punish those who had been concerned in this barbarity. Hereupon, I sent a letter to the captain of the Portuguese man of war, by Mr Hatley. At his entrance into the ship, he was violently assaulted by the captain of the island, saying, this is the rogue who burnt one of our houses, and reproached me with the name of Querno, that is, cuckold. He would have murdered him, and the boats crew, very probably, had not the captain, and his officers interposed. The Portuguese captain wrote me a letter, to excuse this insult, and to invite me aboard, where I was kindly received, 11 guns being fired at parting. The next day he and his chief officers came to breakfast with me.

August 9, we took our departure from the northernmost part of St. Catharine's, in 27 deg. 20 min. latitude, and 50 deg. longitude west from the Lizard; from which time till the 13th of November we had a very rough sea, extreme cold weather, and bleak westerly winds. On the 15th, we saw the coast of Chili, and here fell into fresh difficulties. Our tedious passage occasioned an extraordinary consumption of provisions, so that every body saw the necessity of repairing to some place where we might supply ourselves with what was wanting. I thought first of Narborough

island, but when we came thither we found the road so dangerous, that I was obliged to make for the mouth of St. Domingo river on the continent; at the entrance of which, we came to 28 fathom water, but as we went forward, found it shoal from 18 to 5 fathom, or less; therefore I instantly stood to sea again, and meeting with windy thick weather, we were driven farther to the north than we expected. In this distress, a Frenchman I had on board, proposed going to the island Chiloe, which lay a little to the northward, assuring us, from his own knowledge, we might be there accommodated with whatever we wanted. He having been there before, farther informed us, that the towns of Chacao, and Calibuco, the former on the island, and the latter on the continent, were rich places; that the governor resided at the first, and at the other was a college of Jesuits, where were considerable magazines, always well stored with all sorts of provisions. On the 30th we came into the channel which divides the island of Chiloe from the continent of Chili, and stood in for the harbour under French colours, with design to attack the towns of Chacao and Calibuco; but when we came into the channel, my pilot seemed to know no more of it than myself, and the wind beginning to blow fresh, and thick fogs coming on, in the morning, I anchored between the point of Carelambo, and a little island named Pedro Nunez; soon after we had come to windward, the tide running out with such rapidity, and the wind encreasing, caused the channel to look like one entire breach. At the same time the ship laid a vast strain on her cable, which parted at 2 in the afternoon. No hopes were left for recovering the anchor; for the buoy had been staved and sunk some time before; we were thus forcibly set a drift. I did not think it prudent to venture a second anchor, and therefore immediately crossed the channel for Chiloe, in a hard gale, hazy weather, incircled with seeming shoals, and bewildered in an unknown navigation. When we came within a mile of Chiloe, we passed by two convenient bays, and yet no town appeared.

appeared. At length we came about a point of land, which may be known by a high rock like a pyramid that almost joins to it. Having weathered this point, I found we were intirely out of the tide, and commodiously defended from all inconveniences. We anchored opposite a cross, which was fixed on the north side of the harbour, having just light enough to retreat from the dangers we might have been subject to of rapid tides, unfrequented channels, and bad weather. The more effectually to accomplish my design, I the next morning sent the lieutenant in my pinnace, well manned and armed, to look for these two towns: at that very time captain Hatley went in the launch, to find a watering place, who soon returned with an Indian, who had shewn him as proper a place as he could desire, where, without any great trouble, wood and water might be had, and that too, within reach of our cannon. Upon this, I put some hands into the launch, with casks to be filled, and people to cut wood, all armed, with an officer of marines, and ten men to guard them. The Indian gave us hopes of a sufficient supply; but on his returning again to my people ashore in the evening, he acquainted them, that the country was enjoined not to bring to us any thing. The pinnace not yet returning, this intelligence caused me to fear they had been intercepted by the enemy, and by that means had learned who we were, which put me into a state of uncertainty, and I knew not how to act. In this confusion of mind, on the 3d of December, a Spanish officer, in a boat rowed by eight Indians, came on board from the governor. As I intended to pass upon him for a French captain, who was well known in these seas by name. I commanded all those of my people who could not speak French or Spanish, not to appear upon deck. As he drew near, I hoisted French colours; when he came aboard I told him the ship's name was the *St Rose*, homeward bound, that my name was *Janes le Breton*, and that all my business here was, to beg the governor to let us have some provisions. The officer heard me attentively, seemed to yield an implicit faith to all I said, and staid on board

all night. On the 5th in the morning two armed boats lay towards us, which having taken a view of us, sheered off to a little island at the bottom of the harbour. I therefore ordered all my men to put on grenadiers caps, to stand upon deck, and appear as terrible as possible. On the 6th we saw a white flag ashore, I instantly sent away my launch, completely manned, to the place where the flag appeared; but they found nobody to treat with, nor any thing there, but a letter which was tied to the flag, with a dozen hams lying by. The letter was from the governor of the island, intimating that he much doubted whether the ship was the *St. Rose*, then complained of the people in the pinnace, and lastly, desired I would quit the coast. To this letter I sent an answer; and the next morning the flag was hoisted again. On sending thither, I received an answer, in civil terms indeed; but at the same time absolutely refusing me any refreshments, and insisting that I should restore the Indians taken by my pinnace, of which fact I knew less than he did. As I was now in despair of ever seeing my people again, at a loss to know how, or where Chacao was situated, and wasting my time in coming hither for provisions, where none could be obtained, I resolved to change my stile, and wrote the governor a smart letter, in which I told him I wanted refreshments, and was determined to have some by force, if I could not come at them otherwise; adding, in order to strike terror, that all the forces in his country should not deter me from prosecuting my design, which letter was conveyed as before. The next day I sent Mr. Brooks, my first lieutenant, in the launch, compleatly armed, and ordered him to bring what provisions he could meet with. Soon after he was gone, a boat from the governor appeared, signifying, that, if I would send my officer to Chacao, he was willing to treat with me. To this I answered I would treat no where but on board my own ship; and also let him know, that it was now too late, I having already dispatched my people to take all they could meet with. In the evening the launch came back; and brought with her a large piragua,



piragua, which she had taken. They were both laden with sheep, hogs, fowls, barley, green peas, and beans, and presently after came the pinnace, with all her crew; but so terrified, that I had little hopes of soon making them fit for service. The officer said he had fought his way through a number of canoes filled with armed Indians, and that he got clear, by making his passage round the island, which was seventy leagues. By this dastardly management of theirs, I lost an opportunity of reducing the town of Chacao; for if the pinnace had returned directly, (there being but one boat of unarmed Indians and a Spanish serjeant to oppose them, which last came off to them without the least shew of violence) I might have attacked the town in 24 hours after my arrival; when they were quite unprovided; whereas now, after a week, they had 1000 Spaniards in arms, on the island. My Frenchman was of the same opinion, but said as things had happened, if I would let them alone in the city, I might do what I would in the country, where the poor Indians were to sit down by their losses. I therefore kept my boats continually employed in bringing provisions from the Indian plantations and farms, and by the 16th we had our decks full of live cattle, poultry, &c. and such quantities of wheat, barley, potatoes, and Indian corn, that on a moderate computation, we had added four months provisions to the stock we brought from England; so that being very well satisfied with the effects of staying here, I prepared for my departure.

Chiloe is the first settlement of the Spanish possessions on the coast of Chili; and tho' it affords neither silver nor gold, is by them considered a place of great importance. The body of the island lies in 42 deg. 40 min. south latitude, is 30 leagues in length, and about 7 in breadth, watered by several rivers, and producing many useful trees. The great number of Indian farms and plantations which are dispersed at a small distance from one another, among the woods on rising ground, afford an agreeable prospect. Within it is formed an archipelago, containing more islands than are well known; the least of which are said to have

have many inhabitants. Among these are such very uncertain tides, and violent currents, that it is not safe to venture near. I would advise all strangers who go in at the north end to keep the island side of the channel aboard, giving the south point of Chiloe a good birth; this done, run along shore to the southward, and you will pass by two bays, which seem commodious, but hold your way till you come to a point, near which is a high rock, resembling a pyramid; go between this rock and a small high island, and run a little way up the harbour, which looks like the entrance of a river, and you will have a safe port to drop your anchor. The soil is fruitful, and produces all sorts of European fruits, and grains; together with pasture lands, where they graze abundance of cattle, particularly sheep. The air is wholesome, but the winter season is very cold. They have abundance of middle-sized horses, also a creature which they call guanacoes, that is, country sheep, in shape like a camel, and some of them six feet high. Their wool, or rather hair, is very fine, their necks are long, and they move with a slow stately pace. These are of great use at the mines of Peru, in carrying the ore, &c. Their flesh is very coarse, as we experienced. Here are also European sheep, and hogs in great numbers, but they are not overstocked with black cattle. Here is no want of fowl, either tame or wild; of the latter, several sorts peculiar to the country; and in particular a sort of little geese, which are found on the banks of their rivers, of a beautiful white, and very agreeable eating. They carry on a small woollen manufacture here, consisting of carpets, and wearing apparel. They also export cedar, both in plank, and wrought in boxes, chests, escrutores, &c. with which they supply all Chili and Peru.

Our business here being now over, I proposed to sail for the island of Juan Fernandez, as my instructions directed; but the ship's company were unluckily possessed with an opinion of first making a short trip to the bay of Concepcion, where they might certainly make their fortunes; the Frenchman having filled their heads with these notions, I was obliged to comply. In our way

way to Conception, we made the islands of Mocha and St. Mary on December 23, and the same evening arrived in the bay of Conception. We could not be certain we saw any ship in the road; I, therefore, immediately gave orders to man and arm our boats, to go up in the night, and surprise whatever ships happened to be there, strictly enjoining them, if they found any thing too strong, to prevent such from sending any thing ashore, till I came up; which I endeavoured all night, but in vain. At day-light I could see nothing above us. About noon captain Hatley returned, and told me that he had taken a ship, called the *Salidad d' Auday*, which was the only one there. She was about 150 tons, lately come from Baldivia, with some cedar planks; that there was no body on board her but the boatswain, an old negro, and two Indian boys; that he had left Mr. Brooks, the first lieutenant, in possession of her, with orders to bring her down the first opportunity. In his return to the ship he took a small vessel of 25 tons, near the island Curiquice, where she had been to take in pears, cherries, and other fruit, for the Conception market. This vessel belonged to a priest, who had been gathering fruits, and was made a prisoner in her, for being too curious; and in coming too near, to find out who my people were. Thus his cargo, with five Indians fell into our hands. Soon after I saw, by the help of my glass, another small boat pass within less than pistol-shot of my pinnace, but Mr. Hatley did not engage her; saying, for excuse, that he did not mind her, tho' his boat's crew, all agreed she was full of men. On the 26th at noon, Mr. Brooks brought away the ship they had taken, and came to an anchor about half a mile short of us. The boatswain of her had not been with us above two hours, before he informed us of a vessel laden with wine, brandy, &c. bound for Chiloe, lying at anchor about two leagues to the north. I ordered Mr. Randal, second lieutenant, and the boatswain of the *Solidad*, with 25 men, to go thither in the *Mercury*, as we called the fruit-bark, with positive orders not to go ashore, or make any fruitless attempt: but

but next morning they returned with the following dismal story. "They went into the bay, and found the vessel haled dry ashore; when they came up to her they found her empty, but on seeing a little house near, they were of opinion the cargo was lodged there; so the officer ordered the men up, with nobody to head them; thus, without order, every one endeavoured to get foremost, but their career was soon stopped, for they no sooner got upon the bank, than the enemy fell furiously upon them, took five of them prisoners, and one was shot through the thigh." These misfortunes made my crew extremely uneasy, and bad consequences, very probably, would have followed, had not, when we least expected it, a large ship come into the harbour, without the least apprehension of danger. The launch was immediately manned to prevent their going ashore. As soon as she approached near enough, I hailed her, but she returning no answer, I fired into her, and ordered the launch to put off directly. Just as I was going to slip the cable, the launch came up with her, and gave her a volley of small shot. They that instant came to, and called for quarter. It was two o'clock in the morning before my boat came back to inform me about her, when they brought with them the Spanish captain, and some of the chief passengers. The ship was called the *St. Fermin* belonging to, and coming from Callaca, of 300 tons; but had a very small cargo, consisting of sugar, molasses, coarse French linen, rice, some cloths and bays of Quito, a small quantity of chocolate, with 6000 dollars in money, and wrought plate. I dispatched Mr. Hendry, the owner's agent, in the *Mercury* to take an account of her lading, and to send every thing that was valuable on board. In the mean time, Don Francisco Larragan, captain of the *St. Fermin*, desired he might ransom the ship. I consented, and gave him leave to go to Conception, in his own launch, with a merchant that was a prisoner to raise the money. On the 30th a boat came aboard from the governor with a flag of truce, and an officer with a present of seven jars of wine, and a letter demanding the

the sight of my commission, and me to send ashore Joseph de la Fontaine, who had been servant to captain la Jonquiere's mate. In short, I resolved to send captain Betagh, to treat by word of mouth, and at last a formal treaty was begun. I demanded 16,000 dollars for the ransom of the St. Fermin. They offered 12,000 for the ship and bark. While we were bargaining about the ransom, the governor was drawing together a body of men to make an attempt upon us. Now finding all his Spanish puncto was only to entrap us; I first set fire to the Solidad, and then to the St. Fermin.

January 7, 1720, I sailed, says the captain, to Juan Fernandez. On the 9th the plunder of the prize was sold at the mast, at very high prizes, and came to ten pieces of eight per man. On the 11th the body of that island bore W. S. W. distant five leagues. Till the 15th I stood off and on the shore for my boats, who were a fishing, and had hitherto discovered no marks of captain Clipperton's being here. At length, going ashore, some of my men accidentally saw the word Magee, the name of Clipperton's surgeon, with captain John under it, cut upon a tree, but no directions to me, as was agreed on. His actions being thus grossly repugnant to his instructions, it appeared clear to me, that he never meant I shou'd join him again. February 5, I dispatched Mr. Brooks in the Mercury, to see if there were any shipping at Arica. The next day I had sight of the head-land of Arica and the island Guana, with a ship at anchor on the north side of it, and the Mercury standing out of the bay. I made all possible haste to get up with her, and when we came into the port, found the ship had been already taken, and that the Mercury was adrift by accident. This prize was the Rosario of 100 tons, laden with cormorants dung, of which the Spaniards make great profit, and use it to manure their land in the vale of Arica. In this vessel there was not one white face, except the pilot; I therefore resolved to send ashore to see if the owners would ransom her, the cargo being of value to them, tho' of no use to us. Next morning I received a letter from the owner

owner signed Miguel Diez Gonzales. He pleaded poverty, and of having a large family to provide for, but promised to meet us at Hilo, or at Quaco. Soon after we took a small vessel, laden with dried fish, and guana, lying within a mile of the town. The next night the merchant who had before wrote to me about the ship's ransom, brought the sum agreed for, viz, 1300 dollars weight in ingots of virgin-silver, and the rest in pieces of eight. This gentleman made great enquiry after English commodities, complaining, that they were furnished only with paltry things from the French, for which they ran away with millions. He asked if the English merchants were asleep, or grown too wealthy, since notwithstanding their ports were not so open as in many other parts of the world, they knew how to manage those matters well enough; and that it was no difficult thing to make their governors act obligingly. Before he took his leave, he desired me to carry his ship to sea with me two or three leagues and turn her adrift, with intent, I suppose to deceive the governor, and the king's officers.

As soon as I got out of the road of Arica, says captain Shelvocke, I shaped my course for Hilo, and got sight of it in the afternoon, where a large ship, and three small ones, lay at anchor. The great ship, instantly hoisted French colours, and proved to be the *Wife Solomon*, of 40 guns, captain Dumain commander, who resolved to prevent my coming in. It being dark, I sent Mr. De la Porte; my third lieutenant, who was a Frenchman, to acquaint him who we were. On his entering the ship, they called him renegade, tumbled him out again, and sent me word that if I offered to anchor there, they would sink me. Upon this, Mr. De la Porte, informed me, that, to his knowledge, the French ships had often taken Spanish commissions, at such times as there were English cruizers on the coast, and farther, that his ship was double manned with the inhabitants of the town, who were partly French, and that he would be with us speedily. While we were talking, they fired several guns at us, which

which heated me not a little. My first design was to turn the *Mercury* into a fire ship; and have roasted him for his insolence. But reflecting upon the posture of affairs at home, and fearing my conduct might be called in question afterwards, I thought it best to stand out of the harbour.

February 2, the money taken at Arica was divided among the ship's company. On the 22d we found ourselves in the height of Calao, which is the port of Lima. On the 26th the officers in the *Mercury* sent to be relieved. I spoke to captain Hatley, whose turn it was to command her, and as he had been long a prisoner among the Spaniards, travelled from Lima to Payta by land, and there observed several rich towns; it entered into his head, that something might be done, by cruising along that coast, as far as the island of Lobos. I naturally approved of this proposal, because it was more than probable, they might meet with some of the Panama ships, which always fall in with the land, to take the advantage of the land winds. All the ship's company likewise seemed highly delighted with this project. I, therefore, augmented their complement of men, put a month's provision on board, mounted two quarter decks on her, lent captain Hatley my pinnace, and gave him a copy of my instructions. As soon as he was ready to depart, captain Betagh, whose turn it was to relieve the marine officer in the *Mercury*, went among the people with a frightful look, telling them, that he, and the rest who were to accompany him, were sent for a sacrifice. I ordered the *Mercury* along side, and told the crew what he said, who unanimously declared, they never entertained such a thought; then set up an huzza, and begged they might proceed on their intended cruise. Now Hatley and Betagh went aboard of her, and, giving me three cheers, put off. The very next day they took a small bark, laden with rice, wheat, chocolate, flour, &c. and the day following another; on the 4th day they took a ship of 400 tons, with 150,000 pieces of eight. Flushed with these captures, Betagh pre-

A a

vailed

vailed with Hatley and the rest not to join me again ; and at length brought them to a resolution of leaving those seas : but they had no sooner clapped the helm a-weather, than they saw a sail coming up to them, which proved a Spanish man of war, who prevented their India voyage. They used the English very ill ; but Betagh being of their religion, and of a country they are fond of, was made an officer, and treated with respect. On the 29th, in the morning, we saw a sail at anchor in the road of Guanchaco, and anchored along side of her ; but found nobody aboard but two Indian men, and a boy. She was called the Carmasita, of 100 tons, laden with a little timber, from Guiaquil. These prisoners told me there was a rich ship in the cove of Payta, which put in there to repair. I immediately put to sea, but in purchasing the anchor, our cable parted, and we lost it. I took the prize with me, being new, and like to sail well, and called her the St. David. I looked into Cheripe, from whence I chased a small vessel, which, when I came up with, the men ran her ashore. The next morning, being near the island of Lobos, where I had fixed our rendezvous, I sent my second lieutenant ashore with two letters in two bottles, directing captain Hatley to hasten to me at Payta, and came before that place on the 8th of March \*. On the 21st I entered the cove of Payta, where Mr. Brooks, with the launch, took a small ship, lying in the harbour. We then came to an anchor within little more than half a mile of the town : here I consulted with my officers about the proper measures to take it. I accordingly landed with 46 men, and marched up to the great church without opposition, all the inhabitants having quitted the place ; but we saw

---

\* *There is not a single circumstance in this narration, nor, indeed, in the preceding, which captain Betagh does not only dispute, but deny. But we do not pretend to meddle in these points, leaving the reader to judge, who was, and who was not to blame, by perusing and comparing this account with the following.*



large bodies of men on the hills on each side us. We took no prisoners, but an old Indian and a boy, who said captain Clipperton had been here to set prisoners ashore not long ago, and assured them he would do no mischief, nor give them any trouble: But the inhabitants not caring to trust him, removed their effects to the mountains, among which, there were 400,000 pieces of eight of the king of Spain's money; a fine booty for him, had he thought proper to have accepted it! The remainder of the day was spent in slipping what plunder we could find, which consisted in hogs, fowls, brown and white calavances, beans, corn, wheat, flour, sugar, and as much cocoa-nut as we were able to stow, with several utensils for the kitchen, as pans, &c. In the afternoon I had a messenger to know what I would take for the ransom of the town and ship. I answered 10,000 pieces of eight, and those to be paid in 24 hours. The next morning the messenger came back and brought with him the captain of the ship we had taken, and I went ashore to hear their proposals. He said, the governor resolved not to ransom the town at all events, and that he did not care what was done with the town, provided the churches were not demolished, or set on fire. I replied, that I should have no regard to them, or any thing else, when I set fire to the town; adding, that if the ship was not immediately ransomed, he might expect to see her in flames. He promised the money in three hours. This conversation over, I ordered the town to be set on fire in several places; while this was doing, the men on board my ship made continual signals, and kept constantly firing towards the mouth of the harbour. As I suspected something extraordinary had happened, I hastened on board in a canoe, with three men only. On my entrance into her, I saw a ship, with a Spanish flag, at which sight my three men were ready to sink, and I doubt whether I should ever have got on board again had it not been for the boatswain. In justice to Mr. Coldsea, the master, I own he fired so smartly upon the enemy during my absence, and it was intirely owing to

him I had an opportunity of getting on board. The Spanish officer, thinking I could not pass him, was in no great hurry, and therefore suffered my men, about fifty in number, to come off. Upon this we cut our cable; but the ship falling the wrong way, it was with difficulty I got clear of him. He kept continually firing, and we made the briskest returns we could. Intending at last to demolish us at once, they clapped their helm a starboard, to bring their whole broadside to point on us, but their fire had but little effect, which gave us an opportunity of getting away. This was a lucky escape indeed, after an engagement of three glasses, with an enemy so vastly superior. She was called the *Peregrine*, and had 56 guns, and 450 men aboard; we had but 20 mounted, 73 men, 11 negroes, and 2 Indians included. Again, he had vast odds against us, being in a settled readiness, and we in the utmost distraction. Add to this, our small arms were wet, and of no use; and one third of my people, instead of fighting, were preparing for an obstinate resistance; in making ports for the Stern-chase-guns. Yet we were not altogether unhurt. The loss of our boat and anchor were irreparable, and I may affirm were the cause of a future scene of misery. I have been since informed, we, in this contest, killed and wounded many Spaniards\*.

In the evening, I, with great difficulty, slipped away from the *Brilliant*, the admiral's consort, on board of which was Betagh, who begged he might have the honour to board me first; but though I escaped this snare, yet I found myself, when at liberty, in a miserable situation; for we had not the least certainty of meeting with the Success. As to our enemies, I had intelligence again from Payta, that they had laid an embargo for six months; so that nothing could be expected from that quarter. A third misfortune was; I saw our prize, which I intended for a fire-ship, taken by the *Brilliant*,

---

\* Here again captain Betagh gives a different account of this affair, who was on board the *Peregrine* at Lima, and an eye-witness of the force of this ship.

and

and I had but one anchor, so it cannot be wondered at, that I made no attempt on the town of Guayaquil. I hereupon called my officers together, after which we proposed watering at Juan Fernandez, and then cruising out the whole season on the Conception, Valparaíso and Coquimbo merchants. This being approved of nem. con. we stretched to the windward. After this, I intended for the coast of Mexico, then to run for the Tres Marias, and California, as the most likely place to find the Success. On the 26th, we secured our masts, and bent a new suit of sails, then stood south, expecting to gain our passage in five weeks. On the 31st, as we were pumping, the water came out of the well as black as ink; which made me imagine it came out of our powder room: and so it happened; for on going thither, we heard the water come in like a little sluice, which had spoiled the greatest part of it; so that we could save six barrels only, which I ordered to be stowed in the bread room. May 6, we made the westward of the island of Juan Fernandez, when the carpenter had compleated a boat which would carry three hogheads; and found the leak to be on the larboard side, under the lower cheek of the head, occasioned by a shot lodged there, which falling out, had left room for the water. On the 11th we saw the island, a joyful sight at that time! tho' afterwards to us very unfortunate\*. I plied off and on, says captain Shelvocke, till the 21st, but could not get so much water as we daily drank, which made me think it proper to anchor in the road. In order to this, I got 20 casks ready to raft ashore, then worked in, came to an anchor in 40 fathom water, and haled the casks ashore, and aboard again. The next morning we were ready to go to sea, but could not for four days. On the 25th a hard gale, coming from the sea, with it a great swell,

---

\* In captain Betagh's account, the going to Fernandez is represented as a manifest design to lose the ship, that they might hereafter cruise in a bottom, to which the owners had no title, &c.

our cable parted. A sad accident this ! having not the least prospect of avoiding immediate destruction : but providence interposed in our favour ; for if we had struck but a cable's length farther to the east or west, we must all have inevitably perished. When she struck upon the rock, our main-mast and mizen went all together. No words can express the terror we was in on being shipwrecked. In the evening all the officers came to me, to consider proper measures, to get some necessaries out of the wreck, and, lighting a fire, wrapped themselves up in what they could get, sleeping round it very soundly. While all hands were employed in building tents, &c. to settle themselves here, the wreck was intirely destroyed, and no hopes left of regaining any thing, so that all in her was lost, excepting a few fire-arms, one cask of beef, and another of farina de pao, with 11,000 dollars belonging to the owners, which were in my chest ; the rest being stowed in the bottom of the bread room, for security. In this melancholy situation I applied to the carpenter, and asked if something could not be done to set us a float again, who answered, ' he could not make bricks without straw : ' then went off in an ill humour. From him I passed to the armourer, and asked what he could do for us, towards building a small vessel ; who said, ' he hoped he could furnish all the iron work, having, ' with much difficulty, gotten his bellows with four or ' five spadoes, which would afford him steel, out of the ' wreck, and that there could be no want of iron on ' the shore : so desired me, without loss of time, to ' set to work in earnest.' While he fitted up his forge I ordered wood to be cut down for charcoal ; then, calling all the ship's company, put the question ; whether we should make a beginning ? to this they unanimously consented. I now sent a party of men to the wreck, to get the bowsprit ashore, of which I designed to make the keel, and prevailed with the carpenter to accompany me, to fix on a proper place for building. They found many useful materials about the wreck, and amongst the rest, the top-mast, which being made fast

fast to the main-mast was washed ashore. June 8, we laid the blocks to build on, and the bowsprit was ready at hand, when the carpenter, turning short upon me, swore, that he would not strike a stroke, nor be any man's slave; as he was now upon a footing with me. I was at first a little nettled at this, but afterwards agreed to give him a four pistole piece, as soon as the stern and stern-post were up: and 100 pieces of eight when it was finished. Upon this he fell to work, and in two months time we made a tolerable shew. In the beginning, the people behaved very well, half of them working one day, and half another; but at length they became a prey to party rage; many officers left my conversation, to herd with the meanest of our company, which confirmed me in my opinion, that there was some dark design in embrio. However, on recollecting how Dampier had been used in these seas, I ordered my son to secure my commission in some dry place of the island. At last, I one afternoon, lost all my people, and could see nobody but Mr. Adamson, surgeon, Mr. Hendry, agent, my son, and Mr. Dodd, lieutenant of marines, who, for reasons best known to himself, pretended lunacy. I could not imagine what was become of them; but at night was told they had assembled at the great tree to form new articles, whereby the owners were excluded from any part of what should be taken hereafter, and I from the command of the ship. They had chosen one Morphew for their speaker, who represented to them. "That they were now their own masters; that Mr. Shelvocke, ought to remember if they thought proper to make him their commander, it was their courtesy to make him so, &c." In this they were supported by Mr. Brooks, and his brother-in-law Mr. Randal, the former my first, the latter my second lieutenant.

The first outrage committed by these levellers, was, on Mr. De la Porte, my third lieutenant, whom Morphew knocked down on the beach, whilst Mr. Brooks stood an eye-witness of this brutality. I expostulated with him warmly for this his conduct, of which

which he took little notice; so that I now found there was an end of all regular authority amongst us. Soon after, they formed a new set of articles, by which they put themselves upon the Jamaica discipline, declaring, that I should be their captain, and as a mark of their esteem should be entitled to six shares, tho', according to the Jamaica model, I ought to have but four; upon which plan, Mr. De la porte, Mr. Dodd, and Mr. Hendry, were reduced to the state of midship-men, as to the dividend. To this scheme all the officers among them consented, only Mr. Coldsea, who stood neuter. In this distress, I thought it lawful to comply with their demands, and, with the rest of my officers, signed the articles, thinking I should then be able to get them to work on the bark again; when another mutiny broke out at the great tree, where they resolved to have what little money I had saved for the owners, which amounted to 750 pieces of eight in virgin silver, a silver dish, weighing 75 oz. and 250 dollars in specie; with this also, I was obliged to comply; but was then used worse than ever; for while Mr. Morphew and his Counsellors feasted upon the best fish the sea afforded, I was glad, after a hard day's work, to dine upon seal. The next scheme was to get the arms from me, which they took by violence, and squandered away what ammunition we had left, in shooting at wild-cats, or any trifling objects which came in their way. This is a short, but true history of our transactions in the island of Juan Fernandez; and I believe every unprejudiced reader will agree, that from May 24 to August 15, no man ever endured a more uncomfortable prospect\*.

August 15, we had sight of a large ship, which occasioned great uneasiness; but she kept at too great a distance to perceive any thing of us. I now told them, that the state of our affairs was such, it behoved

---

\* *Mr. Betagh's account is here also diametrically opposite to captain Shelvocke's, with respect to these transactions.*

all hands to give their assistance towards finishing the bark, there being never more than ten, and sometimes but six, that attended it, and that I was always one of the number. But they were so perverse, that the more I encouraged them, the more they entered into distraction. The next day they divided upon the question; whether they should not set the bark on fire, and build two large shallops? At last they came to this conclusion, viz. to lay aside all thoughts of building boats; but insisted that Mr. Brooks should have the command of the bark. This night the carpenter sent me word, that if I did not send him the 100 dollars, I should never see his face again, so I was obliged to pay him. To complete our divisions, there now arose a third party, who resolved to continue on the island. These were in number about twelve, who were never seen, but at night, when they came to our tents to steal whatever they could meet with; but I soon found means to manage them, and took all their arms, ammunition, and plunder away; telling them, at the same time, if they ever were seen within musket shot of our tents, they should be treated as enemies. In a little time these subdivisions so weakened the power of the whole body, that they began to give attention to me, and most of them got into a humour of working; which caused Mr. Brooks, with an hypocritical submission, to desire he might come to eat with me again; but yet did not lessen his esteem for Morpew. His dissimulation, however, proved of vast service towards finishing the bark, which required the assistance of all our heads and hands. At length, by constant labour and various contrivances, we patched her up, but in such a manner, as the like was never seen, and I may safely affirm, such a bottom never swam upon the sea before. She was launched on the 9th of September, and, being now nearly compleated, there yet remained unthought of, what provisions could be got to support us in our voyage; the one being of no use without the other. We therefore made several experiments to save both fish and seals, but it was impossible to do it without salt.

Ac

At last we contrived a method to cure the conger-eels, by splitting them, taking out the back bone, then dipping them in salt water, and hanging them to dry in a great smoke. On the 5th of October, having finished the calking and rigging of our little bark, and saved 2300 eels, weighing about a pound each, we agreed to put her in the water, and as she went off, I named her the Recovery. All things answering pretty well, we resolved to run the hazard of going off in her, and made all possible provision for sailing. After all, a dozen of our people chose to remain ashore, with about as many negroes and Indians.

October 6, in the evening, we departed, with nothing to subsist on but the smoked congers, one of which was allowed to each man for 24 hours, one cask of beef, and four live hogs. We were upwards of 40 crowded together, lying upon the bundles of eels, in no method of keeping ourselves clean. There was not a drop of water to be had, without sucking it out of the cask, thro' the barrel of a musket, and the little morsels we eat, occasioned perpetual squabbles, every one contending for the frying pan. All the convenience we had for a fire being a half tub filled with earth, which made so little dispatch, that we had continual frying from morning till night. In this wretched condition, on the 10th of October at four in the morning, we met with a large ship, which we saw by moonlight was Europe built. We stood for her, and being rigged in the mode of the country, they took little notice of us till day-light; then haled close on a wind to the west, and left us behind them; it falling calm two hours after, we applied to our oars, and came up with her with pretty good speed; during the chase we overhauled our arms, one third of which had no flints, nor had we more than three cutlasses, so that we were not at all well provided for boarding, tho' this was the only way, by which we could hope to take the ship. We had but one cannon, which we could not mount, but were forced to fire as it lay upon deck, and to supply it, we had no more ammunition than two round



round shot, a small quantity of chain bolts and bolt-heads, with the clappers of the Speedwell's bells, and a few bags of beach stones to serve for cartridge. As we drew near, I saw her guns and pattereroes, and a number of armed men upon deck. They defied us to come on board them, and gave us a volley of great and small shot, which killed our gunner, and brought down our foremast. However we rowed up and engaged them till all our small shot was gone. We were busy all night in making flugs, and had provided a good quantity before morning. At day break in the morning, I ordered 20 of our men to lay her athwart the hawse, while I boarded her in the bark: but the very instant we were coming to engage her, a gale arose, and she got off. This ship was called the *Margaretta*, a privateer of St. Malo, and mounted 40 guns all the last war. In the attacks we made upon her; one man was killed, and three wounded, two of these recovered. Our condition being now worse than before, I proposed going to Coquimbo; but a strong gale coming on, and lasting four days, we made to Iquique, which looks like a white rock, at the foot of the high land of Carapucho. About sun set I sent the boat in between the rocks, and the crew was received by some of the Indians with an ignorant welcome. Being ashore they went to the lieutenant's house who governed there, broke it open, rumaged the village, and brought off a booty more valuable to us, at this time, than gold and silver; consisting of 60 bushels of wheat flour, some jerked beef, pork, and mutton, 10,000 lb. of well cured fish, a good number of fowls, some rusk, and four or five days eating of soft bread, with six jars of Peruvian wine and brandy. Words cannot express the joy that reigned in our breasts at their coming on board. The loaves of white bread were divided among the crew, the jars of wine were broached; but I allowed no more than half a pint to each man. After living a day or two on wholesome diet; we began to wonder how we could, for a month together, live upon eels fried in train oil.

The

The island of Iquique lies in 19 deg. 50 min. south latitude, is about half a league in circumference, and half a mile from the main land of Peru. It is of a moderate height, and the bulk of it is intirely composed of cormorants dung, whose colour is exceeding white, which makes it appear at a distance like chalk-hills. From hence we steered for Le Nasco, in which port we had a brisk engagement with a vessel of 700 tons, which lasted six hours, but the sea breeze coming in very strong, we were obliged to quit her. After this, some of my men were determined to go over to the enemy; to prevent which, I ordered four men, whom I thought I could trust, into our two boats; but those two who were in the best boat deceived me, and went off with her; my first lieutenant and Morpew made a party to go away with the other; but it blew hard, and prevented them from putting their design in execution.

The day following we stood away for Pisco, where we saw a fine ship, and determined to board her, and, to our great joy, as well as surprize, when we came aboard, the captain, and all his officers, met us with their hats off, begging for good quarter. She was of about 200 tons, called the Jesu Maria, almost laden with pitch, tar, copper, and plank; but little else. The captain offered 16,000 dollars for her ransom; but I could not take it, the Recovery being disabled in her masts, and we wanting room to enjoy ourselves, some cleanliness at least, which we had been strangers to ever since we left Juan Fernandez. The captain told us, that the Margareta had been sometime at Calao, and had given some account of us there; that the captain, and three men, had been killed in the engagement; the priest, and several others wounded: that she was ready to put to sea again with ten more guns, and 50 men, to cruise for us; and that the Flying Fish of 28 guns, was already out on the same errand. Next morning, when we had cleared our bark, we gave her to the Spanish captain, and went to sea, where we met with our boat, that had run away from us; by which accident

dent we got her again. The two fellows were half dead, having neither eat nor drank for three days. November 25 we found ourselves near Payta. I soon recollected, that our force was much less now than when we took it before, and yet being in a Spanish built ship, we might easily surprise, and deceive the inhabitants. In the morning, the people ashore seeing us under some fatigue to get into the harbour, sent off a boat full of men, to help us forward. When I observed them coming to us, I ordered none to appear, but such as wore the Spanish complexion and dress, who were ready to answer their questions; and to throw them a rope to make fast her boat when they clapped us aboard, while others should be concealed under the gunnel, ready to command the boat when they had made themselves fast. We by this artifice took them all prisoners, and having examined them, kept on our way, with Spanish colours to the anchorage. As soon as the anchor was down, I sent Mr. Brooks, with both the boats and 24 men, no more appearing than those that rowed, and two or three sitting in each; the rest with their arms lay in the bottom, so that when my people landed, the whole place was in a consternation, and happy they who could make their escape; we ransacked the place, but upon a strict search found nothing considerable in it, and that our prisoners had not deceived us in their information. But tho' we had little success by land, we, took a vessel with 50 jars of Peruvian wine and brandy as we lay at anchor. From hence we sailed to the island of Gorgona, in the bay of Panama, where we arrived December 2, and in less than 48 hours laid in wood and water; then hurried away out of the enemies track, and steered directly for the coasts of Asia, changing our ship's name from the *Jesu Maria* to the *Happy Return*; and endeavoured to quit this part of the world; but the winds and dead calms detained us so long, that our water and provisions were much exhausted, and rendered us incapable of undertaking so long a run: we now therefore resolved to make a descent on *Rio Lejo*, to furnish

ourselves with what we wanted. In our way we fell in with Cape Burica, in 8 deg. 20 min. north latitude, and then thought it would be our safest way to attempt something on the island Quibo, in 7 deg. 30 min. north latitude, where, from captain Rogers's account, we judged there were inhabitants, who lived well on the products that island afforded.

January 13, 1721, we entered, says captain Shelvocke, between Quibo and Quivetta, over against a sandy bay, which promised fair for wood and water. As soon as it was light next morning, we saw two large boats rowing in for Quivetta, one of them with Spanish colours flying. I sent Mr. Brooks after them in the yawl, who found them ashore, and brought away their piraguas, with two prisoners, the one a Mulatto, the other a negroe. We took all their provisions, which consisted of a little pork; of green, ripe, and dried plantains, a large quantity, which being pounded, made us up a month's bread. The Mulatto promised to conduct us to a place where we might supply ourselves without hazard, if we would not be above two or three days about it. On the 16th we went from hence to Mariato, and on the 19th in the evening got safe between that island and Sabaco, anchoring in six fathom. The Mulatto desired we might be going to the place he was to shew us before day-light, and then we should arrive at the plantations in good time. Accordingly, I went at two the next morning in our own boat. We landed just at day-break; and when we were on land, after a march of about three miles, we came up to two farm-houses, finding nobody but the wife and children in the first. The farm, as our prisoner and pilot had informed us, was surrounded by numerous herds of cattle, hogs, and plenty of fowls of all kinds, together with some dried beef, plantains, and Indian corn; and we were here entertained with a breakfast of hot cake and milk; a diet we had been long unacquainted with. When it was broad day, I saw our ship close by us. We had not been here long, before we had the master of the family in custody, who  
1 brought

brought with him horses, and desired us to make use of them as we thought proper. I soon employed him to carry what I thought fit for our purpose to the boats. This done, he went among his black cattle, and brought us as many as I thought we could cure. We departed from hence the next morning, with our decks full of fowls and hogs; among the latter was one, that had his navel on his back, which the Spaniards say is a very mischievous creature, when wild in the woods; tho' they are but small. Having taken in sufficient provisions, we returned the same way we came; stopped at Quibo to take in more water, and gave our two prisoners the largest piragua.

On the 25th we discovered a sail, and chased her till we could be certain they were Europe built; soon after we saw a boat rowing towards us, which proved to be the pinnacle of the *Succes*, commanded by Mr. Davison, their first lieutenant, which amazed us both. I gave him an account of our misfortunes; and he entertained me with a rehearsal of what had happened to them, since our separation on the coast of England; particularly, that about 12 months before, they had taken a French ship, which they valued at 20,000 l. sterling, and their second captain, Mr. Mitchell, was intrusted with the command of her, and ordered to go to some island on the coast of Mexico, there to stay till captain Clipper-ton joined him; but that they could never find the island since, and therefore judged that poor captain Michell, with his men, were either starved, or fallen into the hands of the Spaniards and Indians. This story of captain Mitchell, who was in all respects a very worthy and expert sailor, which Mr. Davison related to me, was, in all its circumstances, very tragical; and as there was always a jealousy between him and his captain, who ordered him to a place, that was never found afterwards, and it is my opinion never was above water; the unfortunate gentleman, without doubt, perished in some obscure miserable place. I then asked Mr. Davison the value of their booty, who assured me that it did not exceed 70,000 dollars. He then added, that they had lost several favourable opportunities, particularly

ticularly in the bay of Conception, where they left three laden ships behind them, missed a fourth, and that they had never cleaned their bottom. Nay farther, he told me, that they fell in with the Flying Fish, which, by unpardonable mismanagement in captain Clipperton, got safe off, with a valuable cargo. I now bore down upon the Success, and went aboard, where I gave captain Clipperton, and Mr. Godfrey, agent general, the whole history of my voyage, and expected to have been treated by them, as one belonging to the same interest; but found my self mistaken. However, I thought he would not be so inhuman, as to refuse me the supplies I stood then in need of, and such only as he could spare. The answer was, I should know more of his mind the next day. Among other discourse, he told me, that he was just come from Cocos; that his men were sickly, and at short allowance. I hereupon offered to pilot him to Mariato, not more than 30 leagues distant, where he might refresh his people, and supply himself with what he would. This he refused, resolving to make his way to Tres Marias, where, says he, there is turtle enough: so I left him. Next morning I was going on board again with some of my officers, when he spread all his sails, and crowded away from us who were in the boat, so I returned to my own ship, and made signals of distress, firing our gun several times, which he would not regard, till his officers exclaimed against his barbarity; and then he brought to. When I came up with him, I sent Mr. Brooks to know the cause of his abrupt departure; and to tell him what necessaries he could spare, we would purchase of him. Upon these terms he let me have two of his quarter-deck guns, 60 round shot, some flints and musket balls, a Spanish chart of the coast of Mexico, a half-hour and half-minute glass, a compass, and 300 weight of salt. For these things, I returned some bales of coarse cloth, as much pitch and tar as he would have, some pigs of copper; with a large silver ladle for a dozen Spadoes. After this, I asked if I could be of any service to him, assuring him, that I had under me a pretty good ship, tho' she cut

cut but an ordinary figure, and that our cargo was pretty valuable. To this, he replied, "if you have a cargo of gold I have no business with you, and you must take care of yourself." Mr. Hendry, the agent, Mr. Rainer, and Mr. Dodd, lieutenants of Marines, being weary of the hard work imposed upon them, desired I would let them go on board the *Succes* for a passage to England. I consented, and Clipperton left us to shift for ourselves. Having this supply, I was for going to the bay of Panama, to try our fortune there, but being over-ruled by the majority, purely out of fear, we made for *Tres Marias*: the wind near land continuing west, we went at so slow and tedious a rate, that we began to want provisions again before we got the length of *Rio Lejo*. As we continued our course along shore, we, in a few days, met the *Succes* again, came close under her stern, and enquired how captain Clipperton and the rest of the gentlemen did? but having no answer, we steered one way, he another. We were soon after reduced to short allowance, and presently into a state of famine. I, therefore, proposed the plundering of some small town. *Guitalco* was the nearest of any; but the very morning we designed to attack it, we saw a sail, and judged it more adviseable to take her, than venture ashore, and so bore down to her. She proved the *Succes*, and tho' I made the signal as was agreed upon, she did not stay for us a moment, and we were now so far to the leeward of our port, by bearing down to him, that it was needless to beat up again for an uncertainty. This mistake brought us down to our smoked congers, which had been long neglected, and now lay soaking and rotting in the bulge-water, and was, without doubt, the most disagreeable food that could be tasted. In this wretched situation, we met the *Succes* a fourth time, near the port of *Angels*, in 16 deg. 50 min. north latitude, and having made to her the appointed signal, came so near, as a biscuit might have been tossed from ship to ship: but captain Clipperton had ordered all his officers and company to take no notice of us; which was certainly a clear indication of his inhuman dis-

position: for, he was at this very time so sensible of the difficulties and dangers we had to cope with, if my design was to go to India; that, he said, "the child that was born the day before, would be grey-headed with age before we should arrive there."

March 12, being off the port of Acapulco, in the evening, we saw a sail, I bore down to her on perceiving she had Spanish colours. When I drew near she hoisted the English ensign, and made the signal agreed on between Clipperton and me, as also his old signal to speak with me. Hereupon I bore down to him, and being come along side he sent captain Cooke, with the yawl, in an obliging manner, to inform me, that he was cruising for the homeward bound Manilla ship; and desired I would assist him, and come next morning to consult on the measures for attacking her; I read the letter to my people, who were all willing to join him in such an undertaking; but as he before had used us so inhumanely, they desired me to procure some security for their shares, signed by captain Clipperton, Mr. Godfrey, and the other officers. I went aboard accordingly, and first told captain Clipperton, and Mr. Godfrey, what my officers and company expected from them. To which they answered, that in these points it was but reasonable they should be satisfied. An instrument, fully worded, was instantly drawn up and signed; then we consulted about the main point, and at last it was resolved, that I should send the best part of my men on board the Success, as soon as we saw the Manilla ship come out of Acapulco, and have only a boat's crew to bring me away, in case I should have occasion to use mine as a fire-ship, as we proposed if we found them too hard for us. Clipperton assured me, he was certain of the time she would sail from the port. Before we parted, I let captain Clipperton know our scarcity of water; upon which, he told me, that he had 80 tons, and would spare me what I wanted of it, or any thing else his ship afforded. I had now the pleasure of enjoying my command as regularly as ever. But Morphew, the ringleader of all our dissensions, fearing my resentment, resolved to insinuate himself



self into the favour of the captain and officers of the Success, as he did by an humble submission and prevailing presents. In a word, he gained his ends, and left me, to go on board them, on the 14th of March in the evening. Thus we cruised in good order, and with a great deal of hope, till the 17th, when I suffered the most flagrant piece of treachery that could be, by man, committed. The next morning we had no sight of any ship, nor any water sent according to promise, which threw me under the most dismal apprehensions, reflecting upon the shocking state we were now reduced to, for want of any thing to drink, and the vast distance we were from any place where we could expect water; having no choice left, but either to beat up 220 leagues to Tres Marias, or bear away for the gulph of Amapala, at a far greater distance. I was told afterwards by some of Clipperton's officers I met in China, that he committed this cruelty; against the repeated remonstrances of his officers, and was also informed, by some Spaniards, that the Acapulco ship sailed about a week after we left off the cruise, and was exceedingly rich \*.

In this situation, all hazards were to be run, we therefore continued our course, the wind and weather being favourable, and on the 30th of March came before the port of Sanfonnate, where we discovered a ship lying at anchor. We continued plying in all night, and prepared to engage her. About eleven in the morning we came in, and that I might make our small

---

\* *These circumstances are stated in a different manner in the foregoing chapter, and therefore should be carefully examined. Captain Betagh vindicates Clipperton with respect to Mitchell: and the journal informs us, that being obliged to wood and water, he touched to the northward of port Velas, where, it is very probable, he, and his men, became a prey to the enemy. The next article in the journal is, that not hearing from captain Shelvocke; and the time of the Acapulco ship's setting out from Manilla being several days passed, it was resolved in council to make their best way to India.*

force the most beneficial to us, I ordered our three guns to be brought over to the side we were likely to engage, and being within less than musket shot, discharged them. The sea breeze now ran us upon them very fast, when we boarded them without delay, and after the exchange of a few shot upon deck, they submitted. This ship was called the *Sacra Familia*, of 300 tons, 6 guns, and 70 men. She some time before came from Calao with wine and brandy, had in her a number of small arms, grenade-shells, and shot, with fifty jars of gunpowder; but had nothing in her worth the trouble we took, except a small parcel of risk, and jerked beef. However, she being a better sailor, I changed ships, and we all came aboard the prize. The merchant we had taken in this action seemed desirous to purchase the *Jesu Maria*, came to my price; and went ashore to raise the money. Here we dismissed all our white prisoners, on account of our shortness of provisions, and kept only the negroes. In the evening, I had a letter from the governor, with an account of a truce on foot between England and Spain, desiring me to stay five days, and he would shew me the articles of accommodation. I answered, that for the name of peace I would stay 15 days if he would supply us with water and provisions; if not I would be gone in 24 hours. Accordingly our boat went ashore every morning with a flag of truce, and for the first four days, we had eight small jars of water; on the fifth we could get but five, and during the whole time we had but one small cow, which came in a boat full of men, and was attended by two priests. Two days after this, when the boat went ashore, the governor ordered the men to be made prisoners, as soon as they landed. In the evening I was astonished to see only two of my boat's crew, in a leaky canoe, with two letters; one from the governor, the other from Mr. Brooks, who told me; that by all he could learn, the governor designed to bully me. The governor required me to give up the *Sacra Familia*, and surrender myself. By the same messengers that brought me these letters, I returned two more, to which I received

ceived no manner of answer ; therefore I weighed before day the next morning, and lay to in the bay till ten o'clock ; then set sail, leaving behind me the *Jesu Maria* \*.

The loss of my officers and boat's crew sensibly diminished the number of white faces, and we should scarce have been able to work the ship, had not my negro prisoners proved good sailors. As we were now reduced to a pint of water a man for 24 hours, we made all possible haste to the island of Tygers, near the gulph of Amapala ; but here was not the least drop of water to be found ; so we came to so small allowance as half a pint for 24 hours, having not 40 gallons, nor any other liquids. Being now 43 in number, including the negroes, we steered for Quibo, about 200 leagues distance ; towards this place we sailed thirteen days ; and during most of the time, drank our own water which, tho' it moistened our mouths for a time, the more it excited our thirst. April 25, coming up with the island of Cano, with great danger and difficulty we procured water enough to carry us to Quibo, where we wooded and watered pretty chearfully.

The island of Quibo is nearly in the same pallel of latitude with Panama, and is about nine leagues in length, and four in breadth, covered all over with ever-green woods, and tho' not inhabited, abounds with papas, limes, and other fruits, I never saw before. It is a very considerable pearl-fishery, and by going up to your middle into the sea, you may reach these large oysters from the bottom, but they are not eatable. There is a great variety of birds, with black monkeys and guanoes. There cannot be a more convenient place for wood and water. May 15, a small bark bore down to us, bound for Panama, and called the *Holy Sacrament*, laden with dried beef, pork, and hogs ; which, at the master's request, we took in tow, and we being desirous to get ashore any where, he offered

---

\* *Captain Betagh reflects very severely upon Mr. Shelvocke's conduct at this place, and expressly says, he got rid of six more of his people designedly.*

to pilot us to Panama, where every one was willing to surrender himself, being all disheartened, by continual want and misfortunes.

On the 17th another bark came pretty near us, upon which I sent Mr. Randal, in our canoe, to tell them our design, but they hoisted Spanish colours, and fired at him. On the 19th we saw a sail, upon which, we let go the bark, in which were four of our men, and five Spaniards. On the 26th we were within less than gun-shot of her, when they were told we were bound to Panama; but they, regardless of the white flag, inhumanely insulted us, and continued their fire. Hereupon, an engagement began, which lasted three hours. At length their captain, being shot thro' the body, fell down dead; and they cried out for quarter; then I hoisted out our canoe, and Mr. Randal, with two or three more, went on board the prize, and sent away the most considerable prisoners, who told me the vessel was called *Le Conception de Recova*, belonging to Calao, of 200 tons, laden with flour, sugar-loaves, marmalade, preserved peaches, grapes, limes, &c. She had 70 men, and 6 guns. We had now 80 prisoners of all colours, and not above 26 of ourselves. Among these last prisoners, were several of note, particularly Don Baltazar de la Rosa, an European, late governor of Pisco, now on his return to Spain, and captain Morell, who had formerly been taken by Mr. Rogers. I used all of them with the utmost civility. In examining and clearing the *Conception* we were hindered from rejoining the bark till the 22d, which we now saw at some distance. As soon as we came up with her, I sent the boat aboard; the officer that went in her immediately called out to me, that there was no soul in her, but the decks and quarters were covered with blood. Hence it plainly appeared to me, that the Spanish crew had murdered our men. A cruel return for our civilities, and services to them! this tragical accident spoiled the enjoyment of the last prize. Therefore, in a heat, I directly ordered all the prisoners into the stern-gallery, except the nobleman, and some more of the chief, keeping a constant guard in the

the great cabin. I afterwards took care to secure our prisoners of the meaner sort, and haled the Holy Sacrament along side. She proved to be half full of water, and the greatest part of her dried beef was spoiled. We took out of her some live hogs, and I gave her to Don Baltazzar de Espina, who after the death of Joseph Desorio, became captain of the Conception. The next day, being as desirous to get shut of my prisoners, as they were to have liberty, I delivered the Conception also into the possession of the aforesaid gentleman, after having taken out twelve months provision of bread, flour, sweet-meats, &c. and a like quantity for the Success, which I expected to meet with at Tres Marias. I likewise took away their launch and negroes, which in those parts are generally good seamen, well knowing I now had 175 deg. to sail to the coast of Asia \*.

---

\* *The chief and most remarkable part of Mr. Betagh's book, has some relation to the facts and circumstances mentioned in the preceding paragraphs. "This ship, says he, called the Conception, Don Stephen de Recorva commander, besides the cargo mentioned by captain Shelvocke, had 108,636 pieces of eight on board when he took her, of which I have not only an authentic account, but will tell how I got it. After I was carried prisoner to Lima, I came to London in October 1721. Captain Shelvocke himself arrived eleven months after, and immediately waited on the gentlemen to compound in the lump for all his transactions, not owning any thing of this prize, which he had unlawfully shared, and every thing else among 33 of them. Instead of promising the matter, the gentlemen read him a letter, secured him, and the same day had him confined in Wood-Street-Compter. A few days after his pupil Stewart arrived at Dover, and was seized by the honest warden of the castle, according to directions, who faithfully secured his book of accounts, and brought it with the prisoner to the owners, from whom I had the book, and copied the dividend, which is as follows."*

The

The grand point now to be managed was to gain the consent of my people to sail to California, before we pro-

Names.	Quality.	N <sup>o</sup> of shares.	Dollars	Engl. Money		
				l.	s.	d.
G. Shelvocke	Captain	6	11325	2642	10	0
Sam. Randall	Lieutenant	2½	4718	1100	17	4 each
John Rainer	Capt. mar.					
Blow. Coldfea	Master					
Nich. Adams	Surgeon	2	3775	88	16	8 each
Matt. Stewart	First mate					
Mr. La Porte	Sec. mate					
Geo. Henshal	Boatwain					
R. Davenport	Carpenter					
Will. Clarke	Gunner	1¼	2830	660	00	0 each
James Daniel	Midshipm.					
David Griffith	Ditto					
Chr. Hawkins	Ditto					
Oliver Lefevée	Sailmaker					
John Doydge	Surg. mate					
Will. Morgan	Ditto					
J. Popplestone	Armourer					
James Moyett	Cooper					
John Pearson	Carp. mate	1	1887½	440	7	2 each
Shelvocke jun.						
Will. Clement	Able seam.					
John Norris	Ditto					
Ja. Moulville	Ditto					
George Gill	Ditto					
Peter Fero	Ditto					
John Smith	Ditto					
Edw. Atcocks	Ditto	¾	1415¼	330	6	10 each
J. Theobald	Barber					
Will. Burrows	Old seam.					
D. Macdonald	Ditto	½	943½	220	4	2 each
Richard Croft	Ditto					
John Robbins	Grommet	½	943½	220	4	2 each
Benedict Harry	Cook					
33		52½	98604¾	23007	15	6

" Here

proceeded to the East Indies. But after mature consideration it was resolved by the majority to ply up first to Cano. In our passage hither, the sweet-meats of all kinds were divided among the messes; but one man complained he had a box of marmalade he could not stick his knife in, and desired it might be changed; I opened it, and found in it a virgin-cake of silver; which was very porous, and near the weight of so much marmalade; the weight of each box being two hundred pieces of eight. In overhaling the rest, we found five more. It was at Cano that I, with great difficulty, prevailed upon them to go to Puerto Seguro in California, to clean and refit our ship for the intended long voyage; so we weighed from hence and steered northwards. In the beginning of August we reached the islands Tres Marias, but could find no water in any of the three. After spending three days in this fruitless search, we stood over for the main land of California. August 11 we made that coast, in hopes of meeting once more with the Success. The 13th, at day break, we found ourselves near Puerto Seguro. Our anchor was no sooner down, than the natives came off to us in

---

*" Here the reader sees the sum total of the dividend,  
 " to be short of what I said the capture amounted too:  
 " but to set that right; there is a secret article of 627  
 " quadruples of gold; which captain Shelvocke graciously  
 " shared among private friends; each of these is worth  
 " sixteen pieces of eight; and make in the whole 10,032  
 " dollars, which at 4s. 8d. each, make 2340l. which  
 " added to the 98,604 $\frac{3}{4}$ , or 23,007l. 15s. 6d. makes  
 " 108,636 $\frac{3}{4}$  dollars, or 25,348l. 11s. 6d. all which  
 " money captain Shelvocke has the modesty to conceal, and  
 " say the prize was laden with flour, sugar, &c. Stewart's  
 " book mentions the 627 doubloons, but not a word how  
 " they were divided; so we must imagine they were sunk  
 " among them; for as Stewart was agent, cashier,  
 " and pay-master, it was an easy matter to hide a bag of  
 " gold from the public, and dispose of it afterwards in  
 " a committee of two or three."*

C c

crouds,

crouds, some on bark-logs, and some swimming. Our ship was in an instant full of these swarthy gentry, quite naked; amongst the rest was their king, distinguished only by a black round stick in his hand, which he delivered to me. I immediately returned it; then treated them with sweet-meats, which they seemed to like extremely well. They afterwards proved very useful to us, in helping to roll our casks of water, and carry wood to the boat. When we came to heel the ship, by putting them all on one side, they found us a good bottom; and by their assistance, we did all our business in five days. Whilst I was here, a monstrous sort of fish came to the surface of the water near the shore to sun himself. Some of the Indians seeing him, fifteen or sixteen of them swam off and surrounded it, and by their art insensibly drove it ashore; when his belly touched the ground, the force with which he beat the beach with his fins is not to be expressed, no more than their agility in endeavouring to kill him. They at last dispatched him, by the help of a dagger; which Mr. Randal lent them, who stood by. They soon cut him in pieces, and gave it to all that came. The fish was about fifteen feet broad, but not so much in length. I must not omit one thing, in which they would always get the better of us, and that was, in taking snuff, which they would never suffer us to use; but instantly, on seeing us take a pinch out of our boxes, they would run to us, twist it out of our fingers, and with a frowning look throw it away.

August 18 we sailed from Puerto Seguro for Canton in China. On the 21st we discovered an island, bearing W. S. W. 110 leagues distant from Cape St. Lubas; which I judged to be seven or eight leagues in circumference, and my people called it Shelvocke's Island. In the beginning of October we made the island of Guam, and passed between that isle and Serpana, where, meeting with very bad weather, I shaped my course for the island of Formosa, and on the third of November had the sight of it, both ship and company being



being quite worn out with labour, want, and bad weather. From hence, in this melancholy condition, we directed our course for the coast of China, and on the 6th found ourselves at the mouth of the river Loma. On the 10th in the evening, as we were passing thro' a narrow channel, a fisherman near us, observing we were afraid to venture between a couple of islands, made signs to us to bring to; we made him to understand that we wanted to go to Macao, and he signified to us, that he would pilot us thither for as many pieces of silver as he counted fish out of his basket, which amounted to 40; we told out 40 dollars in a hat, and gave them to him. Upon this he came into the ship and took us in charge; brought us a-breast of Pulo Lantoon, from whence we saw two English ships at a distance, passing by the island of Macao, in their way from the river of Canton. The next day we anchored in the road of Macao, near the entrance of this river, which we could never have found by any charts. Macao being a place, where ships always call for a pilot to conduct them up the river of Canton; I dispatched an officer with a compliment to the governor, and ordered him to bring a pilot on board immediately; but heard nothing of him till morning, which caused me much uneasiness.

Early the next morning he returned, and with him a great many of the Success's people. At first I was very glad to see them; but on hearing their story, my mind altered. They told me, captain Clipperton left me designedly; that they went directly to Guam, where they were well supplied with all necessaries they wanted; that the captain sold the governor there a great deal of powder, shot, and other valuable things, and suffered the marquis Villa Roche to go ashore, with Mr. Godfrey, the agent, and an officer of marines; that as soon as they were landed, the boat come off again; that captain Clipperton weighing his ship, to attack a vessel of 20 guns from Manilla, which lay in the road, ran upon the rocks, and perceiving his case desperate, made himself drunk, while Mr. Davison un-

dertook the command till he was killed; that then captain Cooke commanded, and got the ship afloat again; but that captain Clipperton did not recover himself till they were out at sea, &c. But, whatever these officers told him, in excuse for themselves, it must be observed, the facts were quite otherwise, as appears in the foregoing chapter. On the 12th about noon a pilot came off to us, and we entered the river of Canton, being certain to find some European ships at Wampo; after plying up four days, we found there, the Bonetta and Hastings, two English East India traders. Here an unlucky accident happened the very evening I anchored, which was thus, one David Griffith, belonging to my ship, being in a great hurry to remove his effects on board the Bonetta's boat, in which he was, happened to be chased by an Hoppo, or custom-house boat; and fearing he would take away what silver he had, he fired a musket, and killed a Hoppo-man. Next morning the corps was laid at the door of the English factories, the Chinese lying in wait for the first Englishman that came out. It happened that the supercargo of the Bonetta appeared one of the first. They seized him immediately, and led him about the city of Canton in chains; but soon after Griffith, who committed the fact, was delivered up to them, and the supercargo released. I now complained to Messrs. Hill and Newsham, the captains of the Cadogan and Francis, two other English ships, lying in the same road. They came aboard, and when they saw the ruinous appearance of my ship, were astonished to think it was possible she could have made so long a stretch. After I had given these gentlemen a brief history of my voyage; I desired they would receive my officers, and ship's company, with their effects, who, on seeing my ship was in no condition to proceed farther, agreed to entertain us, as soon as we pleased, upon payment of our passages. This I depended on, but soon found that I had, thro' ignorance, applied to the wrong persons. Being now made sensible of my mistake, I sent a letter to the supercargoes, who, tho' only passengers when on board,

are

are the chief men ashore, not to desire, but to demand a passage, for me, my officers, and company, which they agreed to; but with a charge to the captain, not to take in any thing belonging to us, but what was consigned to the India company in England. I was now informed of the Hoppo's demand for anchorage in the river, which was no less than 6500 tahel, or 2166l. 13s. 4d. sterling; an unconscionable imposition! but with which I was obliged to comply. However I soon after sold my ship for 2000 tahel, which money, with the rest of my effects, were consigned to the India company.

December 1721, I sailed in the *Cadogan*, captain John Hill commander, in company with the *Francis*, captain Newsham. We continued ten days at Batavia, and had a very pleasant passage to the Cape of Good Hope, likewise to St. Helena, also from thence to England, and arrived at Dungeness July 30, 1722. The same night we hired a vessel to carry us to Dover; and the next morning proceeded towards London, where we arrived August 1, after having spent three years, eleven months, and ten days in this tedious and fatiguing voyage.

It must be confessed, that this was, almost in all respects, an ill-conducted, as well as an unsuccessful expedition; and it is very evident, from the whole of this relation, that the work was intended, as an apology for his own behaviour; which was occasioned by a law-suit commenced against him by the owners on his return home. But the worst of it was, that this voyage gave the public a bad idea of all expeditions to the South Seas.

## C H A P. XXI.

*Captain Betagh's account of the country of Peru, and its inhabitants, during his captivity. By way of appendix to the former chapter.*

**I**T was, says this gentleman, in the beginning of the year 1720, Oh! fatal year to me and others! and about the middle of March; that captain Shelvocke sent me, Hatley, and the rest of us, to seek our fortunes in the lighter, called the Mercury; while he, in the Speedwell, went to plunder the village of Payta, where we might easily have joined him, had he told us his design. We had not cruised long about Cape Blanco, before we took a prize, with a good quantity of flour and chocolate. There was an old lady on board, with a thin old frier, whom we kept a day or two, and after taking out of the vessel what we wanted, we discharged it and them together. Soon after this we took a pink, with about seventy persons aboard, of whom thirty were negroes. Hatley going aboard, left me and Pressick, with four more hands in the Mercury, where we continued three days, when a heavy shower of rain fell and spoiled all our bread, and dry provisions; so we got aboard the prize, leaving three hands in the Mercury.

We staid eight days on-and-off the cape, to wait for the Speedwell, were we set the Spanish captain, the padre, and some gentlemen passengers ashore. At last we saw a sail, plying to windward, not doubting but it was the Speedwell, or Success, we stood towards her; and about ten in the morning we got near enough, to discover she was a ship of war. The master of our prize told us just before, that he met the Brilliant cruising for our privateers. Upon this, Hatley and I dressed ourselves in Spanish habits, hoisted Spanish colours, and confined our prisoners in the great cabin, suffering none of them but the Indians and negroes to appear upon deck. In this contrivance we had succeeded, had it  
not

not been for the obstinacy of John Sprake, who would not be kept off the deck. As the admiral came up, he fired a gun to the leeward; hereupon we got along side. Their first question was, if we had heard any thing of the English privateer? we answered, no. The next was, How it happened we were got no farther! we answered by reason of the currents. They seemed fully satisfied, and were getting their tacks aboard to make off, before Sprake and two or three more of our men came upon deck; when a Frenchman aboard the admiral, looking out at the mast-head, cryed out, "Par Dieu, monsieur, ils sont Anglois;" they immediately fired a broad side into us, and slightly wounded Hatley. They sent for all the English on board, and ordered two of their own officers into the prize. As for me, they ordered, I should be sent forty miles up the country, with Mr. Pressick and my serjeant Cobbs to bear me company. Hatley, and the rest were ordered to Lima by land, which was a journey of 400 miles. This poor gentleman having doubly incurred their displeasure; first for returning into those seas, after having been a prisoner so long, and used so well; and next for stripping the Portuguese captain of a good quantity of moidores, some of which were found upon him.

The custom of travelling in this country, is, from six in the evening till eight in the morning, on account of the scorching heat of the mid-day sun. I observed the country one open plain, with Indian plantations. The soil is pleasant and fertile; and if it was well watered, it would be as fine a country as any in the world. When night approached, we were puzzled in our way. I sometimes found myself stopped by hills of sand, and my mule would endeavour to pull the reins out of my hand, so the Indian advised me to throw them on his neck; when this was done, the creature readily found his way. At night we rested a little at an old empty house in a coppice, about half way; which my guide told me was built by the inhabitants of Piura, for the reception of prince St. Bueno, viceroy of Peru, when they

they met him on the entrance of his government and regaled him. At seven in the morning we came to Piura, a regular pretty town, on the banks of Collan. The Indian conducted us to the house of an honest Spanish gentleman, who, having heard his charge, our guide returned to Payta. In a quarter of an hour's time, the town's people flocked to see the fine shew, and, instead of being used like prisoners at discretion, we were entertained with freedom and civility. Our keeper's name was Don Jeronimo Baldivieso. He had five daughters, upon the sight of whom, and their obliging way of receiving us, we hoped our captivity would prove no way disagreeable. I now began to be sensible of the admiral's favour, and that for his sake we met with good treatment. After we had refreshed ourselves with chocolate, biscuit and water, we heard a welch harper in some inner apartment, playing various parts of several famous Italian, as well as English compositions; and, on enquiry, found, that all the honest Spaniards daughter's sung or played upon some instrument or other. The viceroy being an Italian, had brought a great many musicians of that country with him; who have now spread music every where, and it is as good in Peru, as in Old Spain.

All the European commodities are vended thro' the Spanish America by a sort of pedlars on foot, who come from Panama to Payta by water; and lessen their burdens as they go along. Their travelling expences are inconsiderable, for the Indians are brought so much under, that they find lodging for them, and provender for their mules. According to the Spanish custom, our dinner was set on the table under cover, where our keeper and we eat together, while the good lady, and her daughters, sat together in another room. This is their practice at all meals, and, if strong liquors are drank, it is then. We never disobliged the good old Spaniard, except once, when he saw me drinking a dram with the Doctor at the victualling-house: nothing being more disagreeable to the Spaniards than drunkenness; it was some time before I could make amends for  
this

this conduct: yet they admit of galantry in its utmost extent, so that it is only changing one vice for another. After having spent six weeks at Piura, our Indian guide came to conduct us to Payta, the admiral being returned. When we were on the point of taking leave, the surgeon was missing, which kept us here a day longer. The towns people had concealed him, resolving to keep him with them, being a very useful man; and if he could have procured a small chest of medicines, he soon might have made a pretty fortune. The next day we mounted our mules, parting with our kind keeper and his family with great reluctance. We were put on board the admiral at Payta, who, having done nothing, made a sort of cruising voyage to Calao, the port of Lima. As soon as we arrived here, we were sent to the same prison, in which the ship's company were confined; Mr. Hatley only excepted, for the reasons above-mentioned. Soon after commissioners were appointed to determine whether we should be treated as criminals, or as prisoners of war; and it was happy for us that the viceroy, who was an archbishop, would not sign any order for our execution. As for Hatley, some were for sending him to the mines, others for hanging him; but the several accounts of captain Shelvocke's vile proceedings, of the truth of which our people at Lima were sufficient evidence; (for, besides lieutenant Serjeantson, and his men, who were brought hither, came the men whom Shelvocke sent with Hopkins to shift for themselves in a poor empty bark, and were forced to surrender to the Indians;) so that the court believing Shelvocke more a principal in the piratical act than Hatley, let us all go by degrees. Hatley, indeed, was kept in irons about a twelvemonth. My imprisonment lasted but a fortnight, which was owing to the interposition of Mr. Fitzgerald, a gentleman born in France, who, by becoming my security, procured me to have the liberty of the city; by which means I had an opportunity of informing myself of what passed in this part of the world.

My

My first enquiry was after the condition of other English prisoners here, who came before us ; I was told, that most of them had taken up the religion of the country, were new christened, and dispersed among the convents. The first I met, had his new catechism in one hand, and a pair of large beads in the other. I, laughing, asked the fellow how he liked it ? he answered, very well, for having his religion to seek, he thought theirs better than none, since it procured him meat, drink, and a quiet life. Many of Shelvocke's men followed this example, perhaps for as good a reason as our people can give for their occasional conformity. About this time, four or five of Clipperton's men, and as many of Shelvocke's, met together at a public house, kept by one John Bell, an Englishman, to drink a bowl of punch, got drunk, and quarrelled ; and, forgetting they were true catholics, mistook an image of some honest saint that stood in a corner for one of their company, knocked him down, and demolished him. For this offence, they were all sent to the inquisition ; but after five days, honest John their landlord procured their enlargement. Soon after, 12 of these converts formed a scheme to run away with the Magaretta, a little ship, now lying in the harbour. In a few days the plot was discovered, and they put in prison. The government highly provoked, had near determined their execution, when an order came to discharge all but Sprake the projector, who was kept in irons three months, and then set at liberty. This shews that the Spaniards in Peru, are, by no means, so cruel, either in civil or ecclesiastical prosecutions, as they are in Europe.

While I was prisoner here, I made the best use of that leisure I enjoyed for the service of my country, by examining the present state of Peru, their manner of living, the forms of their government, their business and diversions, of all which I was an eye-witness. I shall begin with the description of Lima, where I spent most part of my time. This great and rich city is the capital of Peru, and the seat of an archbishop.

It



It is regularly built, the streets large and spacious. It is composed of little squares, and stands in an open vale, having a gentle stream to water it, by which it is divided as London is by the Thames; allowing for the great disproportion; the port being at Calao, 7 miles below. The houses are but one story, and but 14 feet high, on account of the frequent earthquakes \* in this country. Here are 8 parishes, 3 colleges, 28 monasteries of friars, and 13 of nuns, which make a fourth part of the city. However, by the quick flow of money, and the vast sums bequeathed, they are all well endowed. Here are also two hospitals for the sick, poor, and disabled. The city is two miles long, a mile and half broad, and the wall with the river make it in circumference six miles. On the east of the river lies the other part of the city, being joined by a handsome stone bridge of seven arches. I computed 70,000 persons in Lima of all colours. Of all parts of the world the people here are most expensive in apparel. The men dress as they do in England, their coats silk, fine cloth from England, or hair camblets, embroidered with gold and silver; their waistcoats commonly the best brocade. The women never wear stays or hoops, only stitched Holland jackets next their shifts. They generally throw a square piece of swan-skin flannel over their shoulders, covered all over with Flanders-lace; and have gold and silver lace round their petticoats. When they walk, the Creolian women are veiled, but not the Mulatto. Till the age of thirty they wear no headcloaths: but the pride of the sex is in Mechlin and Brussels lace, with which they trim their linen in a profuse manner, not omitting their sheets, shifts, and pillows. As to pearls and precious stones; in rings, bracelets, and necklaces, they are very extravagant.

---

\* On the 28th of October, 1746, a violent shock happened, which intirely destroyed this great city, with all its inhabitants: at the same time, the port-town of Calao was also demolished, where 5000 persons were swallowed up alive, and buried in the ruins.

The viceroy has a stately palace in the great square of the city, which I take to be as large as Lincoln's-Inn-Square. His salary is 10,000 l. a year, and his perquisites double that sum: and tho' his government expires at three, four, or five years, as the king pleases, having all places in his gift, he is supposed to make a good fortune for life. The country, in Peru, is naturally subject to earthquakes. I have been two or three times called out of my bed when such a thing has happened, tho' we have heard no more of it; their houses are all built with bambo, canes, and bricks dried in the sun, which are durable enough, as it never rains \*. The covering is matting spread over with ashes to keep out the dew, which is all the wet they have. The little river is mostly snow-water, coming down from the neighbouring mountains, that are all the year covered with snow; a great part of which is melted in summer, which lasts from September to March. One would imagine this country should be much hotter than it really is; but there is no comparison between the heat of this climate in America, and the same degrees of latitude in Africa. The want of rain in this part of the continent, is, in some measure, compensated by the canals and drains made by the Indians before the conquest, for bringing down water from the mountains, by great labour and art; so that the valleys are refreshed, producing corn, grafs, and various fruits. They have plenty of cattle, fowl, and fish, and all provisions common with us, except butter, instead of which they always use lard: they have oil,

---

\* *A Spanish historian has given us the natural cause of this constant drought. He observes, the south west winds blow upon the Peruvian coast all the year, and the ocean is called the Pacific Ocean, because the winds never disturb it. These easy gales bear away the waters from the plains, before they can rise, and form a body sufficient to descend in a shower: but when they are carried farther and higher, they grow more compact, and at length fall, by their own weight, into rain.*

wine,

wine, and brandy enough, but not so good as in Europe. They drink much of the Jesuits herb camini, brought from Paraguay by land ; for all East India tea is forbid ; of this they make a decoction, and suck it thro' a pipe. Chocolate is their usual breakfast, and the grace-cup after dinner ; sometimes they drink a glass of brandy for digestion, but seldom any wine. In the kingdom of Chili they make a little butter ; and their way of doing it is very remarkable. The cream is put into a sheep-skin, kept for that use ; two women lay it upon a table, and shake it between them till the butter comes ; but instead of this they always use lard.

The Spaniards are no friends to the bottle ; yet gallantry and intrigue are here brought to perfection ; in-somuch as it is unmannerly not to have a mistress, and scandalous not to keep her well. The women, indeed, have many accomplishments, both natural and acquired ; their conversation is free, their motion graceful, their looks winning, and their words engaging. Yet this practice is attended with many inconveniences, notwithstanding the regularity with which it is carried on ; for the men are so seriously taken up with these sort of matters, that the women engross most part of their time, and spoil public conversation : for this reason here are no taverns or coffee-houses, and the men are never to be met with but at their offices, or at church. Nay farther, this propensity to gallantry depresses the spirits, and is the bane of industry, corrupting the minds of both sexes, and instilling the basest principles of indolence and debauchery. So natural it is for the love of pleasure to dastardize the very bravest people. From this deficiency of spirits in these Spaniards, their carelessness with respect to those countries and islands yet undiscovered, in the neighbourhood of their vast dominions in America, may be justly attributed. The regions which lie far north of the kingdom of Mexico, are known to abound with silver, precious stones, and other rich commodities ; yet the Spaniards not only decline their conquests, but discourage, as much as possible, the report spread of the wealth and value of those countries.

D d

tries.

tries. If this proceeded from a maxim of true policy, that of being content, and applying themselves to govern well what they already possess, would be very commendable: but while it plainly appears from their viceroys and officers, that their sole view is to accumulate wealth, at the expence of those they should protect; is it not natural for the people to wish they would apply themselves to discoveries, which would afford the governors means of making their fortunes, without oppressing such as already are the subjects of Spain?

Of all the discoveries that have been talked of among the Spaniards, none made so much noise as the islands of Solomon, which are supposed to be those discovered by Ferdinand de Quiros, who reported them to be excessively rich, as well as populous. Don Alvaro de Miranda was afterwards sent upon discovering them, but miscarried in the search. While I was at Peru this attempt was renewed, but to no purpose. The person, who was employed in this discovery, was one Mr. Thaylet, a French trader, and an expert artist, with whom I was well acquainted at Lima. He had formerly commanded several good ships, and offered his service to the government, which was kindly received. The first affair of importance, in which he was employed, was an expedition to the island Juan Fernandez, in order to find the bottle left there by captain Clipperton for captain Shelvocke, of which the viceroy was informed by one of Clipperton's men who was taken prisoner \*. While Mr. Thaylet was gone upon this cruise, a Spanish ship arrived at Calao, the master of which reported, that, being driven from his course, he had made the islands of Solomon. On Mr. Thaylet's return with Clipperton's instructions, and his

---

\* *I might add, says our author, that this is so direct a refutation of all that captain Shelvocke has advanced upon this subject, that it is impossible for any man to believe what he charges captain Clipperton with to be true, &c.*

two men who deserted there, the viceroy, willing to encourage him, ordered the same vessel to be fitted out for two months under Thaylet's command, to search for the aforesaid islands; but after having expended his provisions, he returned without success.

The riches of Peru consist in their silver mines; the most remarkable of which, at present, are those of Loxa, Camora, Cuenca, Puerto Vejo, and St. Juan del Oro. These are worked at present. At Potosi likewise are a great number of mines, which are all worked with more or less profit. There are some mines to the north of Lima, but to the south they are very numerous. On the back of the Andes lies a nation called Lofs Plateros, or the plate-men, from the quantities of silver they possess; but the Spaniards have little communication with them. The best of their mine-countries are to the south of Cusco, from thence to Potosi, and to the frontiers of Chili, where, for the space of 300 miles, there are a continued succession of mines, some deserted, and others discovered every day.

The several monuments of antiquity, which now remain at Cusco, invincibly prove, that we must not judge of the ancient state of the Indians, by what we hear of them at present. One cannot conceive how they could raise the walls of the Temple of the Sun, the remains of which are still to be seen at Cusco; these walls are formed of stones sixteen feet diameter, and which, tho' rough and irregular, so exactly fit one another, that there is not any void between them. I saw also, continues our author, the ruins of several of those edifices, which they called Tambos, made use of as magazines, and where the Incas lodged when they travelled; the gates of which are not wide, but very lofty, and the walls of a kind of granite. All these edifices are situated along the magnificent road, which was near 400 leagues long, and leads from Cusco to Quito. It is impossible to behold such monuments as are still remaining, without being disposed to think advantageously of those, who had the boldness to undertake, and the resolution to finish them.

The best ore that comes from the first-mentioned mines, is in a form the Spaniards called pinnas, which is a very porous lump of silver, being the remainder of a paste, made of silver-dust and mercury: this last, when exhaled, leaves a spongy mass, full of holes, and light. We shall not trouble the reader with the particular progress of the ore from the mine to this kind of mass, but only let him know that it is first reduced to a fine powder, then kneaded up with quick-silver. These spongy lumps are afterwards cast into ingots, on which are stamped the arms of the crown, and also those of the place where they were cast, with their weight and quantity. These mines belong to the person that first discovers them. All that such a one digs out, is his own, paying the king's duty, which, for gold is a 20th part, and for silver a 5th. The mine countries are so very cold and barren, that the inhabitants get most of their provisions from the coast. This is occasioned by the salts and sulphurs exhaled from the earth, which destroy the seeds of all vegetables. One would wonder that throughout this part of the world, that country should be best inhabited which is the most barren and unwholesome; while those parts, which may vie with Paradise itself for beauty and fertility, are but thinly peopled. Yet, this is easily reconciled, when we reflect, that it is not the love of ease, but the thirst of wealth, that draws people hither.

It would be needless here to attempt a description of the large kingdom of Chili, which has been already done by various authors. All that we intend is, to give the reader such an idea of it; as he may comprehend the nature of its trade, how it is connected with the general commerce of Peru, and how the wealth of it is transported to Europe. The soil, where it admits of cultivation, is very fertile, and such fruit trees as are brought hither from Europe, come to the greatest perfection. It is common to see apple-trees here, with their fruit coming forward all the year, that is, with blossoms, apples just formed; green and ripe fruit at the same

same time. The valleys wear a perpetual verdure, and the hills are covered with odoriferous herbs. Here are trees of all kinds fit for every use; so that, independent of its gold mines, Chili may be accounted one of the richest and finest countries in the world. Yet, notwithstanding all these advantages, it is but thinly peopled. It is, indeed, subject to earthquakes, but not in so dreadful a degree as Peru. This country would admit of the greatest and most useful improvements in grain and fruit; yet are the Spaniards so indolent, that they entirely neglect it: they will not put a hand to any kind of work; but leave every thing to the Indians, whom they make their drudges, tho' they are not to be used as such, by an express prohibition from the king of Spain. And these are not the most active servants; for when the oxen are to be led to the plough, or any other carriage, they will not stir from home without they are allowed to ride. They ride bare-legged, have spurs of a monstrous size, and make no scruple of goring their horses sides, having such plenty of them, that as soon as one is tired, they turn him loose among the woods, and immediately take another. Their manner of catching an horse, ox, or a sheep is with a noose in the end of a cord, at which they are surprizingly dexterous, and whenever they mount their horses, they never fail of providing themselves with one of these. It is a very useful weapon even against an enemy, casting it about his body, and then dragging him along full speed. Their horses are very swift, and they use them accordingly, being always on the gallop, without any regard to hills or valleys. The trot and pace being unknown here. We had the diversion of taking four sea wolves here, whose skin is only valuable. Here are prodigious quantities of sea and land fowls, and some of the latter of a monstrous size, especially the condor; which is three times bigger than an European turkey, having a white ring round the neck. The hawks here are of two kinds, one exactly like ours; the other has a top-knot on the head, and a red upper mandible. Of the latter sort I purchased a male and

female, who got away when we were above 200 leagues from land. I must here also observe, that Chili and Peru afford instances of avarice and oppression that far exceed any practised in Europe, and which are a scandal and impediment to religion.

When a Spanish pedlar goes into this country, he waits upon the chief first, and stands before him without speaking a word. The cacique, after a short pause, says to him, Are you come? he answers, I am. What have you brought me? replies the chief. I bring you, rejoins the Spaniard, wine, &c. Hereupon the cacique bids him welcome; then appoints him a lodging near his own cottage, where his wives and children bid him welcome also, and demand a present, which he gives. At the same time the chief or cacique blows a horn trumpet which he has by him, to give his scattered subjects notice of the merchant's arrival, with whom they may trade. They come and view his goods, consisting of combs, knives, glasses, ribbands, needles, thread, saws, hatchets, &c. When they have made their bargains, they carry the things home without paying for them; so that the merchant delivers all, not knowing to whom, or seeing any thing of his debtors. When he is about to go away, the cacique orders payment by blowing his horn again; then every man honestly brings the cattle he owes: and because these consist of mules, cows, oxen, goats, &c. the cacique orders a number of men to conduct them to the Spanish frontiers. Here it may be remarked, that there is as much civility and honesty among these people, whom we term savages, as in the most polite, and well-governed states, or kingdoms. The great number of cows and bullocks which are killed in Chili every year come from the plains of Paraguay, which are covered with them; and, by having a communication with La Concepcion and Buenos Ayres, they make all the herds of beeves and goats, which they kill in Chili by thousands for tallow and lard, answer their ends. These slaughters also afford the hides, and especially the goat-skins, which they dress like Morocco leather.

1

and



and send to Peru to make shoes. Besides the trade of hides, tallow, and salt meat, the inhabitants of La Concepcion deal with the Chilians for corn, with which they annually load ten or more ships of fifty tons each for the port of Calao. The mines of Quilogoya and Quilacura, lie within four leagues of this port, and afford vast quantities of gold. And the Estancia del Re, or king's farm, which is also at no great distance, is, by much the most plentiful lavadore, or washing place in all Chili, where there are sometimes found lumps of pure gold of a prodigious size.

There is another, and the most considerable port of them all; which is that of Valparaíso. This is esteemed one of the best harbours in the South Seas. To this port all the riches of the gold mines which lie behind and on every side of it are brought; it lies up a river fifteen leagues below St. Jago, capital of Chili. In the gold mines of Tilti the ore is found in a very hard stone, some of which sparkles, and betrays the inclosed treasure to the eye; tho' most of it has not the least sign of gold, but appears to be a harsh and hard kind of stone of various colours, some white, some black, some red. This is broken in a mill, and reduced into a gross powder, with which is mixed quicksilver. To this paste they let in a sharp stream of water, which reduces it to a kind of mud, the earthy particles are carried off by the current, and the gold and quicksilver precipitate by their own weight. When this mud has settled into a kind of paste, they put it into a linen bag, and strain it very hard, by which means the greatest part of the mercury is driven out: the remainder they evaporate by fire, so that they have all the gold together in a little wedge, like a pine apple; from whence it is called pinna. The gold mines, of all others, produce metal the most unequally. They follow a vein which grows wider, then narrower, and sometimes seems lost, in a small depth of ground; this sport of nature, gives the miners hopes of finding what they call the purse; which is the end of a vein,  
so

so rich, that it sometimes makes the owner wealthy in an instant.

On the descent of this mountain, during the rainy season, a rapid stream of water, passing through the gold ore, washes abundance of that rich metal, as it ripens, from the bed; on which account it is, for four months, esteemed the best lavadore in Chili; and with good reason, since here are sometimes found lumps of pure gold, of an ounce weight. Four leagues farther from Valparaíso, at a place called Palma, is another rich lavadore; and all over the country hereabouts the fall of a rivulet is attended with golden showers, the richest of which fall into the laps of the jesuits, who purchase a number of mines and lavadores, and work them by their own servants. The soil about this port is rich, and fruitful; insomuch that forty ships laden with corn, go annually from hence to Lima; and notwithstanding the vast exportation, the same commodity is here sold cheap, an English bushel being to be bought for less than 3 s. Before we quit this subject, it should be observed, that there is a great trade carried on thro' all Chili from the North Seas, by the way of Buenos Ayres, by which they receive European commodities, and a large balance of silver in return. This, perhaps, is the greatest inland commerce in the world; for it is 1500 miles from Buenos Ayres to Potosí, and tho' it be but 160 leagues more to Valparaíso, this road is more difficult to pass than all the rest; for the journey thro' the mountains, called by the Spaniards *La Cordilleras*\*, takes up seven days, tho' it is not above 60 miles; and the passengers are obliged to carry provisions.

---

\* *The mountains called the Cordilleras are part of the province of Quito, to the north and south of which capital, I saw lands extremely well cultivated, and a great number of towns and villages inhabited by Spaniards and Indians, as much peopled as some of our counties in England. The city of Quito contains 30 or 40,000 inhabitants, of which no more than one third are of Spanish extraction.*  
Com-

visions for their mules, as well as themselves and attendants; the whole road being a continued tract of rocks and precipices, the country round exposed to snows, and excessively barren: however, from St. Jago to the mines, and from thence to Valparaíso, is equally pleasant and safe. It is worth the reader's notice to observe, that this journey from Buenos Ayres to Valparaíso, is directly across the whole continent of South America: which is a clear proof of the vast extent of the Spanish empire, which reaches from sea to sea. On the whole, tho' a great part of this country be quite desert, yet the Spaniards settled in Chili acquire annually vast riches; since the country is but thinly inhabited, and all the gold drawn from the mines and lavadores must be divided among them. The people of St. Jago live in such a manner, as sufficiently demonstrates the truth of this observation, and, at the same time, the riches of Chili: since all their utensils, even those that are most common, are of pure gold, and it is believed, that the wealth of this city alone amounts to 20,000,000. Add to this, that their gold mines are continually encreasing, and it is only for the want of hands, they are not worked to infinitely more advantage; those already discovered, and neglected, being sufficient to employ 40,000 men.

The Spaniards endeavour, by all ways possible, to prevent the vast riches of those extensive dominions from passing into other hands; but the knowledge that other nations have of them, on the one hand, and the great demand of European manufactures, among their

---

*Commodities are not dear here; foreign manufactures alone, which it is very difficult to convey hither, bear an excessive price; the country supplies it abundantly with all the necessaries of life. The day, in this province, is always pretty nearly equal to the night. It is a perpetual equinox; and has the same degree of temperature throughout the whole year. It is the rains alone, that fall from November to May, which distinguish the seasons.*

inhabi-

inhabitants on the other, have excited almost every nation in Europe to endeavour to gain a share of them; who have done this too so effectually, that it is a doubt, whether any considerable part of these riches centre among the inhabitants of Spain; as will plainly appear, if we consider, that the very trade carried on from Spain to these parts, is of much greater consequence to foreigners, than to the Spaniards, they having few commodities, and scarce any manufactures to make up their cargoes, but what they purchase from other countries. The merchants of Cadiz are barely factors for the English, French, and Dutch, whose goods they purchase, and send to America, paying for them out of the returns made by the plate-fleet; so that prodigious sums of money must be annually exported to obtain such commodities. Besides these, there are many other drawbacks, which the Spaniards are obliged to submit to: for example, all the negroes they employ in their plantations, and elsewhere, are purchased from foreigners, particularly of the English and Dutch, at a very large expence. Nay, farther, under the pretence of furnishing them with negroes, there is a clandestine trade annually carried on, from all their coasts on the North Sea. But they were pretty safe in the South Seas, from any thing, except the depredations of pirates, till the general war, on account of the succession to the crown of Spain, began; this created a new kind of contraband trade, unknown to former ages; we mean, the French interlopers, who carried vast quantities of European goods into the South Seas, which, till that time, scarce any other nation attempted. This innovation was always looked upon with an evil eye by the court of Madrid; but as there were many circumstances, at that time, which rendered this a sort of necessary evil, the Spaniards, inhabitants of Old Spain, were obliged to submit to it: but as to the Creolians, if they had European goods, at a cheap rate, they cared not who took their money. The history of these interlopers is so important, as well as curious, and at the same  
same

same time so very little known in England, we presume it will be well received by the reader; being composed, says our author, of such remarks, as fell within the compass of my own observation; of the truth of which I am a competent witness.

The town of St. Malo has always been noted for good privateers, which hurt the English and Dutch trade very much during the reigns of king William, and part of queen Anne; and all the French South-Sea-trade is owing to their privateering. It is farther to be remarked, that tho' our English admiralty had a stout Squadron cruising in the Atlantic ocean, yet we never took one of their South-Sea-men. My reason for this is, they kept their ships extremely clean, having ports to careen at, which we did not think of; for in the year 1709, when I belonged to her majesty's ship the *Loo*, being one of the convoys to Newfoundland, we saw a 50 gun ship upon the coast, and chased her soon, discovering she was French built; but she crouded sail, and as soon left us, having been just cleaned at Placentia. We were afterwards informed, by French prisoners, that she was bound to St. Malo, with three millions of dollars on board, and was then so trim, as she trusted to her speed, and valued nobody. Since Placentia has been yielded to Great Britain, they make use of St. Catharina; the island Grande; or Martinico, in the West Indies.

This trade turning out so well, they all fell into it, sending no less than twenty sail of ships every year. I, says our author, saw on the coast of Chili, in the year 1721, eleven sail there, among which were several of 50 guns, and one called the *Flower-de-luce*, that could mount 70. This being contrary to the *Affiento* treaty, memorials were frequently presented at Madrid, and the king of Spain, unwilling to break his engagements with England, resolved to gratify that court, by destroying the French trade in the South Seas. Accordingly, his majesty fitted out a strong Squadron, under the command of Mr. Martinet, for this purpose. It seems as if, by this expedition, an experiment

riment was made, to see if the Spaniards were hardy enough to weather Cape Horn; but alas! they, ever since acquiring their possessions in America, are grown so idle and delicate, that it would be a difficult task, to find an intire ship's company able to perform that navigation.

The vast advantages proceeding from the trade of Chili, are so notorious, that his catholic majesty was obliged to shut out all nations, as well as Great Britain, tho' he makes nothing of it himself; for it is rare to hear that a Spanish ship has gone by Cape Horn. From hence arises the extraordinary price all European goods bring at Peru and Chili. I have been told at Lima, that they are often sold at 400 per cent. profit.

When Martinet arrived in Chili to take and destroy the Malomen, his own countrymen, under the king of Spain's commission; he suffered but one of fourteen to escape him; this too, against his will; she hiding herself in a close harbour; tho' this was doing a sensible kindness to the South Sea company; the trading part of the Creole Spaniards were almost ruined by its hindering the circulation of money, and spoiling business; so that they could not endure the sight of the French men of war, tho' they liked the Malomen merchants well enough. On the other hand, the French, imagining they had done the Spaniards great service, expected civil treatment: but when Martinet brought his prizes into the port of Calao, his officers &c. gave themselves extravagant airs, which incensed the Creolians more against them; and mutual quarrels grew so high, that the ensign on board the Ruby was shot from a window, and more killed. The ensign, being the nephew of Jonquiere, captain of the Ruby, he brought their three ships to bear on the town of Calao, and threatened to demolish it, unless the assassin was delivered up: but all his blustering having no manner of effect, he prevailed with Commodore Martinet to make the best of his way home. About this time many rich passengers were got together at the town of Conception, to take their passage to Europe. Herein

Herein Jonquiere got the start of the commodore, having first reached that port, and got so many good passengers in his ship, whose effects all together, I was well informed, amounted to four millions of dollars. What a fine booty, adds captain Betagh, did we miss thro' Shelvocke's obstinate conduct! for when the Ruby found us in the harbour of St. Catharine's, Jonquiere's company consisted but of sixty sound men, out of 400; so that he was really afraid of us, and durst not send his boat out to the watering-place, where our coopers, &c. were at work, till he had first asked our captain leave. To convince the reader, that the St. Malomen were not discouraged at these captures and confiscations, we found the Solomon of that place, carrying 40 guns and 150 men at Hilo, on the coast of Chili, with several small barks at her stern; here she sold her cargo in six weeks, got a supply of provisions, and left the coast without interruption.

I must here add a few remarks on captain Shelvocke's account of his voyage and transactions, to convince the public, that what he has been pleased to say, on this subject, is not consistent with truth. As to the Mercury, in which he sent captain Hatley, me, and the rest; she was a flat-bottomed vessel, that would neither row, nor sail; and the course we were directed to sail was exactly in the tract of the enemy; so that I really judged it to be the captain's design we should be taken. 'Tis true, that we took two prizes, one a bark, the other an old English pink, bound from Panama to Lima; which, instead of 150,000 dollars on board, had not so much as a single half-crown; she being bound in her ballast with a small parcel of pedlery ware from Panama. We went into this prize immediately, leaving only a couple of hands to take care of the Mercury, and was soon after taken by the Brilliant, a Spanish cruiser of thirty guns, as we were plying between Lobos and Cape Blanco, having been twice ashore in this island, without being able to discover any signs of captain Shelvocke's being there, or of

E e

meeting

meeting with any instructions to find him at Payta. See page 263 and 264.

As to captain Shelvocke's fine story of happily escaping from the *Peregrine*, I heard it two days after it happened, and was afterwards on board her at Lima, by which I became an eye-witness of her force; and here do aver, that she carried but 40 guns, and that her crew consisted of only 350 ignorant wretches, with but 12 white faces among them; that 20 expert seamen had been more than a match for them; that her commander, whom Shelvocke calls admiral, was a Creolian; a mere fresh-water man, who never saw an action before; that she was unable and unwilling to fight, and if she had not met with the *Speedwell* in the harbour, would never have followed her to sea. Nay, the *Speedwell*'s first fire terrified them to such a degree, that they all ran from their quarters, and the very steerſman quitted the helm; some of these poor devils hid themselves in the hold, scared out of their wits, while others fell on their knees, praying to the Saints for deliverance. The *Speedwell* fired but nine guns, and, as these were found sufficient, what occasion had the captain to waste his powder! However this panic of theirs gave Shelvocke an opportunity to get his men aboard, cut his cable, and go right away afore the wind. This is the truth of the matter. See page 266.

As to what captain Shelvocke says concerning the wreck, and the crew's usage towards him afterwards, on the island of Juan Fernandez; the truth appears to me thus. All his people and many others assured me, that there was no wind at all when the ship was lost. The captain well knew, that if he should be surpris'd with a gale in that perilous road, and so poorly provided with ground-tackle, they must inevitably have perished: he took care therefore to save their lives, by destroying the ship in fine serene weather; which the ingenious captain performed by bringing a spring upon her cable, with which he stove his ship's broad-side, and



and kept her in that position till the cable was torn asunder. Mr. Dodd asserted, that three hours before the ship went ashore, some hands were haling in an hawser on the quarter deck, and that he enquired of Henderfon, the gunner, what that was for, being himself no seaman. Henderfon told him, if he would be rightly informed, he must ask the captain. To confirm this, several of his people made affidavit, that it blew no wind at all; that every soul got safe ashore; and that it was their belief he lost the ship on purpose. Mr. La Porte, seeing immediate ruin, cried out, Set the fore-sail, hoping thereby to do some good; and, while Phipps and others were actually upon the yard, Shelvocke hastily called them down; then taking the helm in his hand, said, Never mind it, boys; stand fast, I'll lay her on a feather-bed; which, as it proved a hard one, shewed his disregard of the ship. As to the change of circumstances here, which Shelvocke complains of, I am very positive, that, instead of losing, he was, by that, a considerable gainer; for, according to the original articles, half the value of every prize was to be set aside for the owners, and the remaining part divided into shares, in proportion to the ship's company, which made them 650, out of which the captain was to have 60: but from the alteration of circumstances, the lessening of the ship's company, and the reduction of the officers that still survived, there were now less than 52 shares; out of which the captain was to have 6, according to the new regulation. As to getting possession of the arms, captain Shelvocke gives a strange account of it. He, for reasons best known to himself, celebrated the 10th of June for a festival, and the men having got the arms, with his consent, to fire volleys upon that occasion, they refused to part with them. See pag. 268, to 271.

As to the *Margaretta*, instead of being a forty-gun ship, as captain Shelvocke asserts, she, to my own knowledge, carried but thirteen, and was commanded by a Frenchman, who told me, that he had not above a dozen cartridges of powder on board, and two or

three small arms, belonging to the passengers. He also assured us, that they suffered no other hurt, than a negro boy wounded in the cheek; and that a man stood by the colours to strike, in case captain Shelvocke had boarded them; but he thought it best to sheer off without making such an attempt. See page 273.

I shall now proceed to my own affairs, and give an account of the manner of my return from that part of the world. Captain Fitzgerald furnished me with necessaries and money, till the time of my departure; he gave not only me, but twenty more, a passage to Cadiz, in a Spanish advice-boat, called the Flying-Fish. Mr. Pressick acted as surgeon in her, and received wages, and so did all our men, being released from prison to navigate the ship. I, unwilling to eat the bread of idleness, kept my watches, like other officers: And pray what harm is there in this! Tho' Shelvocke had the stupidity to call it treason. This must appear a malicious charge, as well as an ignorant one; that after a man has been driven amongst his enemies, he must be stigmatized with the name of traitor, for being kindly used, and working his passage back again; and truly, because I was not murdered there, I must be executed at home. This is Shelvocke's great christianity, and good conscience! but to return to my story: on my arrival at Cadiz, captain John Evers, of the *Britannia*, gave me his table, and my passage to London; where, upon my arrival, and the representation of my hardships, the following worthy persons, from their concern for my suffering, were each of them pleased to make me a present of ten guineas, viz. Edward Hughes, William Sloper, and Alexander Strahan, Esqs. Samuel Winder, Beak Winder, Henry Neal, and John Barnes, merchants; Humphry Thayer, and Thomas Stratfield, druggists. This gave me the satisfaction of seeing, that those who were the best judges, had a proper idea of the miseries I had sustained, and approved of the manner in which I behaved; the only consolation I was capable of receiving

ing, in the circumstances to which I was reduced by that unfortunate voyage. This, I hope, will acquit me in the opinion of every candid reader, from the aspersions thrown upon me by Shelvocke; and acquire me, what every man would wish to have, the approbation of him, to whom, of my own free choice, I submit the censure of my actions.

We shall not detain the reader long with our remarks on Mr. Betagh's narrative. However, as herein some things of importance are contained, they must not be passed over in silence. First, he has fully proved, that the navigation round Cape Horn is no such a dangerous voyage as some people imagine. For, if 20 Malomen could perform it in one year, without a single vessel being lost or put back, what should prevent an English fleet from doing so, at any time, for the service of the nation? by this account it may likewise be observed, with how much ease the French carried on a vast trade to the South Seas, at a time, when the very appearance of an English ship in those seas was looked upon as a prodigy; notwithstanding the former, of all nations, had the least title, tho' hitherto they have had the best luck, in becoming interlopers, in these, the richest parts of the known world.

We had almost forgot to mention a very useful and important hint given by Mr. Betagh, which justly deserves our peculiar notice. If the French made so good use of Placencia while it was in their hands, by taking in thither their homeward bound Malomen, &c. from the South Seas to clean and careen, and thereby put them in such a condition, as to be regardless of the English men of war that might be upon the coast; surely the usefulness of this settlement in those parts, now in our possession, might be attended with the like advantages. Hence also the usefulness of the French settlements in those parts are set in a new light, and fully inform us of the importance of defending Newfoundland, and Nova Scotia at any rate, as the only means of hindering them from putting the same thing in practice hereafter.

## C H A P. XXII.

*The voyage of commodore Roggewein, with three ships,  
for the discovery of southern lands.*

**T**HIS gentleman had been a counsellor in the court of justice at Batavia for many years, and there acquired a considerable fortune. On his return from the East Indies, recollecting a promise made to his father on his death-bed; in the year 1721, he presented a memorial to the Dutch West India company, setting forth, that his father, at such a time, proposed discovering the southern continent and island, which proposal they had been pleased to accept, and that he, his son, was now ready to perform it. The company as readily received this memorial, and told Mr. Roggewein, that they would instantly give directions for equipping such a squadron, as he should think necessary for executing his design. This squadron consisted of three ships, namely, the Eagle, of 36 guns and 111 men, captain Job Coster, on board of which was the commodore; the Tienhoven, of 28 guns and 100 men, commanded by captain James Bowman; the African Galley of fourteen pieces of cannon and sixty men, captain Henry Rosenthal. This little squadron sailed from the Texel on the 21st of August in the same year, and continued their course to the south west, in order to gain the coast of Barbary; but were prevented by a great storm, which did them considerable damage. One of their vessels lost her main-top-sail and mizen-mast; and in the commodore, the main-sail-yard came down, and wounded several people upon deck.

After two days they began to recover from the dangers they had sustained, and made for the Canaries. When they found themselves in the latitude of 28 deg. the man at the mast head informed them of a sail which carried English colours. The commodore immediately made the signal for battle; their station being  
so.

so lucky as to have the advantage of the wind. These, which were English pirates, observing their disposition, hoisted out a black flag with a death's head, formed a line, and in an hour's time the action began, and lasted two more; when the pirates crowded away as fast as possible. As soon as the Dutch commodore saw them bearing away, he cried out, Let the rascals go.

This unlucky affair cost the squadron a great many men, and the carpenters found themselves, for some time, full employment in stopping the leaks. November 15 they had sight of the island Madeira, and there came to an anchor. From hence they steered for the Cape Verde Islands, and continued their course till they approached the line; where the shifting of the winds incommoded them greatly. However they crossed it with the loss of one man, who died of a fever. Now drawing near the coast of Brasil, they designed to anchor at the island Grande; but continuing their rout, they arrived in sight of Porto, where some of the ship's company, of which our author was one, went ashore to seek wood, water, and provisions; as also to bury the man. Before they were all landed, they saw a body of Portuguese well armed, moving along the shore, and appearing to have a design to keep them off.

The Dutch, very desirous of gaining some intelligence, notwithstanding they threatened to fire upon them, ventured ashore, shewing the dead body, and asked a good many questions about the country; to which they could get no other answer, than that Porto was an advance-port to St. Sebastian, and that they were inhabitants of Rio Janeiro, which lay about eight miles off. The Dutch endeavoured to persuade some of these people to go on board their vessels, and at length prevailed upon two, who promised to carry their squadron to a safe port. After sailing about six leagues, in sight of many small islands, they found themselves in the road of St. Sebastian. The next day they came to an anchor before the town, which they saluted with seven, five, and three pieces of cannon, but received

no

no answer, the people imagining they were pirates. To remove these doubts the commodore wrote a letter to the governor, desiring that he would furnish them with such necessaries as they wanted for ready money. His excellency returned for answer, that nothing of this sort was in his power; as he was subordinate to the governor of Rio Janeiro; but that he would send an express thither immediately. The Dutch commodore, not satisfied with this, gave the governor to understand, that as he was willing to pay ready money for what he had of him, if he could not obtain it by fair means, he should be obliged to take it by foul. Hereupon a skirmish happened, in which one Dutchman was wounded in the shoulder, but upon returning the fire, two Portuguese were killed; at the sight of which, the rest took to their heels; so the Dutch landing, filled their water and returned on board.

After leaving the coast of Brasil, the commodore sailed to 30 deg. south latitude, and continued his course within 40 or 50 leagues of the American shore. December 21, in the latitude of 40 deg. south, they were surprized by a storm of rain, thunder, and lightening, in which they were separated, and did not meet again till three months afterwards. As soon as the hurricane was intirely over, the commodore with the African Galley stood S. S. W. till they arrived at the Streights of Magellan, where they discovered an island 200 leagues in circumference, and about 80 leagues from the main land of America; but seeing no smoke, they concluded it was uninhabited. This island was discovered by a French privateer who called it St. Lewis; but the Dutch observing its many capes, imagined they were so many different islands, and gave them the name of the New Islands; having also been all round, and particularly to the east coast of it, they called the uttermost point, New-year's-Cape, because it was discovered on that day, and the whole island, lying in 52 deg. south, they called Belgia Australis.

Quitting this place, they returned to the mouth of the Streights of Magellan, and continued their course south,

south, resolving to pass the Streights of Le Maire; these, in their opinion being infinitely more commodious than those of Magellan. Here they saw abundance of whales, and were followed for a whole month by a kind of fish, which the Dutch sailors call the Sea Devil. They took great pains to catch it, but without effect. It has a large head, a short thick body, and a very long tail; like that which painters bestow on a dragon. Coming at length into 55 deg. they began to conceive they were near the mouth of the Streights, and immediately after they saw States-land, which makes one side of them. Here they were in a miserable situation, and would willingly have cast anchor; but the weather was so rough they could not.

They passed these Streights, which are about ten leagues long and six over, where broadest; with an incredible swiftness. It being now in the midst of January, the summer was in its height in that climate. The contrary winds having driven these ships 500 leagues from the continent, the commodore observed, that he was now beyond Cape Horn, and therefore steered N. E. and by N. for the coast of Chili. When they had continued this course for two months, they began to think they had not yet doubled Cape Horn, but stood away southerly too soon. March 10, however, being in the latitude of 37 deg. 30 min. they discovered the coast of Chili. After continuing this course for three weeks, they found they had not doubled Cape Horn, but stood away northerly too soon; yet they, in a little time, anchored off the island Mocha, three leagues from the continent. The next day it was resolved to steer for the island Juan Fernandez, and four days after they got sight of that place.

The day following, being just ready to go in, they saw a ship riding there, which proved to be the Tienhoven, their consort; that had been separated from them three months before. When they had saluted each other, &c. they built huts, sent their sick ashore, and the commodore having attentively considered the advantageous situation of this island, conceived a design  
of

of settling in it, as it would, in his opinion, afford sufficient subsistence for 600 families at least. But this was put off till his return. The commodore, after he had quitted this island, sailed 12 degrees to the westward, having sight of a number of birds, which attended them till they arrived at a small island about 16 leagues in extent, which they called Pasch, or Easter Island, from the day on which it was discovered. The African Galley being the smallest, and the best sailer in the squadron, went to examine this new country, and reported, that it seemed to be fertile, and was well inhabited: hereupon the commodore resolved the whole squadron should go in. The next day was employed in looking for a port, and when they were within two miles of the shore, an Indian came off in a canoe. They made signs to him to come aboard, which he very readily did, and was kindly received; being stark naked, the first present they made him was a piece of cloth to cover his body; they gave him also pieces of coral, beads, and such like baubles, all which, with a dried fish, he hung about his neck. His body was painted all over with various kinds of figures; his natural complexion a deep brown, his ears large and long. He was tall, well made, robust, and of a happy countenance, brisk, active, and merry. They gave him a glass of wine to drink, which he threw away in a manner that surprised them; and made our author imagine that he was fearful of being poisoned; but, perhaps, the smell of strong liquor might offend him, who had always been used to water. They now cloathed him from head to foot, and put him a hat on, with which he was not at all pleased; but seemed uneasy. They gave him victuals, which he eat heartily, but could not be prevailed upon to use either knife or fork. They then ordered their musick to play, with this he seemed extremely pleased, and when they took him by the hand would leap and dance. As they found it impossible to anchor that day, they sent off the Indian, in hopes he might encourage others; but what is really surprising, he had no mind to go: he looked  
upon



upon them with a sorrowful countenance, and held up both his hands to his native island, crying out distinctly, Odorrage! Odorrage! Odorrage! and it was with great reluctance he was prevailed upon to get into his canoe again.

They thought he called upon his god, for on landing they observed abundance of idols on the coast: the ensuing day many thousand inhabitants came down to meet them, bringing vast quantities of fowls, and roots. Some came on board, others ran to and fro like wild beasts: then they lighted fires and offered to their idols, as we imagined, to implore their assistance against strangers. All necessary preparations being made for a descent, the Indian who had been with them before, came on board a second time, and brought with him several of his countrymen, who, to make themselves welcome loaded their canoes with living fowl. Among these was one man perfectly white, in whose ears hung white pendants as big as ones fist. He seemed by his grave deportment to be one of their priests. One of these islanders, says our author, was, by accident, shot dead in his canoe by a musket. This unlucky affair threw them into a panic, and most of the remaining part flung themselves into the sea, to attain a place of more safety.

The Dutch instantly followed them, with 150 soldiers, amongst whom was the commodore in person, with our author, who commanded the land forces. The people crowded so thick about them, that the Dutch were obliged to fire to disperse them; and yet, tho' frightened almost out of their wits, they soon rallied again, keeping at about ten yards distance. But it happened unfortunately, says our author, for by this single discharge a great many were killed, and amongst them, the poor Indian, who had been twice on board. Yet, continues he, they brought us in return for the dead bodies we had given them, vast plenty of provisions of all kinds. However, they howled exceedingly, and made dismal lamentation; and that they might leave nothing untried to pacify these

these invaders, they all, men, women, and children, presented themselves before the Dutch with branches of palm, in token of peace; even offered them their women, and gave them to understand, they were entirely at their service. Softened with such signs of humility, the Dutch did them no farther harm; but on the contrary, made them a present of a piece of painted cloth sixty yards long. The natives, now finding they were friends, brought 500 live fowls, which differed very little from the barn-door fowls in Europe, with a great quantity of roots and potatoes, which last, these people use instead of bread. They brought also several hundreds of sugar canes, with a large quantity of pisans, which are a kind of Indian figs, as big as a gourd; the pulp of them is as sweet as honey. The leaves of this tree are seven or eight feet long, and about a yard broad. They saw in these islands no other animals than birds of all sorts. Their huts are from forty to sixty feet long, and about eight broad; made of poles stuck upright; the spaces between them being filled up with earth, and covered on the top with palm leaves. All the women in general had an artificial bloom on their cheeks of a fine, crimson colour, surpassing all known to us in Europe, nor could the Dutch discover what it was. On their heads they wore a little straw-hat; and no other covering than red and white quilts, which serve them when walking for cloaths, and when sleeping for coverlets. Their women, says our author, are not over modest, for they would beckon us into their houses, and when they were seated would throw off their mantles. They had not the least appearance of arms amongst them; but when attacked, flew immediately to their idols for protection, who are all made of stone, of the figure of a man, with large ears, and his head adorned with a crown, highly finished in every respect, at which we were amazed. Round their idols are palli-fadoes of white stone at twenty yards distance. There were some among them more zealous worshippers than the rest, which made the Dutch believe they were priests,

priests, because they had great white balls hanging at their ears, their heads shaven, and wore a bonnet of black and white feathers, exactly resembling those of a stork.

The Dutch could not distinguish among these islanders any subordination, or chief, who had power over the rest, all of them speaking with equal freedom. They observed, indeed, in particular houses, that the father of the family governed it, and generally wore a feathered bonnet, which looked like the down of ostriches, with a stick in his hand. The air here is wholesome, the soil rich, fit for corn in the low lands, and the higher ground might be improved into vineyards. We had doubtless made greater discoveries with respect to this island, but for a violent storm which arose and drove us from our anchors, so that we were obliged to put to sea, to save ourselves from shipwreck.

After this we sought Davis's land in vain for some time, and at length resolved to bear away for the bad sea of Schovten, which, steering west, we soon reached, and ran 350 leagues farther; then sailed forwards above 800 leagues without making any land. At length arriving in 15 deg. 30 min. south latitude, they discovered a small island, the coast of which was covered with very yellow sand, and in the midst of it they saw a lake, which occasioned them to believe it was the same island that Schovten had before discovered and called the Isle of Dogs; so they did not examine it particularly.

After they left this island, the wind came about to south west, which was a sign they were near some coast that altered the current of the air. This sudden change drove them in the night amongst a parcel of small islands, which embarrassed them so much, that they made the African galley lead the way; but notwithstanding all the care she could take, she soon fired a gun of distress. Hereupon the Tienhoven plied towards her with all speed, as did the commodore also, who found himself sooner than he expected along side

F f

of

of her, which very much surprised the ship's company: but upon heaving the lead, and finding no bottom, they grew more easy, and thought of nothing but saving their friends. For this purpose they sent out their shallop to discover the situation the African galley was in, who found her sticking fast between two rocks; so that it was impossible to do any further service than to save the people. In this they succeeded tolerably well; for tho' many of them were miserably bruised by the shocks the vessel received before she settled on the rocks, there was but one man lost.

The islanders, roused by the noise which this accident made, kindled fires upon the hills, and came in crouds to the coast. The Dutch, unacquainted with their intentions, fired upon them without any ceremony. As soon as it was light they had a clear prospect of the danger they had escaped, being invironed round with four large islands, facing towards the sea, and a continued chain of steep rocks. These islands are seated between 15 and 16 deg. south latitude; that on which the African galley was wrecked they called *Mischievous island*, and the two next, the *Brothers*. They were all covered with a charming verdure, abounding with tall trees, especially cocoas. The herbs which grew here recovered our people of the scurvy. We found great plenty of mussels, cockles, mother-of-pearl, and pearl-oysters; and the inhabitants are not only well provided with canoes, but with stout barks, which have cables and oars. The Dutch also found here several pieces of ropes, that seemed to be made of hemp; the men on the island, where the African galley was lost, were of a prodigious height. We measured the print of the foot of one of them on the sand, and found it twenty inches: they were armed with pikes and lances 18 and 20 feet long. Their countenances were fierce, but not disagreeable; they spoke fairly, but seemed cruel, and marched in small bodies of fifty or an hundred.

The morning after they weighed from these islands they saw another, which they called *Aurora*, because  
it

it was discovered as the day broke. This island was about four leagues in extent, adorned with fine verdure, high trees, and small wood. The same day they had sight of another island towards the evening, for which reason they called it Vesper. They continued their course west to the height of 15 deg. and the very next morning discovered another country, which being covered with smok, they concluded was inhabited, and therefore crouded all the sail they could; as they approached nearer, they observed several of the inhabitants diverting themselves in canoes upon the water: now also perceived that what they had taken for continent, was only a number of islands lying near each other; and that they were entered so far among them, as made it difficult to extricate themselves; but at length, having the good fortune to get into the open sea again, they gave this place the name of the Labyrinth. A few days after they discovered another island, but being not able to anchor, they manned each of their shallops with 25 men, in order to make a descent. The inhabitants, aware of their design, crouded towards the coast to oppose them, all armed with pikes. While some of the men landed, the rest kept a constant fire from the shallops, and kept them off. When they had filled twelve sacks of herbs and sallading, they carried them on board, which were more acceptable to the sick than gold or silver.

The next morning the commodore sent a larger body of men on shore, not only for more greens, but to make further discoveries. They first made a present to the chief of a quantity of trinckets, which he received, indeed, but with an air of indifference, as did not promise any good to our future commerce, tho' he had the good manners to send in exchange a good quantity of coco-nuts. Their women seemed to admire the white men, and almost stifled them with caresses; but this was all a false shew of love, which these traitresses employed to lull the Dutch into security, that the plot laid by their men might succeed more effectually; and if they had executed it with the same cunning with

which it was contrived, they had certainly cut off every Dutchman that came on shore.

The case was this: when the Dutchmen had filled twenty sacks with greens, they went farther up the country, and advanced to the top of some steep rocks, which hung over a deep valley, the islanders going before and behind them; of whom they had not the least suspicion: but as soon as these people got them at an advantage, they suddenly went off, and thousands came out of the caves in the rocks. Upon this the sailors formed themselves into a posture of defence; when the chief made a signal for them to keep off; but they continued to march in a line: he then made the signal to his men for battle, which was followed by a prodigious shower of stones; the Dutch, in return, made a general discharge of their fire-arms, which did great execution; amongst the first that fell was their chief; however they continued throwing stones with greater fury, so that most of the Dutch were soon disabled; and tho' great numbers of the islanders were killed, yet the Dutch were at length obliged to retreat, having some killed, and most of the rest wounded, who by reason of their scorbutic bodies died soon after. When the Dutch had disengaged themselves from the enemy, they retired, and carried their herbs on board, where the report of what had befallen them affected their companions to such a degree, that when a motion was made to land again, nobody could be prevailed upon to engage in the enterprize. The island is situated in 16 deg south latitude, the soil very fertile, producing great numbers of trees, particularly palms, cocoas, and iron-wood, and they called it the island of Recreation.

When the commodore quitted this place, he steered a north west course for New Britain. Three days after they discovered several islands, lying in 12 deg. south latitude, which appeared very beautiful at a distance; and as they drew nearer they found them well planted with fruit trees of all-sorts; that the country produced horses, corn, and roots in great plenty, and was laid out

out towards the coast in large regular plantations. As soon as the inhabitants saw the ship, they came off in their boats with fruits, and other refreshments; in return for which the Dutch gave them beads, looking-glasses, &c. It soon appeared that these islands had numerous inhabitants, since many thousands both men and women came down to the shore to look at us, most of the former armed with bows and arrows. Amongst the rest they saw a very majestic person, whom, by his dress, and the homage paid to him, they soon perceived to be the sovereign. He presently stepped into his canoe, with a fair young woman, who sat close by his side; and was instantly surrounded by a vast number of canoes which seemed for a guard. All the natives of these islands differed nothing in complexion from the Europeans, except that they were a little sunburnt. Their bodies were handsomely cloathed from the girdle downwards, with a kind of silk fringes, very neatly folded. On their heads they wore hats of a very neat stuff, and very large. About their necks they had collars of fine sweet-smelling flowers. These islands they called Bowman's islands, after the captain of the Tienhoven, who first discovered them. Instead of shewing any tokens of terror on our arrival, these people received us with joy and respect, not to be described; insomuch that many of our seamen would willingly have staid longer among so kind a people, and in so plentiful a country, where they were readily supplied with all they wanted. Happy for us had we staid till all our sick were recovered: but nothing could prevail with the principal officers to remain here; they dreaded missing the east monsoons, which were to carry them to the East Indies. This unlucky precaution, that hindered them from viewing these islands, says our author, was built upon a false foundation, as they soon found to their cost; for they were two months too early, instead of two months too late for the trade-wind. What was still worse, by this our hasty departure, we sacrificed the health and strength of our crew so much, as not long after we were in want of hands to navigate the ship.

In this condition we sailed north west, and the next morning had sight of two islands, discovered by William Schovten, one called by him Cocos, the other Traitor's island. Soon after we saw two more islands of very great extent, one of which we called Tienhoven, the other Groninguen; but our officers were so fond of going to the East Indies, that they would not touch at either of them, alledging, that if the party landing was again cut off, they should not have men enough to carry the ships to Europe. They were obliged to continue their course to New Guiney, or to New Britain, how disagreeable soever that measure might prove to the rest of the company. There cannot be any thing more shocking than the account our author gives of the miseries they endured in this run. At this time, says he, there was nothing to be seen on board but sick people struggling with inexpressible pains, and dead carcases; from which arose so intolerable a smell, as the sound men were not able to endure, but frequently swooned away. Cries and groans were perpetually ringing in our ears, and the very sight of the people was enough to strike terror and compassion. I, myself, says our author, though as well as any body, had the scurvy to such a degree, as my teeth were all loose, my gums torn and inflamed, and my body covered with spots of various colours. At last it pleased God to put an end to our miseries, by giving us a sight of the coast of New Britain.

This country, as well as the islands near it, are very high land, and the sea coasts are equally pleasant and fertile; while the hills are covered with different sorts of fruit trees. The nearer they approached the coast, the more they were pleased with it, since it gave them a view of all the refreshments they wanted. The inhabitants came down in crouds, but not in the manner we expected; for they were armed with bows, arrows, and slings, demonstrating, by their gestures, that they were not at all pleased with their new comers, and that they would not let them land peaceably. As the ~~shallop~~ drew nearer the shore, the natives howled, and tore their hair. However the Dutch made the best of their



their way to the land, which, when the Indians saw, they sent a shower of arrows, that was followed by the javelins in their hands. The Dutch, seeing they had nothing to trust to but their arms, fired upon them without ceasing, and with such effect, that many of them were killed on the spot, and the rest terrified to such a degree, that many of them jumped out of their canoes, in which they attacked them, into the water. In the mean time arose a violent storm, which drove the ships out to sea, and left the poor people in the shallop without relief, and almost without hope. They were suddenly driven on a bank of sand, and as despair usually gives men spirits beyond what they have at other times, they had the good fortune to get their vessel safe to land, where, by the favour of providence, they all got on shore unhurt.

They now consulted where to find a place of safety from any sudden attack of the enemy; but night coming on, they were forced to take up with the earth, getting together as many pieces of wood and broken branches of trees as possible, in order to make a fire to dry and warm themselves. The fire not only revived their spirits, but enabled them to discover, by its light, several huts near the place where they had taken up their abode; and it was not long before they examined these habitations; but met with nothing worth taking away, except a few nets curiously wrought. The account the Dutch give of New Britain so exactly corresponds with that of Dampier, who first gave it this name, that there is no occasion to repeat it again\*: besides, these new discoverers no sooner heard the signal made by the ships, than they hastened on board again, and did not stay here above forty-eight hours; but proceeded to the island of Arimoa, where the inhabitants, as soon as they saw them approach, came out to meet them, in their canoes, with cocoa-

---

*De Quiros mentions something like this country, and many of the former circumnavigators have done the same, which will appear from the perusal of their voyages.*

nuts,

nuts, Indian-figs, various sorts of roots, and other refreshments; their men, and even their women, armed with bows and arrows. The Dutch having offered them such trifles as they had on board, by way of present, and shewed them more of that kind of merchandize; these Indians returned again the next day with large quantities of the same things, and invited them ashore; but the Dutch did not care to run that hazard; therefore proceeded to the island of Moa, which is not so populous, in hopes of furnishing themselves with a considerable stock of provisions. This was a very bold project, in their present circumstances; and yet they carried it into execution as happily as they could wish.

After leaving these islands, they continued their voyage through a sea so full of islands it was impossible to number them, so they called them the Thousand Isles. The inhabitants of these countries were negroes, short and squat, their heads covered with a thick curled wool. They were all naked, men, women and children. Some of them wore light straw hats, mingled with the feathers of the birds of Paradise. They steered through this innumerable chain of islands, with the utmost hazard, to the island of Bourou, where the Dutch have a settlement or factory, and continued their course to Bouton; then passing through the channel of the Moluccas, they arrived, after the crew had suffered inexpressible miseries, on the coast of Japara, or Java, towards the end of September, with no more than ten persons in tolerable health, among whom was our author; 26 were down of sickness. In this voyage they lost, exclusive of those killed by the Indians, 70 men. As soon as they had notified their arrival, they got their sick men on shore; but after all the care that could be taken, many of them laid their bones in that island. Our author here observes, that their seamen, in a very few days, were as frolick and gay, as if they had made the most fortunate voyage in the world; adding, it shocked him extremely to see those, who, but a few days before, were weeping, sighing, praying, and making protestations of leading a new life, if God would be pleased to save them, running headlong into the

the greatest extravagancies; their whole time being now spent in swearing, drinking, and bawdy-houses. This, however, he attributes to the bad example of the meaner sort of people at Japara, who are as profligate and lewd, as it is possible to conceive.

The town is seated at the bottom of a mountain of a moderate height, is not very large, and inhabited chiefly by Javanese, Chinese, and Dutch. The king of Japara, generally speaking, resides at a place called Kattasura, 29 leagues up the country, where the Dutch have a strong fort and a good garrison, which serves not only to secure their conquests, but to guard the king. The monarch is a Mahometan, and according to the practice of most eastern princes is served by women, of whom, he takes as many as he pleases. His subjects are very faithful, and intirely devoted to his service. The chief persons in his court, when admitted to an audience, approach him creeping upon their knees. Such as commit the slightest fault are poinarded on the spot, with a small dagger, called a krid; and, as this is the only punishment they use, so the slightest, as well as the greatest faults, are capital. The natives are of a very brown complexion, tolerably well-shaped, and have long black hair, however, they cut it sometimes; their noses are flat, and their teeth bad, which is chiefly owing to the betele and faufel, which they are always chewing. The faufel is a sort of nut, not unlike, but something less than a nutmeg, without taste, and when chewed yields a red juice, which they use in painting chintz. The tree that bears this nut, is very strait, and its leaves like those of the cocoa-tree. The betele is a plant, with long leaves, resembling those of the citron; the fruit it bears grows in the form of a lizard's tail, about two fingers breadth, and eighteen inches long, of an aromatic flavour, and its smell extremely agreeable. Here are horned cattle, hogs, and an innumerable quantity of fowls. The only thing that is scarce amongst them is mutton; this is occasioned by the richness of the soil, on which the sheep will feed till they burst. They have buffaloes, stags,

stags, tygers, and the rhinoceros, which last they hunt, for the sake of its horn; of this they make vessels to drink out off, which are highly valued; from a notion they have, that they will instantly break, if poison be poured in them. As to fruit-trees, such as cocoas, figs, &c. they grow every where, and as they are green all the year, and constantly planted in rows along the river-sides, here are the most beautiful walks in the world. Their vines bear grapes seven times a year; but they are fit only for raisins, not for wine, because the climate ripens them too hastily. The sea, and rivers furnish them with a vast variety of the finest fish; so that, take it altogether, one may safely affirm of Java, that there is not under the canopy of heaven, an island more plentiful or more pleasant.

After refreshing themselves at Japara for about a month, they began to think of continuing their voyage to Batavia, in order to experience the favours which the governor, at the intercession of the chief of that island, had promised them. In sailing from Japara, they steered a west course for about 70 leagues, and then, with as fair a wind as they could wish, entered the road of Batavia, and anchored close by the ships that were lading for their voyage home; believing all their troubles were now at an end, and that they should accompany them to Holland. The commodore no sooner saw his ships safe at anchor, than he went with his captain into the shallop, intending to have gone to Batavia; but before they had got far from the ship, they saw the commandant rowing towards them, with the fischal on board, and some members of the council. These gentlemen bid the commodore go back, which he did, without any hesitation; and by that time both shallops were within hearing of the ships, the fischal proclaimed aloud the governor general's sentence of confiscation; soon after several hundred soldiers came on board, and took both the ships and their crews, into custody. The officers who were so fond of coming hither, began, now too late, to repent of their hasty return by the route of the East Indies. By this sentence both

both ships were declared good prizes, the goods on board confiscated, and, to be brief, every thing was sold to the best bidder. The crew was divided and put on board the homeward bound ships. But enough: we proceed to a more melancholy subject.

Some months before our author's arrival at Batavia, a plot was discovered for the entire subversion of the Dutch government. The fact was this. One Peter Erberfeld framed a design, in conjunction with a number of Javanese, and other Indian chiefs, to surprise the citadel and forts of this city; to massacre the governor, and all the counsellors, together with such as were in the service of the company, and put an end to the Dutch power in these parts. This conspiracy was discovered on the Eve of its execution, and Erberfeld, with the chief of his accomplices, were imprisoned, put to torture, and, on their own confession, sixteen of them, with three of their wives, received the following sentence: " That they should be carried to the place  
" before the citadel, where it is usual to execute criminals, and there delivered into the hands of the  
" hangman, to receive their respective punishments in  
" manner following. The two chief criminals, Peter  
" Erberfeld, burges, born at Batavia, of a white  
" father and black mother, of the age of fifty-eight;  
" and Catadia, a Javanese, shall be extended and  
" bound each of them on a cross, where they shall  
" each of them have his right hand cut off, and their  
" arms, legs, and breasts, pinched with red-hot pincers,  
" till pieces of flesh are torn away. They shall then  
" have their bellies ripped up from bottom to top,  
" and their hearts thrown in their faces; after which  
" their heads shall be cut off, and fixed upon a post;  
" and their bodies being torn in pieces, shall be exposed to the fowls of the air without the city, in  
" whatever place the government shall please to direct.  
" The four next to be bound upon a cross, and have  
" their respective right hands cut off, their arms,  
" thighs, and breasts pinched, their bellies ripped  
" open, and their hearts thrown in their faces; their  
" limbs

“limbs exposed on a wheel in the usual places, there to  
 “become a prey to birds. The other ten criminals  
 “shall be each of them tied upon a cross on the scaf-  
 “fold, and in case there be not room on the scaffold  
 “itself, on a place near it, where they shall be broken  
 “alive, without the coup de grace: they shall be after-  
 “wards carried to the ordinary place of execution,  
 “there be exposed on the wheel, guarded as long as  
 “they shall live, and after they expire be left a prey to  
 “the birds. The three women are each of them con-  
 “demned to be tied to a stake, and there strangled till  
 “they are dead. Their bodies shall be carried, like  
 “the rest, to the common place of execution, and  
 “there exposed on wheels, for the nourishment of the  
 “birds. We likewise further condemn the said cri-  
 “minals to the costs and expences of justice, renounc-  
 “ing all further pretensions. Done and agreed in the  
 “assembly of the lords the counsellors of justice.”  
 This sentence was executed as pronounced.

In process of time there were abundance of their  
 accomplices discovered, and one, after another, exe-  
 cuted. The house, in which Peter Erberfeld lived,  
 was pulled down and razed to the ground; and on that  
 side of it which faced the road, a column of infamy was  
 erected, on the chapter of which was placed a death's  
 head. There was also a table fixed on the said column,  
 on which was engraved in the Dutch, Portuguese,  
 Malayan, Javanese and Chinese languages, the fol-  
 lowing inscription: “In this place heretofore stood the  
 “house of that unworthy traitor Peter Erberfeld, on  
 “which spot no other house shall stand for evermore.”

But to resume the thread of our author's narration,  
 and prosecute his voyage home from Batavia, as he  
 was in a manner forced to make it on board one of  
 the Dutch East India ships, when the commodore's  
 vessels were seized and condemned.

There was nothing material in our author's voyage  
 from Batavia to the Cape of Good Hope. And, tho'  
 we have before given a full and sufficient account of  
 the Dutch East India company's settlement here, and  
 also

also of the natives, our author gives us such a farther description of the strange birds and beasts which are to be met with in the vast forests of Africa, as must not be passed over in silence. The animals of this country, says he, are, many of them, as remarkable as in any places in the world. The lion is very common near the bay of Saldeney, about 18 leagues from the cape; and in hard winters will venture very near the habitations. It is thought this creature is called the king of beasts because he never eats a man alive, but first beats his breath out with his paws before he devours him. He roars and shakes his mane terribly before he attacks a man; and if he does not give these tokens of his rage, there is no danger in passing him. Tygers and leopards are here very common, and do a prodigious deal of mischief. It is probable these creatures would be still more numerous, were it not for a race of wild dogs that breed in these parts, and naturally hunt in packs, which makes them so bold, that they frequently run down and kill a lion. Tygers, leopards and wolves are their constant prey, and what is very wonderful, they will suffer a man to take them away when they are killed. Elephants are common here, and as large as any in the world, being fourteen and fifteen feet high, their teeth weighing from 16 to 120 lb. The rhinoceros is also often met with. He is less than the elephant, but stronger. His skin is of a vast thickness, and so hard that scarce any weapon will pierce it. He has a snout like a hog, on which grows a horn from twelve to twenty inches long. In the midst of summer, when the beasts are almost mad with thirst, they come down in multitudes to the river of Salt, of the elephant, and of St. John \*; where the males of one species mixing with the females of another, produce strange beasts, which look like a new species. The Hottentots often carry the skins of these monsters to the governor of the cape. Our author affirms, that he saw the skin

---

\* These are the names of the rivers they frequent.

of one killed not long before: it was of the size of a calf about half a year old; had four eyes in the head which resembled those of a lion; the hair smooth, and of a dark-grey colour; its tusk and fore-legs resembled those of a boar; but the hinder part of him was like a tyger.

The different kinds of birds in this country are almost infinite. The ostrich, which is looked upon to be the biggest of all, is commonly about 7 feet high. They make use of their wings, not to fly, but to assist them in running, and are prodigiously swift on foot, especially when they have the wind abaft, so that they hunt them with Spaniels: the common opinion, that this bird can digest iron, is absolutely false; they swallow it indeed; but only to bruise the meat in their stomachs, as other fowls do stones; nor do they leave their eggs uncovered on the sand, and take no care of their young, as is reported of them: for tho' they are naturally fearful, yet, if one of their chicks be missing, they become furious, and it is not safe to go near them. The feathers of the male are the most valuable. There are abundance of eagles about the cape, which are very bold, and tho' not exceeding large, are yet very strong. They frequently kill and eat the cattle as they return from work; and when they have not an opportunity of attacking an ox singly, they come in flocks of 60 or 100, and fall upon a beast as it feeds in the herd. There are also various other birds of prey, but not worth mentioning, because they are common elsewhere; however the following story is very remarkable, as it relates to a bird, unknown in this country, where the strangest things are not thought prodigies.

There was seen, says our author, a few years ago, upon the Table Mount, near the cape, a bird, whose body was bigger than that of a horse, covered with grey and black feathers; his beak and talons like those of an eagle. It sat upon, and hovered over that mountain for a long time, and the common people were persuaded that it was a griffin. It frequently carried off sheep and calves, and at length began to kill  
cows.



cows. It was at last killed, and the skin being stuffed, was sent, as a curiosity, to the East India company. Our author does not say he saw the skin of this monstrous bird; but that he had the relation from persons of credit at the cape.

Towards the end of March 1723, they weighed from the cape, and arrived at St. Helena in three weeks; then made the isle of Ascension, and soon after crossing the line, they began to see at night the north star, which they had not done for a year and half; and found themselves in 18 deg. south lat. As they sailed farther north, they came into 37 deg. latitude, within sight of two islands, that proved to be Flores and Corvo, which the Spaniards call part of the Azores. In the former of these islands, they staid three days to procure refreshments. On their entering the Spanish seas, the weather proved so bad, that the advice-boat lost her rudder, and was obliged to go thro' the channel, to purchase another on the coast of England; such ships only as have suffered damage at sea, being permitted to pass thro' the channel, the rest are obliged to go round the Irish coast. After three weeks sail, during which time they were involved in continual mists and fogs, they got sight of the Orkneys, and in the latitude of 60 deg. met with some ships which were waiting for them, by whom they were convoyed to the coast of Holland, and arrived at Amsterdam on the 16th day of July 1723, being the same day two years, that they sailed on this voyage.

On our return, says the author, the face of affairs, with respect to us, was much altered: for the West India company immediately commenced a suit in behalf of themselves, commodore Roggewein, and the persons employed in the squadron under their protection; in order to obtain satisfaction for the injustice done them by the East India company; accordingly, they presented a memorial to their high mightinesses the states general, setting forth the legality of their design, the losses they had sustained, and the advantages that might result to the public from their discoveries, had the

voyage been perfected. The states general instantly ordered the East India company to put in an answer to this memorial, that they might see, whether they would avow the fact, or whether any reasons could be alledged to justify it. The East India company did not at all hesitate in declaring their approbation of what had been done by the governor general and his council at Batavia, &c.

These memorials, after having been well considered, were remitted into the hands of the proper officer, who was appointed to draw up the judgment in this case given, which was as followeth. "We, their high mightinesses the states general, do hereby order and decree, that the East India company shall immediately furnish the West India company with two new ships, completely rigged in every respect, better than those which they condemned and confiscated; that the former shall also pay to the latter, the full value of the cargoes, with respect to the crews of both ships, and their wages, to the time of their return to Holland; that, moreover, the said East India company shall pay all costs of suit; besides a certain sum to the public use, for having thus abused their authority." Such was the wise and equitable decision of the states general, on this dispute between the two companies; which dispute, tho' it happened in Holland, yet may it equally concern other countries, where there is any exclusive company established; as herein their high mightinesses very justly distinguished between the particular advantages resulting from a company established by their authority, and the common benefit of all their subjects.

This distinction agrees so well with the interest of all nations, that it is impossible for any unprejudiced person not to discern, that exclusive companies rather destroy, than promote, the commerce of the countries where they are established; for the more any company extends its foreign conquests, the more of their stock must of necessity be expended, for the preservation of such conquests; and the greater their dominions, the less they  
are

are able to mind the true interest of that trade, for the promoting which they were first erected. Is is a true and certain maxim, that though particular persons gain most by old and settled trades, yet a new commerce contributes most to enrich a people; because it encreases the number of hands in all manufactures at home, swells the number of seamen, occasions the building of new ships, and, in short, strengthens that spirit of industry, which is so necessary to a trading nation.

We shall conclude this voyage with observing, that it was undoubtedly commodore Roggewein's plan, to discover some island on the coast of Brasil, where a settlement might be made, that his countrymen should, for the future, have a place of their own, without troubling the Portuguese at all. With this view he reconoitred the island of St. Lewis, which had never been thoroughly discovered before; and, therefore, he had a right to give it a new name: and if he had settled on it also, as he proposed, it had certainly answered the end of his voyage effectually. He formed the same project with respect to Juan Fernandez, which is certainly one of the wholsomest and pleasantest islands in America, and from whence, if it was once settled, the discovering of the southern continent and islands must with ease follow. The first error he committed was postponing these settlements, especially the last, because the benefits which must have resulted from it are apparent: but what commodore Roggewein's intentions were, still remains a secret; and we must be content with the conjectures arising from the perusal of his voyage carefully, as we cannot procure his proposals to the Dutch West India company, in which, no doubt, there are abundance of curious particulars.

## C H A P. XXIII.

*The voyage of commodore Anson, now lord Anson, round the world.*

**B**EFORE we enter upon this voyage, it should seem necessary, to acquaint the reader, with the cause and original design of it. Towards the end of summer 1739, it being foreseen that a war with Spain was inevitable; some persons of distinction, then trusted with the administration of affairs, were of opinion, that the most prudent step the nation could take, on the commencement of that war, would be to attack the Spaniards in their distant settlements, thereby to cut off the principal resources of the enemy, and deprive them of that treasure, by which alone they were enabled to carry it on. In consequence of these sentiments, after mature deliberation it was resolved, that two squadrons should be fitted out for two secret expeditions, and at the same time have a connexion with one another; that Mr. Anson should command one of them, and Mr. Cornwall, (who lost his life so gloriously in the defence of his country) the other. That the squadron under Mr. Anson should take on board three independent companies, consisting of 100 men each, under the command of colonel Bland; and that this should sail with express orders to touch at no place till they arrived at Java-head, in the East Indies, there only take in water; and then proceed directly to the city of Manilla: that the other squadron should be of equal force, pass round Cape Horn to the South Seas, cruise upon the enemy, and on its return, rendezvous at Manilla: there join Mr. Anson, refresh the men, refit their ships, and then probably receive fresh instructions.

No one can doubt but this scheme was very well projected, and would certainly have greatly advanced the public service, had it been put into execution, at the time Sir Charles Wager proposed it; for it is pretty certain Mr. Anson would have arrived there before they

they had received any information of the war between England and Spain, and consequently before they had been prepared for the reception of an enemy. The city of Manilla, might be very well supposed, to have been at that juncture in as defenceless a condition, as we, by intercepted letters of the viceroy's and governors, found to be the state of Panama, and other Spanish places on the coast of the South Seas; nor can it be imagined; that Manilla, almost half the circumference of the globe farther off, should have taken greater care for its security, than Panama, Peru, or Chili, on which their possession of that vast empire depends.

November 18, Mr. Anson received an order to take upon him the command of the *Argyle*, *Severn*, *Pearl*, *Wager*, and *Tryal-sloop*; and on his attending the admiralty the beginning of January, 1739, new stile, he was told by Sir Charles Wager, that the expedition to Manilla was laid aside; but that to the South Seas was still intended; and Mr. Anson should be employed in this service. January 10, he received his commission, appointing him commander in chief of the fore-mentioned squadron. June 28, the duke of Newcastle delivered to him his majesty's instructions; with an additional instruction from the lords justices, dated June 1740. Mr. Anson was extremely chagrined at the loss of the former desirable enterprize; however, as soon as he had received his last instructions, he sailed to Spithead, flattering himself that all his difficulties were now over: but as he was very sensible that 300 seamen of his complement were still wanting; on being informed by Sir Charles Wager, that the board of admiralty had sent an order to Sir John Norris to spare him what hands he wanted, he doubted not of its being complied with. But Sir John told him, he could spare none. Here again he was disappointed; and it was the latter end of July before this deficiency was in any manner supplied; and what was then done fell very short of his expectation: for instead of 300 able seamen, he had 170 only, of whom 32 were from the hospital; 37 from

the

the Salisbury, with three officers of colonel Lowther's regiment, and 98 marines. Nor did the commodore's mortification end here. All the land forces he was now allowed being 500 invalids, to be collected out of the Chelsea pensioners; the greatest part of whom, he was fully persuaded, would perish before they came to action. These delays made his passage round Cape Horn to fall out in the most rigorous season of the year. For the soldiers were not ordered on board the squadron till the 5th of August; when instead of 500, there came no more than 259; all those who had strength to walk out of Portsmouth having deserted. It seems very odd, that from all the out-pensioners of Chelsea college, which are said to amount to the number of 2000, the most infirm should be culled out for this dangerous enterprize; most of them being 60, and some above 70 years old: nor is it easy to conceive a more moving scene than the embarkation of these unhappy wretches. The concern that appeared in their faces, to be thus hurried from their repose to a laborious employ; to which neither the strength of their bodies, nor the vigour of their minds, were in any wise proportioned, and that they would, in all probability, uselessly perish by painful diseases; and this too, after they had spent their youth in the service of their country, filled them with the most dismal apprehensions. This was a melancholy circumstance! and should certainly have been more particularly inspected by the government.

We must not forget another material circumstance in the equipment of this squadron. Mr. Anson, after it was determined that he should be sent to the South Seas, received a proposal to take with him two persons, under the denomination of agent victuallers. Those who were nominated to this employment had formerly been in these parts, in the service of the South Sea company. These Agents were, for this purpose, to have the value of 15,000 l. in merchandise on board the squadron, with which, they asserted, it would be easier to get supplies, than for the value of the same goods in money. Whatever colours were given to this  
scheme,

scheme, the generality of mankind would not be persuaded, but that it was chiefly designed for the benefit of the agents, &c. All that Mr. Anson required of the government on this occasion, was only 2 or 3000 pounds worth of such goods, as the Indians and Spanish planters, in the less cultivated parts of the coast, might be tempted to purchase. Towards this sum of 15,000 pounds the government agreed to advance 10,000 pounds, and the other 5,000 pounds was borrowed on bottomry bonds. The cargo of goods was first shipped in the *Wager* store-ship, and one of the victuallers; no part of it being admitted on board the men of war: but when the commodore was at St. Catharine's, he, considering, in case of separation, it might be pretended that some of the ships could not get provisions for want of a cargo to truck with, distributed some of the least bulky among the men of war, leaving the remainder in the *Wager*, where they were lost; no part of them being disposed of on the coast. The few which were brought back to England, did not produce, when sold, above one fourth of the prime cost. A just reward for by-jobbs, and clandestine practices.

But to return to the transactions at Portsmouth: to replace the 240 deserters, there came on board 210 marines, detached from different regiments, all new raised, and who knew no more of the soldier than their regimentals; the last of these came on board the 8th of August, and the 10th they sailed from Spithead to St. Helen's. September 18 the squadron weighed from St. Helen's, consisting of five men of war and two victualling ships; namely the *Centurion*, of 60 guns, and 400 men, George Anson, Esq; commander; the *Gloucester* of 50 guns, 300 men, Richard Norris commander; the *Severn* of 50 guns, 300 men, the Hon. Edward Legg captain; the *Pearl*, of 40 guns, 250 men, Matthew Michell commander; the *Wager*, 28 guns, 160 men, under the command of Dandy Kidd; and the *Tryal-sloop*, of eight guns, 100 men, the Hon. John Murray commander: the two victuallers were pinks, the largest 400, the other 200 tons, who were  
to

to attend us, till our provisions were so far spent, as to make room for what they carried in them, and then to be discharged. Besides the above-mentioned ships crews, there were embarked 470 invalids under the name of land forces, which were commanded by lieutenant colonel Cracherode. With this force, Mr. Anson weighed from St. Helen's August 18, and tided it down the channel for the first 48 hours. On the 20th we joined the convoys of the Turkey, the Streights, and the American trade, making up 11 men of war, and about 150 sail of merchant men. On the 29th the convoys and trade left us, and we kept our course for the island of Madeira, which by contrary winds we were prevented from reaching, till the 25th of October. We had hardly let go our anchor, when an English privateer ran near our stern, and saluted the commodore with nine guns. Next day the consul of the island came on board, whom we saluted with nine guns also.

The island of Madeira is famous for its excellent wines, and situated in a fine climate, at 32 deg. 27 min. north latitude. It is one continued hill of a considerable height, which extends from east to west. The south side of it is cultivated, and interspersed with vineyards, and in the midst of this declivity the merchants have placed their country seats, which afford a pleasing prospect. There is but one town of any note in the whole island; which is call Fonchiale, and seated at the bottom of a large bay on the south part, towards the sea. It is defended with a high wall, and a battery of cannon, besides a castle on the Loo, which is a rock in the water, a small distance from the shore. Here is the only place where it is possible for a boat to land: and even here, the beach is covered with large stones, and a raging sea continually beats upon it, so that the commodore did not think it safe to venture the ship's boats to fetch water off; therefore ordered the captains to employ the Portuguese boats for this service. We staid a week here, in watering the squadron, taking in wine and refreshments. November 3, captain Norris sent



sent a letter to the commodore, signifying his desire to quit the command of the Gloucester, in order to return to England for the recovery of his health; which was immediately agreed to. Hereupon captain Mitchell was ordered to command the Gloucester; captain Kidd the Pearl; and captain Murray the Wager; and the command of the Tryal was given to captain Cheap. These promotions being settled, with other changes in the Squadron; the day ensuing, our commodore gave to the captains the necessary orders, appointing St. Jago, one of the Cape de Verd islands, to be the first place of rendezvous, in case of separation; with farther directions, that if they did not meet the Centurion, to sail to the island of St. Catharine's on the coast of Brasil. This afternoon we left Madeira, where Mr. Anson visited the governor, who told him, that for three or four days, towards the end of October, seven or eight ships of the line appeared, with a patache, that was sent in every day to make the land, and that he believed they were Spanish. On this intelligence, the commodore sent an officer in a clean sloop, eight leagues to the westward, to discover what they were; but the officer could not get sight of them, so we remained in an uncertainty. However, we were pretty certain that this fleet was designed to put a stop to our expedition; and that it was the Spanish Squadron, under the command of Don Joseph Pizarro; and tho' the catastrophe, which this armament underwent, was not effected by our superior power, yet, as it was a considerable advantage to this nation, with respect to our equipment, we shall here give a brief account of their proceedings; nor can we be persuaded that the history of their casualties, which, by intercepted letters and other information, came to our knowledge, will be foreign to our purpose, or unacceptable to our readers.

This Squadron was fitted out by the crown of Spain in the year 1740, with design to secure themselves from our enterprises. It was composed of the following men of war, viz. the Asia, of 60 guns, 700 men, admiral Pizarro; the Guipuscoa, of 74 guns, 700 men;

men; the *Hermiona*, of 54 guns, 500 men; the *Esperanza*, of 50 guns, 450 men; the *Esteven*, of 40 guns, 350 men; and a *patache*, of 20 guns.

This squadron, over and above its complement of sailors and marines, had on board an old Spanish regiment, intended to reinforce the garrisons on the coasts in the South Seas. After they had cruised for some time about the *Madeiras*; they quitted that station, in the beginning of November, and sailed for the river *Plata*, where the admiral sent immediately to *Buenos Ayres*, for a supply of provisions. While they lay here, they received information, by the treachery of the Portuguese governor of *St. Catharine's*, of our having been at that island on the 21st of December preceding: But *Pizarro* had his reasons for avoiding our squadron any where short of the South Seas; and being very desirous to get round *Cape Horn* before us, the more effectually to baffle our designs, he made all possible haste to proceed on his voyage with the five large ships, the *patache* being disabled, and condemned, after the men were taken out of her. Towards the end of February, *Pizarro's* squadron having run the length of *Cape Horn*, he stood westward, in order to double it; but on the last day of this month, the *Guipuscoa*, the *Hermiona*, and the *Esperanza*, were separated, by a storm, from the admiral, and soon after, the former lost sight of the other two. On the 7th of March, after they had passed the *Streights of Le Maire*, there came on a violent storm at north west, which obliged them to bear away to the river of *Plate*, where the admiral, in the *Asia*, arrived about the middle of May, and a few days after, the *Esperanza* and the *Esteven*. The *Asia* came into *Monte Vedio*, in the river *Plate*, with half her crew only; the *Esteven* also lost half her hands; the *Esperanza* was still more unfortunate; for of 450 hands she brought from Spain only 58 remained alive, and the whole regiment of foot perished except 60 men. As for the *Guipuscoa*, she was stranded and sunk on the coast of *Brasil*; the *Hermiona* foundered at sea; and the *Esteven* was condemned, to be broke up in the river

river of Plate. The admiral in the *Asia*; and the *Esperanza* were both in great want of masts, rigging, and all sorts of naval stores, and having no supply at Buenos Ayres, Pizarro sent an advice-boat with a letter of credit to Rio Janeiro for money, to buy what was wanting of the Portuguese; and at the same time dispatched an express across the continent to St. Jago in Chili, to be thence forwarded to the viceroy of Peru, desiring a remittance of 200,000 dollars from the royal chests at Lima, that he might be enabled to reach the South Seas. The Indian charged with this express, tho' it was in the depth of winter, when the Cordilleras are esteemed impassable, by reason of the snow, was only thirteen days in his journey from Buenos Ayres to St. Jago; tho' these places are 300 leagues distant; forty of which are amongst the snows and precipices of the Cordilleras. This is by the Spaniards recorded for an extraordinary performance.

But the return of this courier was by no means favourable to Pizarro; for instead of 200,000 dollars, the viceroy remitted him only 100,000. The advice-boat also executed her orders imperfectly, bringing indeed a good quantity of pitch, and cordage, but no masts or yards. However, by removing the masts of the *Esperanza* into the *Asia*, and making use of what square masts they had on board, they made a tolerable shift to fit up the *Asia*, and the *St. Estevan*. In October following Pizarro prepared to sail for the South Seas; and to attempt a second passage round Cape Horn: but the *Estevan*, in coming down the river Plate ran on a shoal and broke off her rudder; on this accident, and other damages received, she was condemned, and broke up, and Pizarro in the *Asia*, proceeding by himself, was a second time forced back to the river Plate in great distress, having been a considerable sufferer in this second unfortunate expedition; the *Esperanza* was refitted again, and the command of her given to Mindinuetta, who had been captain of the *Guipuscoa* that was lost. He, the next year, in November 1742, sailed from the river Plate, and got safe to the coast of Chili, where

H h

his

his commodore Pizarro, crossing over land from Buenos Ayres, met him. Great animosities arose between these two on their meeting. Pizarro demanded the command of the *Esperanza*, which Mindinuetta refused to deliver up. However, by the interposition of the president of Chili, the latter was obliged to submit. These two gentlemen afterwards came back by land to Buenos Ayres, in 1745, where they found the *Asia*, and resolving to carry her to Europe, refitted her in the best manner they were able. Their greatest difficulty was to procure hands to navigate her. To this purpose, they pressed many of the inhabitants of Buenos Ayres, put all the English prisoners there in custody, on board, with a number of Portuguese smugglers, and some Indians of the country. Among the latter, there was a chief, and ten of his followers, who were taken prisoners three months before, by a party of Spanish soldiers: the name of the chief was Orellana. With this motly crew the admiral set sail, in November 1745. The Spaniards well knowing the dissatisfaction of their forced men, and not having quite 100 of their own, treated both the Indians and the English prisoners with great barbarity; but more particularly the former, whom the meanest officers would often beat unmercifully on the slightest pretences. Orellana and his followers, tho' seemingly submissive, meditated revenge for these inhumanities. As he could talk Spanish very well, he would often converse with such of the English as could speak that language, desiring to be informed of their number. He, well knowing they were as great enemies to the Spaniards as himself, founded them at a distance; but not finding them so ready to enter into his scheme as he expected; he dropped all conversation with them on a sudden, and resolved to trust to his own followers. About nine in the evening, when many of the head officers were taking the fresh air on the quarter-deck, Orellana and his companions, under cover of the night, being prepared with weapons, threw off their trowsers, came all together to the same place, and made to the great cabin door. The boatswain instantly ordered them to be gone; on which Orellana spoke

spoke to his followers in their own language, and four of them instantly drew off; two to each gangway, while he, with the remaining six, moved slowly away. When the four detached Indians had taken possession of the gangways, Orellana, placing his hands hollow to his mouth, made the war-cry used by these savages, which is said to be the most hideous yell known in nature. On this signal they all drew their knives, and brandished their double-headed shot, which they had prepared, and hung at the end of thongs, while the other six, with their chief, fell upon the Spaniards, killed soon the spot, and disabled as many more. In the beginning of the fray, most of the officers rushed into the cabin, put out the lights, and barricaded the door, while others escaped up the main shrouds, in the tops, and rigging of the fore-mast, and bowsprit. Thus did these eleven Indians, with a resolution scarce credible, instantly possess themselves of the quarter-deck of a ship of 66 guns, and manned with 500 hands: for the officers in the great cabin, the crew between decks, and those who had escaped in the tops and rigging, were only solicitous for their own safety. When the Indians had cleared the quarter-deck, the tumult in a great measure abated. Orellana, now finding himself master of the quarter-deck, broke open the arm-chest, which had been placed here a few days before, in case of a mutiny; but could find no cutlasses, the fire-arms being laid over them. By this time Pizarro and his companions were capable of conversing aloud, thro' the port-holes and cabin windows with those in the gun-room, and between decks; from whom they were informed that the English were not concerned in the mutiny. On which Pizarro and the officers resolved to attack Orellana on the quarter-deck. With this view he got together all the arms in the cabin, and distributed them amongst his officers; but he could find none but pistols, and had neither powder, nor ball. He, therefore, ordered a bucket to be lowered down from the cabin window, into which the gunner put a quantity of pistol-cartridges. As soon as they had loaded their pistols, they threw

H h 2 open

open the cabin door, and fired several shot amongst the Indians, though without effect ; at last Mindinueta had the good fortune to shoot Orellana thro' the head, who dropped down dead on the spot ; at the sight of which his faithful companions all leaped into the sea, and perished. Thus was the insurrection quelled, and the possession of the quarter-deck restored, after it had been above two hours in the hands of this intrepid chief, and his gallant followers. In the beginning of the year 1746 Pizarro arrived safe on the coast of Galicia, after having been absent from Spain between four and five years. The *Esperanza* was left in the South Seas, and doubtless, by this time, was incapable of returning to Spain. Thus ended Pizarro's adventures, with the ruin of a large proportion of the whole navy of Spain : return we now to our own voyage.

We have already mentioned our weighing from Madeira on the 3d of November, 1740, where the captains had given orders to rendezvous at St. Jago, in case of separation : but on our getting out to sea, the season being so far advanced, the commodore appointed the island of St. Catharine's on the coast of Brasil for that purpose. In our passage thither we found the direction of the trade winds vary very considerably from the general history of these winds, and the experience of former navigators. For tho' we met with a north east wind about 28 deg. north latitude, yet from 25 deg. to 18 deg. of the same latitude, the wind was never once to the northward of the east, but almost constantly to the south of it. However, from thence to 6 deg. 20 min. north latitude, we had it usually to the northward of the east, tho' for a short time it changed E. S. E. from hence to 4 deg. 46 min. north, the weather being very unsettled. This observation may not only be of service to future navigators ; but is a circumstance which should be attended to in the solution of that grand question, about the causes of the trade winds, and monsoons. November 20, the captains in the squadron complained that their men were sickly, and were of opinion that this sickness was occasioned by  
the

the want of air between decks. Upon which, the commodore ordered air-scuttles to be made in such places, as would the least weaken the ships. November 28, we crossed the equinoctial, with a fine fresh gale at south east, and on the second of December we saw a sail; but could not come up with her. On the 10th the *Tryal* fired a gun to denote soundings. The next day but one, we spoke with a Portuguese brigantine, from Rio Janiero, who told us, we were 34 leagues from Cape St. Thomas, which bore from us W. S. W. On the 16th we discover'd the coast of Brasil; to our great joy, the sickness among our men daily increasing. Two days after we steered in between the north point of St. Catharine's and the island of Alvaredo; and anchored on the 18th at the north west point of St. Catharine's, bearing S. S. W. distant three miles; the island Alvaredo lying N. N. E. distant two leagues. Here we discovered two fortifications, which seemed designed to hinder the passage of an enemy between the island and the main. The commodore sent from hence a boat with an officer to compliment the governor, and desire a pilot. He soon received a very civil answer with one. On the 20th we weighed, and our pilot brought us to anchor in a fine bay, called by the French Bon Port. The next morning we weighed again, to run above the two fortifications, or castles, which are called Santa Cruz, and St. Juan. On the 21st we came to an anchor in five fathom and a half, and here moored; when the Commodore ordered each ship to erect two tents, one for the sick, the other for the surgeon and his assistants. We sent about 80 sick men from the *Centurion*; and from the other ships pretty near the same number. We then scraped our decks, smoaked them between, and washed them all over with vinegar. Our next business was to wood and water, to caulk the ship's sides and decks, and overhaul the rigging.

January 18, 1741, the signal was made for sailing, and the squadron got out to sea, quitting, without the least regret, the island of St. Catharine's, where we were

H h 3

greatly

greatly disappointed with respect to the refreshments and accommodations we there met with ; and, indeed, we had but a melancholy proof of its healthiness, for our sick returned on board in as bad a condition as they went ashore : the Centurion alone buried 26 here, and her number of sick, during our short stay, was increased to 90. The day before we left this place, the orders delivered to the captains were, that if they should chance to be separated, which they should use their utmost care to avoid, the first place of rendezvous should be at the port of St. Julian ; and if they were not joined by the commodore in ten days after their arrival at that place, to proceed through the Straights of Le Maire, round Cape Horn, into the South Seas. The next place of rendezvous to be at the island of Nuestra Senora del Socoro, in 45 deg. south lat. That they should bring this island to bear E. N. E. and cruise from five to twelve leagues distant round it, as long as their wood and water lasted, of both which they should be as saving as possible, and then stand away for the island Juan Fernandez ; there to cruise, after they had laid in wood and water, for 56 days ; and if the commodore did not join them before that time was expired, they might be certain some accident had happened to him ; and therefore should immediately put themselves under the command of the senior officer, who was to use all possible means to annoy the enemy by sea and land. That their new commodore should continue in those seas as long as their provisions held out, and as long as they could procure them from the enemy, reserving only a sufficiency to carry the ships to Macao, at the entrance of the river of Canton ; where, after having laid in a fresh stock of provisions, they should make the best of their way for England. The next day we had bad weather, rain, thunder and lightening. On the 21st it blew a fresh gale, which increased all night. Next morning a furious storm arose, and with it a thick fog, insomuch that we could not see 200 yards before us, and the whole squadron disappeared in an instant. A signal was made to bring to with the  
larboard



larboard tacks, by firing guns, the wind being due east. We then lay under a reefed mizen till noon, when the fog ceased, and we discovered all the ships in the squadron, the Pearl excepted, who did not come up till a month afterwards. The Tryal, having lost her main-mast in the storm, for fear of bulging, cut away her raft, and bore down to the squadron for relief. The Gloucester was ordered to take her in tow. We now stood to the southward with little interruption.

As soon as we had passed the latitude of the river Plate, our soundings continued all along the coast of Patagonia. In this passage we had a view of Cape Blanco, which is the most remarkable land upon the coast. Steering from hence near thirty leagues south by east, we deepened our water to thirty fathom, without altering our bottom; then drawing nearer the coast with a south west course, we continually found a sandy bottom, 'till we came into thirty fathom, then we had again sight of land, distant about eight leagues, lying in the latitude of 48 deg. 31 min. At five in the afternoon, February 17, we anchored in the same soundings as before, and weighed again at five next morning. An hour afterwards we saw a sail, upon which the Severn and Gloucester were ordered to give chase. We soon found her to be the Pearl, which parted with us quickly after we left St. Catharine's. On this we made a signal for the Severn to return, and leave the Gloucester alone in pursuit, but were somewhat surprized to observe the Pearl increase her sail as the Gloucester approached. However, the Gloucester at length came up with them; but found them with their hammocks in the netting, prepared for an engagement. At two in the afternoon the Pearl joined us, and running under our stern, lieutenant Salt hailed the commodore, and told him captain Kidd was dead. He also said, that he had seen five large ships on the 10th, which he took to be our squadron; but soon found his mistake, they being five Spanish men of war, whom he narrowly escaped. In the morning of the next day we sent two cutters ashore to discover the  
port

port of St. Julian. Soon after the cutters returned, having found the bay, which did not appear to us. We anchored in this bay, with design to have refitted the *Tryal*, her mainmast being carried away, near 12 feet below the cap; the *Wager* was ordered to supply her with a spare main-top-mast, of which the carpenter made a new foremast. While we staid here, on the death of captain Kidd, the commodore appointed the honourable captain Murray to succeed to the *Pearl*; captain Cheap to the *Wager*; and his first lieutenant, captain Charles Saunders, to the command of the *Tryal*; who, at that time, was dangerously ill of a fever, on board the *Centurion*: so Mr. Anson sent an order to Mr. Saumarez, first lieutenant of the *Centurion*, to act as commander on board the *Tryal* during his illness.

February 27, the squadron weighed from St. Julian, and entered the Streights of Le Maire on the 7th of March, the *Pearl* and the *Tryal* being ordered to keep a-head of the squadron: we came in with fine weather and a good gale, and were hurried through by the strength of the tide in about two hours. Now, being all in high spirits, and on the verge of the Pacific Ocean, we fancied we had nothing more to do, than to traverse those happy seas, whose golden coasts were to recompense our labours: but, alas! we were soon awaked from these delusive dreams; for we had scarce passed these streights, when a terrible storm arose. At the same time, the tide turned against us, and the *Wager* and the *Anne Pink*, being the sternmost of the fleet, it was with the utmost difficulty they escaped being wrecked on the rocks of Staten-land. For above three months succeeding, we had incessant hurricanes, and such mountainous seas as surpris'd the most experienced sailors amongst us, so that the whole squadron was in great distress. March 10, we lost sight of the *Anne Pink*, which joined us again on the 16th. On the 30th the *Gloucester's* main-yard broke in the flings; which accident was the more unfortunate, as it protracted our continuance in these boisterous seas. The commodore ordered

ordered several carpenters aboard of her, for the greater expedition. April 8, several guns were fired to the leeward, as signals of distress; the commodore made a signal for the squadron to bring to. At day-break we saw the *Wager*, whose mizzen-mast was broke two feet above the awning, and was carried away with the main-top-sail yard; and by a roll of the sea, all the chain-plates to windward were broke likewise. What added to these misfortunes was, their captain, Cheap, was sick in bed, and their carpenter still on board the *Gloucester*. On the 13th, the commodore, being on the weather-quarter, bore down, and spoke with the *Gloucester*. He undertook to send the carpenter, desired the captain to take the most effectual measures for remedying what was amiss, and to do all he could to keep up with the squadron. Towards the latter end of March, says Mr. Walter, we were advanced 10 deg. to the west of the westernmost point of Terra del Fuego; this allowance being double to what former circum-navigators have thought necessary to be taken, in order to compensate for the drift of the western current, imagining ourselves pretty well advanced within the limits of the southern ocean: but on April 13 we were got but one degree in latitude to the south of the west entrance of the Straights of Magellan; so that we fully expected, in a very short time to have experienced the tranquillity of the Pacific Ocean: But these were vain delusions; for the next morning the *Pink* made a signal of seeing land right a-head, which, by the latitude we fell in with it, we took to be a part of Terra del Fuego, called, in Frezier's chart, Cape Noir. It was very strange that the currents should have driven us to the east with such strength, when we thought ourselves 10 deg. more westerly. Thus instead of having our troubles relieved by a warmer climate, we were to steer again to the south, and combat those western blasts, with which we had so often been terrified. Add to this the discouragement we received by the diminution of our squadron; having three days before lost sight of the *Severn* and the *Pearl*, which we never saw more,

more, till their arrival at the island of Juan Fernandez.

April 22, we stood away to the south west, and on the 25th the weather became more moderate; but the remaining part of the month we had generally hard gales: towards the end of it there were but few on board who were not afflicted with the scurvy, and in this month no less than 43 died of it, out of the Centurion's company. In the month of May we lost almost double that number, and, as we did not reach the island of Juan Fernandez till the middle of June, the distemper encreased to such a degree, that after the loss of above 200 men, we could not muster more than six fore-mast men in a watch capable of duty. It would be difficult to ennumerate all the various concomitants which attend the sea-scurvy. It often produces fevers, agues, pleurifies, jaundices, rheumatic pains, costiveness, &c. But the most extraordinary circumstance, and what would be scarce credible upon a single evidence, is, that the scars of wounds which have been for many years healed, are forced open again by this distemper; of which, there was a remarkable instance in one of the invalids on board the Centurion; who had been wounded fifty years before at the battle of the Boyne, and tho' he was cured soon after, and had been well for many years past; yet on his having the scurvy, his wounds broke out afresh, and appeared as if they had never been healed: nay, what is still more astonishing, the callous of a broken bone, which had been completely formed, was found to have been hereby dissolved, and the fracture seemed as if it had never been consolidated.

Having now cruised in vain for more than a fortnight in quest of the other ships; we resolved to leave this terrible coast, and make the best of our way for Juan Fernandez. May 30 we had a view of the continent of Chili, distant about 12 leagues. The land made exceeding high, and appeared very white; so that what we saw was doubtless the tops  
of

of the Cordilleras covered with snow. June 9, at day-break, we discovered that long-wished-for island, and plyed all day and the next night, to get in with the land, but to so wretched a condition was this sixty-gun ship reduced, that in the middle watch the lieutenant could muster no more than two quarter-masters and six fore-mast-men capable of working; and without the assistance of the officers servants, and the boys, it had been impossible to have reached it. However, with much difficulty, we came to an anchor at the mouth of the bay on the 12th in the morning in 56 fathom. Soon after we had got into this new station we discovered a sail, and knew her to be the Tryal sloop. We immediately sent some hands aboard her, by whose assistance she was brought to an anchor between us and the land. She likewise had suffered severely; for the captain informed us, that out of his small number, he had buried thirty-four men. Having prepared our tents, we sent all our sick on shore on the 17th and 18th, amounting to 167 persons, besides 14 who died in the boats on their being exposed to the fresh air. It was near twenty days after our landing before the mortality ceased, and for the first ten days we rarely buried less than six per day. June 21, one of our people from an eminence discovered a ship to the leeward, and observed that she had no sail abroad but her courses and main-top-sail. This made us imagine it was one of our squadron; but the weather growing thick and hazy, we saw no more of her till the 26th in the afternoon; and the next day about noon she approached so near that we could distinguish her to be the Gloucester. The commodore not doubting her being in distress, instantly sent his boat with water, fish, and vegetables to her assistance; which proved to them a very seasonable relief; for, perhaps, never was a crew in so deplorable a situation. She had lost two thirds of her complement; and of those who were yet alive, scarce any were capable of doing duty, except the officers and servants. The commodore sent her water and

and provisions twice more, when he was informed she had spent a month in endeavouring to fetch the bay; tho' even now she was no farther advanced than the first moment she made the island. Thus was this unhappy vessel bandied about within a few leagues of their intended harbour; and of that harbour which alone could put an end to their calamities. Now we lost sight of her again for several days; but at a time we least expected it, we had, on the 23d of July, the pleasure to see her open the north west point of the bay with a flowing sail. We instantly sent what boats we had to her assistance, and in an hour's time after, she anchored safe, within us, in the bay. We first assisted them in mooring, then sent their sick on shore, who by deaths were now reduced to less than 80; of these too, we expected to lose the greatest part; but whether those farthest advanced in the disease were all dead, or the greens we had sent aboard prepared the remaining few for a speedy recovery, their sick were in general restored to strength, in a much shorter time than our own, and fewer of them, in proportion, died ashore.

After this we never were joined by any other of our ships, except the *Anne Pink*, whose story we shall defer at present. Whilst we were here cleaning our ships, and filling water, we set up a large copper oven, and baked bread every day for the ship's company. June 30, at five in the morning, we were surprised by a violent gust of wind, which instantly parted our small bower cable, about ten fathom from the ring of the anchor. The ship swung off at once to the best bower, which luckily withstood the violence, and brought us up with two cables an end, in 80 fathom. July 1, being favoured with the wind, we warped the ship in again, let go the anchor in 41 fathom, and remained secure in the bay for the future. When the *Gloucester* arrived in the bay, captain Mitchell informed the commodore, that, during his absence, he had been driven by the winds as far as the island called *Masa Fuero*, about 22 leagues to the west of *Juan Fernandez*.

nandez. His description of this island gave rise to a conjecture, that some of our Squadron which were missing might possibly have fallen in with that place : Mr. Anson therefore resolved to send the Tryal sloop thither, to be satisfied whether any of them were there or not. August 4, having got the Tryal in readiness to sail, the next day she proceeded with a fair wind. On the 16th we espied a sail, which proved to be our victualler the Anna Pink, and was the last ship that joined us, whose dangers and good fortune being matters worthy of our notice, we shall here relate them.

May 16 the Anna Pink, after having split her fore-top-sail came to an anchor to the eastward of the island of Inchin, the whole crew consisting of 16 men and boys. On the 18th they drove into 65 fathom water, within a mile of the land, and expected to be drove on shore every moment, where the coast was so very high and steep, they had not the least prospect of saving ship or cargo. Under these terrifying circumstances she drove nearer and nearer, expecting to strike every instant, when they saw a small opening in the land, and instantly cutting away their anchors, they steered for its security against all winds and swells. In this harbour, discovered in a miraculous manner, she came to an anchor in 25 fathom. Here they continued two months, where her people, who were ill of the scurvy, soon recovered their health by the fresh provisions and excellent water, with which the neighbouring shore abounded. As this place may prove of great importance to future navigators, I shall here give the best account I could get of it. It lies in 45 deg. 30 min. south latitude, and the island of Inchin lies before it, which is thought to be one of the islands of Chonos, mentioned in the Spanish accounts, as stretching all along that coast. There are two coves in it where ships may conveniently heave down, and fine runs of fresh water falling into it; so luckily situated, that casks may be filled in the long boat with an hose. The refreshments they here met with, were celery, nettle-tops, &c. some mullets, cockles and mussels; geese, shags, and penguins.

When the *Anna Pink* had joined the commodore, the *Severn*, the *Pearl*, and the *Wager* store-ship remained. The two first parted company off Cape Noir, and as we were afterwards informed, put back to the *Brazil*s: so that, of all the ships which came into these South Seas, the *Wager*, captain Cheap, was the only one that was missing; who, in making the best of her way to the island of Socoro, our first place of rendezvous, had, on the 14th of May, the straps of her fore-jeer-blocks unfortunately broke; and the fore-yard came down about the people's ears. The same day they saw land, the captain had the misfortune to fall from the after-ladder, and dislocated his shoulder: in the afternoon, betwixt four and five o'clock, says Mr. Campbel, the ship struck: on feeling the shock, I asked the master what was the matter; he answered, it was only a great sea under the counter. She, instantly struck again with a more dreadful shock than before, whereupon the captain ordered to let go the anchor; but we could not clear it till it was too late. In the mean time she struck so hard that she broke the tiller; when an anchor of 4800 weight, belonging to the *Centurion*, that lay in the hatch-way, went thro' her bottom. We immediately haled up our main-fail, bore away for the land, and providence conducted us between two rocks, where she stuck fast; unable to proceed, or sink. I now went to the captain, who was in a shocking condition with his shoulder, and asked if he would go ashore; adding, I feared the ship would part very soon; he answered, save the sick, and do not mind me. All hands were now employed in getting out things necessary for our preservation. The yawl went ashore first, and carried as many people as would get into her, then the barge and cutter went with more: but our greatest misfortune was, that on this fatal day, the spirit of discord reigned among the people: for when I desired them to return with me in the yawl, to fetch such things from the ship as were necessary for our safety; they would not. Some of the petty officers, indeed, went with me, and we asked the captain



captain again to go ashore; but he insisted that every other person should go first. I informed him that all were gone that would go. He then raised himself from his bed, and being scarce able to move, we helped him into the boat, and carried him ashore, where finding two or three huts, built by the Indians, I fixed on one of them for the captain. As soon as he got into the hut, he ordered me to go again to the ship and see if any other of the men would come off: but it was now impossible for us to get on board, by reason of the mast lying on one side, and a great sea. In the mean time the people who were left behind broke open the lazaretto where the wine was stowed, scuttled the pipes, and made themselves drunk; so that several of them tumbled into the sea.

Going one day on board the ship, we saw three canoes full of Indians. We made signals to them with our hats to come near. They had with them their chief or casique. I went with them on shore to the captain, who treated them kindly, and to shew their gratitude, they the next day brought us six sheep, and a large quantity of fine mussels. They were of a middle size, of a swarthy complexion, but extremely courteous. June 6, Mr. Cozens was confined for abusing the captain, but was released the same day. Soon after, this unhappy gentleman quarrelled with the surgeon, chiefly on account of his tender regard for the captain. They went to blows, and the surgeon got the better. At last, on Cozens's going to the purser, who was serving out provisions in the store-tent, a quarrel ensued, and the purser took out a pistol to shoot him, but the cooper struck it on one side, and saved his life. Hearing the pistol go off, and at the same time the cooper crying out, Cozens is coming to murder us, the captain thought the former had fired the pistol, and taking up another discharged it at him, which mortally wounded him in the head. This unlucky accident laid the foundation of a great deal of mischief. On the 17th the surgeon's mate took a ball out of Mr. Cozens's cheek much flattened, and he died soon after. The next

day the carpenter cut the long boat in two, lengthened her eleven feet, and she was compleated about the middle of October. While we were preparing to put out to sea, eighty of the ship's company, having formed a design of going thro' the Streights of Magellan for the coast of Brasil, and insisting, that that was the only probable step towards our safe arrival in England, they drew up a writing, shewing their reasons for attempting that way, rather than to join the commodore, and brought it to the captain, desiring him to sign it: but captain Cheap refused to do it with disdain, telling them at the same time, that it was against his honour to turn his back upon the enemy. On this the men declared "they would go northward, and that he ought " to have his command taken from him." Soon after they came and seized him, under pretence of carrying him a prisoner to England, to be tried for the murder of Mr. Cozens, and accordingly confined him under a guard. This, says Mr. Campbell, was done in a violent manner; for they tied his hands behind him with a rope, led him out of his tent in his shirt, (he being in bed when they took him) and confined him in another tent till the boat went off. After these people departed, there remained with the captain no more than nineteen persons; which, however were as many as the bark and the yawl, the only embarkations we had, could well carry off, all of us in a miserable condition; however we haled both these vessels up to high-water mark, and all became carpenters; nor was captain Cheap, who from the loss of the ship till this time had hardly stirred out of his hut, an idle spectator. He became very brisk, went about to get wood and water, made fires, and proved an excellent cook. I myself, says our author, had one night the honour to sup with him, and we had a slaugh cake \* of his own making, the best I ever eat on the island.

All

---

\* *This sort of food was nothing but water and flour, made into a batter, and mixed with a small sea weed, that*  
is

All the month of November the weather was so very bad, that we could rarely get any shell-fish; so that we had nothing but slaugh, fried with tallow-candles, which were driven along shore from the wreck; here-upon we became so weak, as hardly to be able to stand. At length two Indian canoes came and brought a few dogs, which we killed and eat; the weather being so bad, the Indians could neither catch feel, nor dive for mussels. Thus we lived in the utmost necessity till the 3d of December, which being a fine day, with a south wind, the captain sent me to the wreck to see if I could find any thing; and I had the good fortune to take up three casks of fine beef, which, as soon as I got it on shore, the captain-ordered me to divide equally to every man; which I did, and remember that it came to 53 pieces of beef a man; so that we lived well during the remainder of the time we staid on the island, and began to grow strong again with English Provision. December 15 the people grew impatient for their departure from this island, and about nine in the morning, we got every thing into the boats and put to sea. Captain Cheap, the honourable Mr. Byron, and the surgeon, were in the barge, with eight men to row: Our author and Mr. Hamilton were in the yawl, with six men to row. We had not been out at sea above half an hour, says he, before the wind shifted, and the water was so rough, that we expected to go to the bottom every moment. To avoid this, as far as in our power lay, we flung every thing, even our beef, overboard, tho' we knew not where to get a morsel to save us from perishing. The sea at length ran so high, that we lost sight of the barge. In this situation, while every one was preparing for death, we saw an opening in a rock, stood in for it, and found an inlet thro' the mountains. and soon after the barge came to the same place. We did not row far up the inlet before we

---

*is slaugh, which grows on the submarine rocks; and the whole is fried with pork suet. Poor stuff! yet even the captain was forced to be content with it.*

landed, to look for a place to make a fire in, to dry ourselves. At last we found a hollow in a rock, where we lay all night. In the morning, the captain, seeing the weather favourable, ordered us to put to sea again. All this day we plied with the oars, and rowed for the shore among some small islands to shelter ourselves, and it raining hard, the captain ordered the barges main-sail ashore to make a tent of; while the people got under a great tree where they made a fire. All the eatables we found here was a sea-weed, that grows on the sunken rocks, which we called sea-tangle. Not being able to put to sea the next day, we were all employed in looking for food. The surgeon shot a wild goose, we fetched wood and cut it, while the captain made a fire, and stood cook. We staid here three days, and called the bay Swamp bay, because this, and all the islands about it, were low, swampy ground. The next day, keeping from the coast as far as we could, we saw another opening between the high-land and a point of low-land; we steered for it, and found a very fine bay, down which we rowed to the very end; but were obliged to come back again. This night we lay in a little cove, where, being unable to procure any victuals, we brought in a sort of red wood to make a fire, which burnt very well, tho' green: so we called this place Red-wood-cove. The next day, about nine in the morning, favoured with a fresh gale, (as near as without a compass we could guess) we bent our course north east, the land a-head being very high, with an opening between it and the mountains. The captain sent me to see whether there was any passage through. I went, and found an island, which we named the Duke of Montross's island. We had then come 40 leagues from Wager island, where we left the wreck. Two days after being, by our account, Christmas-day, we rowed to a head-land about nine leagues distant, when the captain ordered me to look out for a convenient place to anchor, which I soon did. Here we feasted ourselves with some tangle, and drank his majesty's health in Adam's ale. Near the shore I found a sandy bay,

bay, where an unexpected breaker drove the yawl ashore; we instantly took every thing out of her, and launched her again, the barge never coming near us all the while, tho' we had neither victuals nor drink, and were wet to the skin; so we went to her. She lay in a bay to the northward, and coming up, we asked for a little fresh water; but were told they had none. Next day the weather proved so bad, we could not go out to sea; so we went down the bay to find something to eat; but meeting with nothing, we returned and lay at the same place where we were the night before, where, going ashore, we found some shell-fish and tangle. In the morning, sailing along shore, we doubled one of the head-lands, and night coming on, we were forced to lie on our oars; the weather continuing bad, all hands were employed in getting provisions. Here we met with fine lagones, plenty of mussels, and some seal. The bad weather continuing, we went all ashore again on the same errand, and killed a young seal, then dressed it for dinner, and surely no lamb was ever so good. After dinner, I and Mr. Hamilton took our guns, and went out again, but on our return saw the boats riding at a grapling; and the wind shifting, brought a great sea into the bay, which began to break without the boats. The third breaker filled the yawl and sunk her. The two men left in her were marines, one of whom was drowned, the other I haled out of the sea and saved. With the yawl, to which seven of us belonged, we lost all our clothes, &c.

As the barge was not capable of carrying us and our companions, being in all seventeen, it was determined to leave four of the marines on this desolate island, to whom the captain gave arms, ammunition, a frying-pan, &c. These poor wretches stood on the beach, when we departed, and giving us three cheers, cried out, God bless the king. But when we got out of the bay, we met with such a terrible sea, as obliged us to return to the same place again, and coming by where the four marines were left, we resolved to bring them off;

off; but alas! we could neither find them, nor any thing belonging to them, except one musket, and their ammunition; so that we concluded they were either taken by the Indians, or devoured by wild beasts, having never had any farther account of them.

January 29, 1742, it was agreed to attempt no farther trial; but to make the best of our way back to Wager island, from whence we came, and to which place we had been so much used, as to make it a kind of home. In our passage hither, we met with an Indian canoe, and no body belonging to her, which we thought would be of service to us, as a fishing vessel; so we put two hands in her, towed her astern, and got safe into Cheap's bay (as we had before named it when we suffered shipwreck) about six o'clock in the afternoon, all starving for want of sustenance.

Having here endured the greatest hardships imaginable for fifteen days, on the 12th of February, by our account, Mr. Hamilton walking along shore, saw some pieces of beef floating in the sea, and we took up several of them. Soon after some Indians, with a native of Chileva, who could speak a little Spanish, came in two canoes. The surgeon asked, if he would carry us to Chileva in the barge, promising that he should have her for his trouble. March 6, we all, except a marine, who had the day before stole a great coat and hid himself, embarked with our Indian pilot, in number seventeen. On the third day after our departure, the Indian brought us to the bottom of a great bay, where we found his hut, his wife, and two children. Having staid here four days, without any thing to eat but boiled tangle; the Indian, with his wife and children, went out in the canoe to get some seal, leaving his partner to carry us to a place where we might get some shell-fish. As soon as we got thither, every one of us went along shore but Mr. Elliot, the surgeon, who was ill, and sat down till we returned. The men got back before the officers, and Mr. Elliot desired them to go off a little, and try to shoot him a gull. Hereupon they all got into the boat, taking with them

them the young Indian for a guide, and we never saw them again.

By this means there were left on shore captain Cheap, Mr. Hamilton, lieutenant of marines; the honourable Mr. Byron, and Mr. Campbel, midshipmen; and Mr. Elliot, surgeon. One would imagine our misfortunes had long before this time been incapable of augmentation: but alas! the present situation was much more terrifying than any thing we had yet endured. We were now left on a desolate coast; destitute of provisions, arms, ammunition, and every conveniency, except the tattered garments on our backs, every thing else being carried off in the barge. Yet even now, when no hope of relief was left, we perceived a canoe at some distance, which proved to be that of the Indian, with his family who had promised to conduct us to Chiloe. On his coming ashore, finding the barge gone, and his companion; the poor Indian was extremely concerned; but being at last pacified, he still undertook to convey us to the Spanish settlements, and procure us provisions by the way. Mr. Elliot died soon after they embarked, so that there now remained only four of their whole company.

It was about the middle of March when they put to sea, and after a complicated passage by land and water, in which they endured great hardships, captain Cheap, Mr. Byron, and Mr. Campbel, at last arrived at Chiloe in the beginning of June, where they were kindly received by the Spaniards; but Mr. Hamilton, on account of some quarrel among the Indians, did not get thither till two months after: had their distresses continued but a few days longer, in all probability none of them would have survived. The captain himself was recovered with great difficulty; and the rest were reduced so low by the coldness of the season, incessant labour, and the want of sustenance, that it is amazing to think how they could support themselves so long. After some stay at Chiloe, they were sent to Valparaiso, and from thence to St. Jago, the capital of Chili, where they continued above a year; but on the advice of a cartel

cartel being settled between Great Britain and Spain, captain Cheap, Mr. Byron, and Mr. Hamilton, were allowed to return to Europe in a French ship: but, says Mr. Walter, "the other midshipman, Mr. Campbell, having changed his religion whilst at St. Jago, chose to return to Buenos Ayres with Pizarro and his officers, with whom he went afterwards to Spain in the *Asia*; where having failed in his endeavours of getting a commission in his catholic majesty's service, he came to England, and attempted to be reinstated in the British navy: But as the change of his religion, and his offering himself to the court of Spain, (tho' not accepted) are matters which, he is conscious, are capable of being incontestably proved, notwithstanding he complains of the injustice that had been done him by captain Cheap, and strongly disavows his ever being in the Spanish service; he has not hitherto, that I know of, succeeded. Thus was it above twelve months before the fatiguing peregrination of this part of the *Wager's* crew ended." But, as our readers, doubtless, will be desirous to know what became of those 80 men who deserted their commander, left him and his adherents on an uninhabited island, and confined him there, till they got off with the long boat and cutter; we shall, in this place, entertain them with an account of their adventures, from the time they went off from *Wager* island, to that, when some of them returned to England.

This unfortunate step of the gunner, carpenter and their foolhardy party, was certainly very ill judged: for had they, instead of going southward in the long boat and cutter, went all together with the captain to the northward, they, in all probability, had made themselves masters of *Chiloe*, and of a *Lima* ship into the bargain: nay, had they failed in this attempt, they would have reinforced the commodore's squadron to such a degree, as to have rendered him capable of some important enterprise; but their folly and obstinacy not only deprived themselves, but the rest of their crew, from making their fortunes, and of doing considerable service to the public; instead of which, the few who survived



survived the hardships they underwent in this ill-fated voyage, brought nothing home but a melancholy tale of their sufferings, and a sad account of the lives lost, in a wrong search after self-preservation; not of riches, or honour.

On Monday the 12th of October, 1740, the deserters launched the long-boat, and with great joy christened her the *Speedwell*. They went off the following day; but danger hastily pursued them. They were not got far from *Wager-island* before the *Speedwell* split her top-sail; so they returned the next day, and anchored that night in *Cheap's bay*, the place they went from. For several days after they made very little progress in their intended voyage for the *Streights of Magellan*. November 3, they lost the cutter, by the obstinacy of the people on board her; but on the 6th got sight of her again, and made her fast astern of them; but alas! she got loose in the morning, with one poor fellow in her, was staved among the rocks, and he went to the bottom. On the 14th they came in sight of the south shore, which seemed, at its first appearance, like that of a large island, resembling two sugar-loaves at the further end; south of which a rocky point extends into the sea. This point, the gunner affirmed to be *Cape Pillar*, and declared he was thereby fully assured of being in the mouth of the *Streights*, alledging *Sir John Narborough's* authority for his opinion; but the people were deaf to all he could say, and would go no farther, but would sail a contrary course, which employed them from the 25th of November, till the 5th of December 1741, in gradually returning. On the 6th they came abreast *Cape Quad*, and on the 11th doubled *Cape Virgin Mary*, where they took leave of the *Streights of Magellan*, having spent 30 days in their passage from the time they left *Cape Pillar*. On the 16th at noon they reached *Penguin island*, and steered for *Port Desse*, from whence they departed on the 26th.

January 10, 1742, tho' many of this lawless crew were at that time afflicted with feverish symptoms, and other bodily disorders, their malignant tempers of mind

mind began to rage a fresh, and break out with their usual violence; nothing would pacify them but a distribution of flour, tho' they were, even then, in a state of famine. However, they sailed the next morning N. E. by E. within a mile of the shore, along a fine country, abounding with horses and great dogs.

Here, says our author, the provisions being quite gone, and only one cask of water remaining, we ran as near the shore as we could with safety; and 14, the most healthy of us, agreed to swim to land, to seek for provisions. We all got safe ashore, except one of the marines, who was quite spent, and drowned within three fathoms of the beach. We had four casks thrown overboard after us, to be filled with fresh water, if we could find any, to which were lashed some muskets and ammunition, which we received. After we had walked above a mile from the beach, we saw a great number of wild horses and dogs, large flocks of parrots and some seal. We also met with a spring of fresh water. We shot a wild horse, and some seal, and filled three casks of water, which were towed on board by five of those who swam off with us. The 14th we received in a scuttled cask some necessaries, with ammunition, and a letter to acquaint us of the hazard they should run in coming nearer the shore, and that we must wait till the weather was better.

Next morning the weather was fair and the wind at N. N. W. when we expected they would have stood in for the land; but to our great surprize we saw the schooner, under sail, at some leagues distance from us. We could not help looking on this step as the greatest act of barbarity. We found ourselves abandoned, were sickly, fatigued, destitute of provisions, and in a desolate part of the world. Our foreboding apprehensions, on this occasion, are much easier to be imagined than described.

We were eight in number, left here by our crew, for whose preservation, we risked our lives in swimming ashore to get them provisions. Reflecting a while upon our unhappy circumstances, we at length resolved to  
stay

stay on the beach, till we grew strong enough to be able to go to Buenos Ayres, about 300 miles to the north west: accordingly, we took up our lodging in a trench by the sea-side, and staid here a month, living upon seal; at the end of which time, we had recovered ourselves pretty well, and began to prepare for our journey. Having made each of us a knapsack of seal-skin, we put into them as much dried seal as we could well carry, and filled their bladders with fresh water, to serve us for bottles; we set forward about the middle of February, and the first two days travelled 60 miles; when our water being near expended, and not able to find any more, we agreed to return back to our old quarters, till the rainy season; which took us up two days and a half more. After our arrival we set about building a little hut near the sea side, where we staid three months longer, living the whole time on seals and armadillos, with some sea-weed, which we used for bread.

The armadillo is of the size of a sucking pig, the body pretty long, and inclosed in a shell, leaving room under the belly for the four legs; the nose is like that of a hedge-hog, and the neck long enough to reach all over its body. The shell is jointed on the back, so that she can turn her body which way she pleases. She digs holes in the ground, and burrows like a rabbit. It is very good eating. Now we resolved to make a second attempt for the river Plate, and kept our rode along the sea-shore. In three days we travelled 70 miles, when a terrible storm of thunder, lightening and rain surprised us, during which, we had nothing to cover us but seal-skin jackets, and could procure no provisions; so that to proceed further, was only to lengthen our journey back again, which, we feared would be the consequence; and so it happened.

When we arrived again to our old quarters, we agreed to divide ourselves into two parties, who were to range alternately to provide for the whole. We were now almost surfeited with seal, and one day, as our party, consisting of four, went out to scour the  
K k country,

country, we saw a great many wild dogs, but could not kill any; tho', now and then, we surpris'd a puppy, which, for change of diet, we thought a delicious meal. We also saw deer, but could not contrive how to take them. The next day, in our rambles, we found a litter of puppies, in a hole like a coney-burrow, but larger. The day following we joined all together in search of more, and brought home thirteen, designing, if possible to bring them up tame, and they afterwards became very serviceable. Each of us had his brace of dogs, which we taught like English spaniels, nor would they leave us to herd with the wild ones. Being one day a hunting, we saw some wild hogs with their young, our dogs pursued them, and took two young ones, which we preserv'd alive, and shot one of the old ones. We reared the young ones, which proved a sow and a boar. They became very tame, and whenever we went out a hunting would follow the dogs, and at night, we, our dogs and hogs, pigged together in the same hut.

It was now seven months since the long-boat left us, and winter came on apace; we, therefore resolv'd to put our habitation in order, so that it might shelter us from the inclemency of the coming season, which we did in the best manner we were able. Three weeks after, when we were hunting on the plain, we saw a lion couched on the ground, and, as we thought, watching his prey, being near a wild cat's hole. We got close together with our muskets ready, and Joseph Clinch fired at him, at the distance of 20 yards, resting his piece, says our author, upon my shoulder; but missed him, and the beast kept his posture, taking no notice of the report. He charg'd, and fired again in the same manner, shot him in the right shoulder, and he fell on his back. We ran to him, knock'd him on the head, brought him to our quarters, and dress'd his heart, and ribs, but they were very indifferent eating.

Soon after, being mine and my three partners turn to go to the rocks to seek provisions, towards evening, we return'd with three seals. When we came within a stone's cast of the hut, we saw our dogs busy, and  
wagging

wagging their tails, in a fondling manner. Coming up, we found two of our company dead; one with his throat cut, the other stabbed in the breast. Our hut was rifled, the arms and utensils all gone, and the fire put out, tho' their bodies were scarcely cold; the murderers were fled. A shocking sight this! What to do we knew not, expecting to share the same fate! However, we resolved to pass the night here, let what would happen.

Next morning the dogs that belonged to them, stood upon the top of the cliff barking at us, and we could not entice them to come down, till the evening. What became of the other two we could never learn any account of. In this melancholy state, all that we could do, was to quit this unhappy place; and to make one attempt more for Buenos Ayres. Having no time to lose, we immediately filled our knapsacks with raw seal, and their bladders with water, as before; then set forward.

At the end of ten days we made the cape of the river Plate, having travelled very hard; but found it impossible to get any farther; so that after many vain attempts, we were obliged to return to our old habitation, which we performed in less than ten days. Here we durst not now ramble abroad, having nothing to defend ourselves. About a month after we had entered into our old hut, it being my turn to stay at home, my three companions went to seek for provisions. I thought them long, and in the evening went to meet them, when, to my amazement, I saw about a dozen men on horseback galloping towards me. Expecting to be murdered, I fell upon my knees, begging my life, when I heard a voice, saying, "Don't be afraid, "Isaac, we are all here." Having examined the host, they made us all get up behind them, and carried us to their companions, who, with them, had 200 horses which they had taken in hunting.

Next morning, when we had refreshed ourselves, we left this place, driving our troop of horses before us, and having travelled 19 days, we came to another place of rendezvous, where we were bought and sold

several times. At length, we arrived at the town where the king lives, who detained us as his property. When he had examined us, he ordered a horse to be killed, and dressed for us, lodged us in his own hut that night, and ordered one to be built for us against the next: we were used well, and there being four Spanish women, captives, in the place; his majesty smiling told us, he would give each of us a wife. Here we staid eight months.

The Patagonian Indians, in this part of the country, are tall and well made, good-natured and obliging to each other, and never see one another want. Their method of feasting is very odd: they have in the summer a plenty of small sweet berries, like our whortle berries, and when they have got together a sufficient quantity, they make a hole in the ground, about four feet square, lining the bottom and sides with horse-hides. This pit, or vessel, they fill half full of these berries, then add to them as much water as will fill it to the top, stirring it about three or four times a day; then let it ferment a while. Round this, the men and women sit smoaking and drinking a whole night together, singing, or rather shrieking, in their way. They seem to have some notion of a deity, and worship the sun and moon; but more especially the new moon. They have but one wife, and live lovingly together.

We were at present 1000 miles from Buenos Ayres; but at length prevailed with the chief to send us thither. So we all, (except one John Duck, who was a mulatto, born in London, and sold to a master up farther in the country, where he will end his life) travelled twelve days, and being now within 100 miles of Buenos Ayres, we begged of the chief to dispatch a messenger to the Portuguese governor there, to acquaint him of three English prisoners he had with him, and to know if he would redeem us; and he did for 90 dollars, with which our Indian chief seemed well satisfied. We were now sent prisoners on board the *Asia*, that carried the admiral Pizarro, before mentioned, with sixteen other English prisoners. Nothing but what is common at sea happened, till we arrived at a harbour to

to the south of Cape Finisterre, where we were sent on shore, and confined 15 days; from hence we were sent, under a guard, to the Groyne, and confined in the castle of St. Antonio fourteen weeks, till an order came from Spain to send us to Oporto, where we embarked on board the Charlotta snow, captain Miller, and we three only \* of the eight, arrived safe in London July 8, 1746. Proceed we now to the remainder of the Wager's crew, who ran away in the long boat.

On the 28th of January 1742, keeping close along shore, at six in the morning, they, thro' the mercy of God, discovered the mouth of the river Rio Grand, and steered north to the town. There presently came off a boat, and three of them went ashore in it. The commandant of the place used them civilly, and sent provisions on board for their companions. Before he left them, he said, the Severn and Pearl were at Rio Janeiro, in great distress; that they had sent to England for men, and could not sail from thence till the arrival of the Flota, which would not be till June. April 10, at eight in the morning, they anchored before the city of Rio Janeiro, where they again met with very good usage; and, on the 20th of May, the gunner, carpenter, and cooper, went on board the St. Ubes, one of the Brasil ships bound for Bahia and Lisbon, leaving ten more of their companions behind. The 28th of November following, they arrived at Lisbon, and, on the 20th of December, embarked in the Stirling Castle for England, where they arrived January 1, 1743. And now, after this short account of the misfortunes which befel the Anna Pink, the sad catastrophe of the Wager, and melancholy adventures of captain Cheap, with those of his obstinate renegadoes, we shall return to commodore Anson, whom we left at the island of Juan Fernandez, and resume the thread of his story †.

---

\* *Isaac Morris, John Andrews, Samuel Cooper.*

† *The adventures of these wrong-headed people commencing in 1742, we thought it proper to continue that date, to prevent confusion in the perusal of Mr. Anson's voyage.*

The Tryal sloop, that had been sent to Mafá Fuero, returned in about a week, having been round the island, without meeting with any part of our Squadron, affords us an opportunity of inserting the accounts given of this place by the officers of that vessel; which we presume was, by them, more particularly examined than it had ever been before, or, perhaps ever will be again. The Spaniards mention two islands, under the name of Juan Fernandez, calling them the Greater and the Less. The Greater is the island where we landed, and the Less, that which we are about to describe. It bears from the Greater Juan Fernandez west by south, and is about 20 leagues distant. Our people found it covered with trees, having several streams of water pouring down its sides: They found also, on the north side of it, a place where ships might come to anchor; but a little inconvenient, the bank being steep, extending but a little way, and the water very deep; so that if you do not anchor very near the shore, you lie exposed to all winds, except a southerly one. This place abounds with goats, who, not accustomed to be disturbed, were no way apprehensive of danger, till they had been frequently fired at. Besides goats, our people found here great numbers of seals and sea-lions. Upon the whole they seemed to imagine, that, tho' it is not the most eligible place for a ship to refresh, it might afford some sort of shelter, especially to a single ship apprehensive of superior force at the island of Juan Fernandez.

All the latter part of August we were employed in unloading provision from the Anna Pink, great quantities of it we found unfit for use; which was occasioned from the water the Pink had made, by straining in bad weather. The commodore, finding he had no farther occasion for her service, sent notice to Mr. Gerrard, the master, that he discharged her from attending the Squadron, with a certificate how long she had been employed. In consequence of this dismissal, Mr. Gerrard was at liberty to return home, or to make the best of his way to any port where he thought he could furnish himself with a cargo, for the advantage



tage of the owners; but he, well knowing it was impossible to proceed to sea with her, before she had been thoroughly refitted, requested Mr. Anson to suffer the carpenters in the squadron to survey her. This was immediately granted, and her defects and decays certified, as also, that she could not depart from the island without the utmost hazard, unless thoroughly refitted.

In our present situation, the thorough refitting of her could not be complied with; the master, therefore, offered a petition to the commodore, in behalf of his owners, praying that he would please to purchase the hull and furniture of the *Pink* for the use of the squadron. An inventory was accordingly taken of every particular belonging to her, with its just value; and the commodore purchased the whole at 300*l*. Mr. Gerrard, with all the hands belonging to him, went on board the *Gloucester*, except two, who were taken into the *Centurion*.

This affair kept us here till the beginning of September, by which time our people were so well recovered of the scurvy, that there was little danger of burying any more for the present. In this place it may be proper to give the reader the sum total of our loss of hands since we left *St. Helen's*, that he may be able in some measure to judge of our sufferings.

#### S A I L O R S.

Died on board the <i>Centurion</i>	292	Remain'd alive	214
Died on board the <i>Gloucester</i>	292	Remain'd alive	82
Died on board the <i>Tryal</i>	42	Remain'd alive	39
Total dead		626	
		Total alive	335

The havock made by the scurvy, had still a severer influence on the invalids and marines, than on the seamen; for, in the *Centurion*, out of 50 invalids, and 79 marines, there remained only 4 invalids, including officers, and 11 marines: on board the *Gloucester*, every invalid perished, and out of 48 marines only two escaped. From hence it appears, that these 3 ships departed from *St. Helen's* with 961 men on board, of whom

whom 626 were dead before we sailed from the island of Juan Fernandez ; so that the whole of our remaining crews, which now were to be distributed among the three ships, consisted of 335 men and boys ; a number not sufficient for manning the Centurion alone, and scarce capable of navigating all the three, with the utmost exertion of their main strength. An insignificant force this ! to oppose the whole power of Chili and Peru. We had at the same time some distant intelligence of a fleet to be sent out from the port of Calao. Again, had there been nothing to be feared from the naval power of the Spaniards in this part of the world, our weak condition gave us the greatest uneasiness, well knowing we were rendered, by this mortality, incapable of attempting any places of importance : for in our present situation the loss of 20 men, was losing the whole. So that we should be now obliged to content ourselves with picking up a few prizes before we were discovered : and though the first event proved more honourable than we could have expected, yet the intermediate distresses by far surpassed our most gloomy apprehensions. But to return to our story.

Having converted the fore-mast of the Victualler into a main-mast for the Tryal, and left her main-mast to make a mizen for the Wager, on the 8th, in the morning, we saw a sail to the north east ; we immediately got all our hands on board the Centurion, and gave her chase till night ; but in the morning, to our great mortification, we had no sight of her from the mast-head : however, as we were now fully convinced she was an enemy, we continued our course all that day and the next, and then, not getting sight of the chase, we gave over the pursuit. Being therefore determined to return to Juan Fernandez, we haled to the south west, having very little wind till the 12th, when a fresh gale arose, and obliged us to stand to the north west. At day-break we saw a sail on our weather-bow, about five leagues distant. We crowded all the sail we could, stood after her, and soon perceived she was not the same ship we first chased. About twelve o'clock we got

got within a reasonable distance of her, and fired four shot amongst her rigging; but they had not courage enough to take them in. As soon as she came within hale of us, the commodore ordered her to bring to under his lee-quarter, hoisted out the boat, and sent Mr. Saumarez, the first lieutenant, to take possession of her; first to send all the officers and passengers, and afterwards the rest of the prisoners, on board the *Centurion*. These prisoners informed us, that the ship was called the *Nuestra Senora del Monte Carmelo*. Her cargo consisted chiefly of sugar, and a great quantity of blue cloth, made in the province of Quito, with several bales of a coarser sort, like Colchester bays, some cotton and tobacco, some trunks of wrought plate, and twenty-three serons of dollars, weighing 200 lb. averdupois each. She was about 450 tons, had twenty-five passengers on board, with fifty-three sailors, whites and blacks; she came from Calao, and was bound for Valparaíso. She had been built thirty years, yet as they lie in harbour all the winter months, they esteemed it no great age. There were no arms on board worth any thing, except a few pistols, belonging to the passengers. We by these prisoners first learnt with certainty the force and destination of that squadron, which cruised off the *Madeiras*, at our arrival there, and which chased the *Pearl* in our Passage to Port St. Julian. We learnt also, that though an embargo had been laid on all the shipping in these seas, on account of Pizarro's disappointment and loss, yet it now no longer subsisted; they, having no news of us in eight months after we were well known to set sail from St. Catharine's, and conceiving it impossible for any ships to continue so long at sea, concluded we had either perished, or been obliged to turn back again.

By this last article of intelligence we seemed positive the enemy knew not that we had passed Cape Horn, and that we had nothing now to fear, weak as we were, from the Spanish force in this part of the world; for though Pizarro had sent an express to the viceroy of Peru, on his return to the river Plate, intimating to him,

him, that it was possible some part of the English squadron might get round, and the latter had already fitted out four ships of force from Calao, three of which were stationed to cruise off Concepcion, and the other at the island Fernandez, where they waited for us till the 6th of June; yet they quitted that station but a few days before our arrival; so that had we made the island on the 28th of May, as we intended, and as we in reality were very near it, we had doubtless fallen in with some part of the Spanish squadron.

Having now gotten on board the *Centurion* most of the prisoners, and all the silver, we sailed to the northward with our prize, and at six next morning arrived at Fernandez, where we anchored the day following. Here we more strictly examined all the letters which were found on board the prize, by which, and our prisoners information. it appeared, that several other merchantmen were bound from Calao to Valparaíso. Mr. Anson sent the *Tryal* sloop next morning to cruise off the last mentioned port. He also resolved to separate the ships under his command, and employ them in distinct cruises. And now our peoples spirits being raised by this earnest of success, he directed, that the guns belonging to the *Anna Pink* should be mounted on board our prize, the *Carmelo*; then sending on board the *Gloucester* six passengers, and 23 seamen, he ordered captain Mitchell to proceed to the latitude of 5 deg. south, and cruise off the high land of Payta, there to continue till he should be joined by the commodore, which would be on Mr. Anson's receiving any other intelligence that should make it necessary to unite our strength. These orders being delivered to the captain of the *Gloucester*, we weighed on the 19th of September, with our prize, and took leave of the island of Juan Fernandez, steering to the east, with design to join the *Tryal* sloop off Valparaíso.

The winds proving cross, we did not lose sight of the island till the 22d; the next night we split our main-top-sail, but got it up again in the morning. A little before sun-set we saw two sail to the eastward, on  
which

which the prize stood directly from us, to prevent any suspicion of our being cruisers. One of these made directly for us, while the other kept at a distance. At seven o'clock we were within pistol shot of the foremost, and had a broadside ready to pour into her, when Mr. Anson ordered the master to hale her in Spanish, on which Mr. Hughs, lieutenant of the *Tryal*, answered us in English, that she was a prize taken by them a few days before, and that the other was the *Tryal*, disabled in her masts; who soon after joined us, and captain Saunders came on board the *Centurion*. He told us, that he had taken this ship the 18th instant; and that she was a prime sailer. She was one of the largest merchantmen employed in those seas, of 600 tons, and called the *Arranzazu*. She was bound to the same place, and had much the same cargo with the *Carmelo*, except that her silver amounted only to 5000*l.* sterl. But to balance this success, we had the misfortune to find the *Tryal* had sprung her main-mast, and that her main-top-mast had come by the board, and as we were all standing to the eastward, with a fresh gale, she had the ill luck to spring her foremast. These misfortunes were heightened by the impossibility, we was just then under, of affording them any assistance; for the wind blowing very hard, raised a hallow sea, that we could not hoist out our boat; so that we were obliged to lie by 48 hours to attend her. This hinderance, I am fully persuaded, says our author, deprived us of very considerable captures.

On the 27th we sent our boat for the captain of the *Tryal*, who, on coming on board, produced an instrument, signed by him and his officers, setting forth, that the *Tryal*, besides being dismasted, was very leaky, and in moderate weather they were forced to ply the pumps constantly, and, if they met with much bad weather, they must inevitably perish: for these reasons, they petitioned the commodore to use some means for their future safety. But as the refitting her in our present situation was not in our power, and it would have been great imprudence to have wasted so much time as would have

have been necessary for this purpose; the commodore therefore was under a necessity of destroying her. However, to keep up the appearance of our force, he ordered the Tryal's prize to be a frigate in his Majesty's service, manned her with the crew of the Captor, and mounted 20 guns on board her, 12 that were taken out of the Tryal sloop, and eight that belonged to the Anna Pink. This resolution taken, captain Saunders was ordered to put it in execution, and also directed to take out of the sloop all the arms, stores, ammunition, and every thing that could be of use to the other ships, then to scuttle her, and sink her. When this was done, captain Saunders was to proceed with his new frigate, to be called the Tryal prize, to the high-land of Valparaíso, keeping it from him N. N. W. and there to cruise to the distance of twelve leagues, and to continue in this station 24 days; and if not joined by the commodore before that time expired, to sail down the coast to Pisco or Nasca, where she would be sure to find Mr. Anson. The commodore also ordered lieutenant Saumarez, who commanded the Centurion's prize, to stay with captain Saunders, to assist him in unloading the sloop, that, by spreading in the cruise, there might be less danger of the enemy's escape. These orders given, the Centurion parted from them on the 27th of September, with design to cruise some days to the south of Valparaíso. By this distribution of our little squadron, we thought we had taken all possible advantages of the enemy; for as we supposed the Gloucester was by this time near the high-land of Payta, we were enabled, by our separate stations, to intercept all vessels betwixt Peru and Chili to the southward, and betwixt Panama and Peru to the northward; but the most prudent cannot ensure success; it was so with us, for by the distress of the Tryal, and quitting our station to assist her, we gave an opportunity to all the ships bound to Valparaíso to get into that port. So that tho' after leaving captain Saunders, we were very expeditious in regaining our station, and beat on and off till the 6th of October, yet were we not able to discover a  
sail

fail of any kind; nor could we find them where they were directed to cruise, tho' we continued there five days; therefore we proceeded down the coast for the high-land of Nasca, which was the second rendezvous, where captain Saunders was to join us. Notwithstanding the commodious situation of this place for our purpose, we saw no sail till the second of November, when two ships came in sight, which proved to be the *Tryal* and *Centurion's* Prizes, who had met with no better success than we. Upon this disappointment, we judged that the enemy at Valparaiso, on missing the two ships we had taken, suspected us to be in that neighbourhood, and had laid an embargo on all the trade in the southern parts. These apprehensions of the embargo, and of the equipment of a Spanish squadron at Calao, determined the commodore to hasten to the leeward of Calao, and join captain Mitchell. With this view, we bore away the same afternoon.

In this new navigation, being uncertain whether we might not meet the Spanish squadron, the commodore took on board part of his crew with which he had manned the *Carmelo*, then stood north, and before night came on, had a view of a little island called *St. Gallan*, which bore from us N. N. E. seven leagues, distant. It lies in 14 deg. south latitude about five miles to the northward of the high-land called *Morro Veijo*, or the old man's head. We mention this island, and the high-land near it, because, between them is the most eligible station on that coast to cruise upon the enemy. The 5th of November we came within view of the high-land of *Barranca*, in 10 deg. 36 min. south latitude, bearing N. E. by E. distant nine leagues, and in less than two hours afterwards saw a sail, to which we all immediately gave chase: But, the *Centurion* so far out-failed the two prizes, that we soon lost sight of them, and pursued the course all night. Towards morning Mr. Brett, our second lieutenant, discovered her; in less than an hour we came up with her, and having fired 14 shot at her, she struck. Our

third lieutenant, Mr. Dennis, was sent in the boat, with 16 men, to take possession of the prize, and to return the prisoners to our ship. This vessel was named the Santa Teresa de Jesus, built at Guiaquil, of about 300 tons, and commanded by Bartolome Urrunaga, a Biscayer, bound from Guiaquil to Calao. Her lading consisted of cocoa, coco-nuts, hides, Pito-thread, which is very strong, and made of a sort of grass, some Quito cloth, wax, &c. The money on board was inconsiderable, being no more than 170 l. sterl.

Besides our prize's crew, who were 45 in number, there were in her ten passengers, four men, and three women, who were natives of the country, born of Spanish parents, together with three black slaves to attend them. The women were, a mother and two daughters, who were under terrible apprehensions at their falling into the hands of an enemy. Filled with these terrors, the women all hid themselves, on our officer's coming on board, and the youngest being very beautiful, when he found them out, it was with great difficulty they were prevailed upon to come to the light. The commodore, being informed of the matter, sent orders, that they should stay in their own ship, with the use of the same apartments, and all the conveniences they enjoyed before, giving strict orders that no one should molest them. And that they might be more certain these orders should be complied with, the commodore permitted the pilot, who is generally the second person in a Spanish ship, to stay with them as a guardian. The pilot was particularly chosen by Mr. Anson for this purpose, because he seemed extremely concerned for them, and at first declared he was married to the youngest of them, tho' it afterwards appeared, he asserted this with no other view, than to secure them from the insults they dreaded on their first falling into our hands.

November 10, we were three leagues south of the southernmost island of Lobos, in 6 deg. 27 min. south latitude, and now drawing near the station appointed to the Gloucester, and, fearing to miss her, made an easy  
sail



fail all night. At day-break next morning we saw a ship, and perceiving her not to be the Gloucester, we gave her chase, but having little wind could make no way. The commodore therefore ordered his barge pinnace and the Tryal's pinnace to be armed and manned, to pursue the chase, and board her. Lieutenant Brett, who commanded the barge, came up with her first, and fired a volley of small shot just over the heads of the people on board; then instantly entered her, with most of his men; after this, he ordered the sails to be trimmed, and bore down to Mr. Anson, taking up in his way the two pinnaces. When he came within four miles of us, he put off in the barge, with a number of prisoners, who had given him intelligence of considerable importance, which he was willing to communicate to the commodore as soon as possible. This prize was called Nuestra Senora del Carmin, commanded by Marcos Morena, a native of Venice. She was about 270 tons, and had on board 43 mariners. She was deep laden with steel, iron, wax, pepper, cedar, plank, snuff, rosarios, European bale goods, powder-blue, cinnamon, Romish indulgencies, and other kinds of merchandize; and tho' this cargo was of little service to us, yet, with respect to the Spaniards, it was the most valuable capture we made in this part of the world; the prime cost at Panama amounting to 400,000 dollars. This ship was bound to Calao, and had stopped at Payta in her way. In this vessel was one John Willams, an Irish Papist, who had travelled all over the Kingdom of Mexico as a pedlar. He informed Mr. Brett, that a few days before, a vessel came into Payta, whose master told the governor, he had been chased by a large ship, which he took to be one of the English squadron; and we conjectured to be the Gloucester; he immediately sent an express to Lima to acquaint the viceroy therewith: and that the king's officer, who lived at Payta, fearing a visit from the English, had removed his majesty's treasure, with his own, to Piura, 14 leagues within land.

We farther learnt from the prisoners, that a large sum of money, belonging to the merchants of Lima, was now lodged in the custom-house of Payta, and was designed to be put on board a vessel now in that port bound for the bay of Sonsonate, in order to purchase part of the cargo of the Manilla ship. The commodore having now discovered that the coast would be soon alarmed, resolved to endeavour to surprise the place, it being the only enterprize in our power to undertake; where we probably might supply ourselves with store of live provisions, which we were in want of, and also have an opportunity of putting our prisoners on shore, who were now very numerous and burthenfome.

Mr. Anson, having well informed himself of the strength of this place, resolved to attempt it that very night. Accordingly we lay far enough off to prevent our being discovered, and yet so near as to get into the bay before day-break. However, the commodore prudently considering that we might easily be seen at a distance, even in the night, which would give the inhabitants an opportunity of removing their effects, and as the strength of the place did not require our whole force, he resolved to attempt it with our boats only. For this purpose he ordered our 18 oared barge, and our own with the Tryal's pinnaces on that service; then picked out fifty eight men to mann them, furnished with arms and ammunition, leaving the command of the expedition to lieutenant Brett, with two of the Spanish pilots to attend him; assuring the prisoners they should all be set ashore at this place, provided the pilots acted faithfully. This interested the prisoners in our success, and we had no reason to suspect their conduct.

It seems, as we afterwards learnt, one of these pilots had been taken 20 years before by captain Clipperton, and had been obliged to conduct his people to surprise Truxillo; now that the only two attempts on shore which had been made at such a distance of time, should be guided by the same person, and he, at both a prisoner, employed

employed against his inclination, is an extraordinary incident, and well worthy mention.

About ten o'clock at night, the ships being about five leagues from the shore, Mr. Brett, with the boats under his command, got to the north of the bay undiscovered. He had no sooner entered it, than some men on board a vessel at anchor saw him, who instantly jumped into the boat, and rowed to the port, crying out, *The English! The English Dogs!* The whole town was suddenly in an uproar, and our people observed several lights carrying backwards and forwards in the fort. On this, lieutenant Brett encouraged his men to pull briskly up, to give the enemy as little time as possible to prepare for defence. However, before our boats could reach the shore, the people in the fort had got ready some of their cannon, and pointed them towards the landing-place. The first shot passed very near one of our boats, and whistling over the heads of the crew, made them redouble their efforts, and by the time the second gun was fired our men landed, and were conducted by one of the Spanish pilots to the entrance of a narrow street, not far distant from the beach, where they were sheltered from the enemy's fire. They now marched to the parade, being a large square at the end of this street, the fort on one side, the governor's house on the other. Upon entering the parade, our people received a volley from the merchants who owned the treasure then in the town, and, with a few more, had placed themselves in a gallery running round the governor's house; yet, upon the first fire of our men, they quitted that post, and left us in possession of the parade. Upon this, Mr. Brett divided his men into two parties, one of which he ordered to surround the governor's house, whilst he, with the other marched to the fort, with intent to force it; where, contrary to his expectation, he found the enemy had abandoned it, and escaped over the walls; so that the whole place was subdued in a quarter of an hour, with the loss of one man killed, and two wounded, one of the latter was the pilot of the *Teresa*, who received a slight wound by

a ball grazing on his wrist; the other, the honourable Mr. Kepple, son of the earl of Albermarle, the peak of whose cap was taken off, close to his temple, by a ball, which did him no other injury.

Now Mr. Brett set a guard round the governor's house, and another at the fort, and placing centinels at all the avenues of the town, to prevent any surprise, he went to seize on the custom-house, and to search for the inhabitants that remained in the town; but he found the greatest part of them had fled with such precipitation, that they did not stay to put on their clothes: nor was the governor the last who in this manner endeavoured to secure himself, for he fled sometimes half naked, leaving his wife, a young lady of about seventeen years old, to whom he had been married but four days, behind him; who was afterwards carried off in her shift by a couple of centinels, just before our people arrived at the house. The few inhabitants that remained were all put in a church, under a guard, except some able negroes, who were employed to assist our people in carrying the treasure from the custom-house and other places to the fort. While Mr. Brett's people were busied in getting off the treasure, the sailors could not be prevented from pillaging the houses; where they found the clothes that the Spaniards in their flight had left behind, which were most of them laced or embroidered, according to the fashion of the country; our people seized these glittering garments and put them over their dirty jackets, not sparing the tie-wig and laced hat: but those who came too late for mens clothes, were obliged to be contented with womens gowns and petticoats, which, provided they were made fine with lace, they put over their own greasy dress; so that when a party of them first came to Mr. Brett, thus disguised, he could not instantly be satisfied they were his own people.

After the boats were gone off, the Centurion lay by till one o'clock in the morning, then made an easy sail, and about seven began to open the bay: at 11 the Tryal's boat came on board us, laden with dollars  
and

and church-plate. About two in the afternoon we anchored about a mile and half from the town, to have a more immediate intercourse with those on shore. We found that Mr. Brett had hitherto gone on, in gathering up and removing the treasure without molestation; but that the enemy had now rendezvoused from all parts adjacent on the top of a hill at the back of the town, where we saw among their numbers 200 horse, seemingly well armed and mounted, and, as we thought, regularly trained, having drums, trumpets, and standards. They paraded with great ostentation, and used every art to intimidate us: but well knowing this body of horse durst not venture in streets and among houses, had their numbers been three times as large, we, went on coolly, as long as the day-light lasted, in sending off the treasure, and employing the boats to carry on board the hogs, fowls, &c. which we found here in abundance. However, to prevent any surprize, at night the commodore sent on shore a reinforcement, who were posted in all the passages leading to the parade.

As we found in the place several store-houses full of valuable effects, which were to us useless, and such as we could not find room for on board; Mr. Anson sent several messages to the governor by some of the inhabitants, who were made prisoners, offering to enter into a treaty for the ransom of the town and goods; but the governor rejected all these overtures, and did not return the least answer to them. On the second day of our being in possession of the town, several negroes slaves deserted from the hill, and entered into our service; by whom, and some other prisoners we took in the town, who had strayed from the hill, we were assured, that the Spaniards there were increased to a formidable number, had resolved to storm the town and fort the next night, and, that one Gordon, a Scotch papist, who had lately been captain of a ship in those seas, was to have the command of this enterprize. However, we prosecuted our work without the least hurry till evening. On the third morning, being November

15, the boats were employed in carrying off the most valuable effects in the town; and the commodore intending to sail in the afternoon, he, about ten o'clock, pursuant to his promise, set all the prisoners ashore, giving orders to the lieutenant to secure them in one of the churches, which stood at a distance from the town, till the men were ready to be embarked. At the same time Mr. Brett was ordered to fire the town, the two churches excepted, then to quit the place, and return on board. The lieutenant immediately set his men to work; who placed pitch, tar, and other combustibles into the houses at different parts of the town. These preparations being made, he nailed up the cannon in the fort: then setting fire to the houses, which were most to the windward, he got all his men together, and marched to the beach, where the boats waited to carry them off. The Spaniards on the hill perceiving his hasty departure, sent a small squadron of horse, consisting of about 60, picked out, as we supposed, for this service, who marched forward with seeming resolution; but notwithstanding all their ostentation, Mr. Brett had no sooner ordered his men to face about, than the enemy halted, and never dared to advance a step further.

When our people arrived at their boats they missed one of their number, and staid a considerable time for him; but when the last man was actually embarked, they heard him calling to take him in. The lieutenant immediately ordered one of the boats to his relief, who found him up to the chin in water. The fellow had taken too large a dose of brandy in the morning, which threw him into so sound a sleep, that he did not awake till the fire scorched his face, and, strangely amazed, on first opening his eyes, to see the fire blazing about his ears, and the Spaniards and Indians not far from him, he ran thro' the thickest of the smoke to escape them, and never stopped till he got up to the chin in water, for he could not swim, before he durst look back upon the enemy. I must observe in this place, to the honour of our people, that tho' here  
were

were vast quantities of wine and spirituous liquors; yet this very man was the only one who thus far neglected his duty by getting drunk, which must doubtless be imputed to the dilligence of the officers.

By the time our people had got this man out of the water, and were coming off to the squadron, it was sufficiently apparent, that no efforts of the Spaniards could possibly extinguish the flames; and now our detachment being all arrived safe again on board, the commodore proposed to leave the place the same evening. He having found, on his first entrance, in the bay, six vessels at anchor, one of which, as we had been told, was a prime sailer, we resolved to take it with us. The others were two snows, a bark, and, two row-gallies of 36 oars each, for which having no occasion, the commodore ordered the masts of all five to be cut away, on our first arrival, and on our leaving the place, they were towed out of the harbour, scuttled and sunk. The command of the *Solidad*, which we took, was given to Mr. Hughs, and a crew of ten men put on board her. About midnight we weighed, being at present increased to six sail; the *Centurion*, the *Trial's* prize, the *Carmelo*, the *Teresa*, the *Carmin*, and the *Solidad*.

It may not perhaps be improper in this place to give a brief account of the booty we got here. The Spaniards represented their loss to the court of Madrid, as we were afterwards assured, at a million and half of dollars: and if we consider that a great part of the goods burnt, were broad-cloaths, silks, cambricks, velvets, &c. we are of opinion, their valuation is moderate enough. Our acquisition, tho' inconsiderable, in comparison of what we destroyed, was yet not despicable; for the wrought plate, dollars, and other coin, which fell into our hands, amounted to 30,000*l.* sterl. besides rings, bracelets, and jewels, whose value we could not determine; over and above all this, the plunder was the best booty the captors met with upon this coast. Amongst our prisoners there were some of distinction, especially a youth of about 17 years old, son of the pre-  
sident

fident of the council of Chili, who at first, lamenting his captivity in a moving manner, being fully persuaded he had taken his last farewell of his parents, brothers and sisters. Mr. Anson used his utmost endeavours to dispel these terrors, always taking care that as many of the principal people should dine with him, by turns, as he had room for; so that at length they grew very chearful and easy under their misfortunes. The youth, who was near two months with us, had taken such an affection to Mr. Anson, that it is doubtful with me, whether he would not have preferred a voyage with him to England, to the being set on shore at Payta. This conduct of the commodore to his prisoners, induced them to think favourably of the English nation. His behaviour to the three women, before mentioned, seemed so different from what might be expected from an enemy, and a heretick, that tho' the Spaniards on board had experienced his benevolence, they were surpris'd at this new instance of it; and the more so as all this was done too, without ever seeing them, notwithstanding the two daughters were both handsome, and the youngest a celebrated beauty; nay, the women were so sensible of the obligations they owed him, that they absolutely refused to go ashore at Payta, till they had been permitted to wait on him, to return him thanks in person. I shall only here add, that the commodore's steady attachment to these humane principles has acquired him a distinguished reputation amongst the Creolian Spaniards, which is not confined only to the South Seas, but extended to all the Spanish settlements in America, insomuch that his name is frequently to be met with in the mouths of most of the Spanish inhabitants of that prodigious empire.

November 16 we stood to the west, and in the morning the commodore gave orders that the whole Squadron should spread themselves to look out for the Gloucester; so we drew near the place where she was ordered to cruise; but the whole day passed without seeing her. Now great animosities arose among our people concerning



cerning the plunder gotten at Payta, which those who had acted on shore reserved to themselves, while those that remained on board looked upon it as an unjust proceeding, urging, that they would have preferred acting ashore to staying aboard, as their labour was thereby doubled. The commodore therefore thought it necessary to put a stop to this ferment in the beginning. Accordingly the morning after we left Payta, he ordered all hands on quarter deck; where, after having addressed himself to the contending parties, he ordered all the plunder to be brought upon deck, and to be impartially distributed among the whole crew. To prevent those who had been in possession from murmuring at this diminution of their shares, the commodore added, that, as an encouragement to others who might hereafter be employed in the like service, he would give his entire share among those who attacked the place. Thus ended this troublesome affair. That night Mr. Anson ordered the squadron to bring to, and the next morning we saw a sail, to which we gave chase; and soon discovered her to be the Gloucester, who joined us about an hour after. He told us, that in all this time he had taken only two prizes; one a small snow, her cargo consisting chiefly of wine, brandy, and olives in jars, with about 7000 pounds in specie; and the other a large boat, or launch, which the Gloucester's boat came up with near the shore. The captors, notwithstanding they pleaded poverty, found them at dinner upon a pigeon-pye, served up in silver dishes. The officer who commanded the barge having opened several jars, and finding nothing but cotton in them, was induced hereby to believe they had told him the truth; but when the cargo came into the Gloucester, they found amongst the cotton, in every jar, a considerable quantity of double-doublons, the whole amounting to near 12,000 l. The Gloucester's people told us also, that they saw two or three other ships, which escaped them, and they had reason to believe that one of them was of immense value.

Being

Being now joined by the Gloucester, it was resolved to steer east, either to St. Lucas, California, or Cape Corientes, on the coast of Mexico; and in our way to touch on the neighbourhood of Panama, in order to gain some correspondence with admiral Vernon's fleet over land; which we knew, on our departure from England, was employed in an expedition against some of the Spanish settlements: and Mr. Anson taking it for granted that the admiral had succeeded, and that Porto Bello was then garrisoned by British troops, hoped, on his arrival at the Isthmus, to procure an intercourse with our countrymen on the opposite side, either by the assistance of the Indians or Spaniards; and flattering himself, that by this means he might procure a reinforcement, and that by settling a prudent plan of operations with our commanders in the West Indies, he might be able to have taken Panama, which would have secured to the British nation the possession of that Isthmus, whereby we should in effect be masters of the treasures of Peru, and should have had in our hands an equivalent for any demands which we might have been induced to make on either of the branches of the house of Bourbon. Such were our projects at this time; but on examining our papers we found on board the Carmelo, soon after, that the expedition against Carthagena, had failed; we then gave over all hopes of being reinforced; he, the commodore, finding that there was no probability of success in pursuing this enterprize, gave over all thoughts of it, and determined to steer for California, or to the adjacent coast of Mexico, there to cruise for the Manilla galleon, which we knew was now at sea, and bound to the port of Acapulco; for we were now but in the middle of November, and did not imagine our passage thither would cost us above a month. One Obstacle only remained, which was, to recruit our water. After some deliberation on this subject, we at last resolved for the island of Quibo, situated at the mouth of the bay of Panama, by which course we were in hopes that some of the enemies ships bound to and from Panama might fall into our hands.

hands. On the 19th we discovered cape Blanco, where we found that our last prize, the *Solidad*, did by no means answer the character given her of being a prime sailer; she, and the *Santa Teresa* delaying us considerably; for which reason the commodore ordered them to be cleared and instantly burnt; then giving proper instructions to the *Gloucester* and the rest of the prizes we proceeded for Quibo. The boats were now daily employed in distributing provisions on board our prizes for six months; and, that the *Centurion* might be better enabled to give the *Manilla* ship a warm reception, (as we were told, one of them was of an immense size) the carpenters were ordered to fix eight stocks in the main and fore-tops for mounting of swivel guns.

December 3, we had a view of the island Quibo, and at seven in the evening anchored in 33 fathom, muddy ground. Here we watered our ships, and not only procured a sufficient stock of turtle for the time we staid on the island, but carried off a number of them, which proved very serviceable in lengthening out our provision. On the 9th, we put to sea, and continuing southward to look out for the *Gloucester*, we the next day, at five in the afternoon, took a small bark from Panama, called the *Jesu Nazareno*; she had nothing on board, but some oakum, a ton of salt, and about forty pounds in small silver Money. On the 12th, the *Gloucester*, for whom we had been in pain several days, on account of her separation, joined us again, she having sprung her fore-top-mast, which disabled her from working to windward. The same day we cleared and sunk the *Jesu Nazareno*; and the commodore delivered fresh instructions to the captains of our small squadron, appointing the rendezvouses they were to make, in case of a separation. At first they were directed to get to the northward of the harbour of Acapulco, with all possible dispatch, there to fall in with the land between 18 and 19 deg. latitude, from thence to beat along the coast to cape Corientes, and there to continue cruising till the 14th of February, when they were to depart to the middle of the *Tres Marias*, and if they did

M m

not

not meet the commodore there, to recruit their wood and water, and proceed for the island of Macao in China. These orders given, we soon expected to fall in with the regular trade wind ; but were baffled in this design for near a month, by tempestuous weather, heavy rains, and dead calms ; so that we did not see the island of Cocos before the 25th.

January 9, 1742, a fresh gale sprung up from the north east, in which we took the Carmelo in tow, as the Gloucester did the Carmin ; making all the sail we could. When we were got into the trade wind, we found no alteration till the 17th ; then being advanced into 12 deg. 50 min. latitude, the wind shifted to the westward of the north ; and on the 26th, being advanced to the north of Acapulco, we tacked and stood to the east, hoping to discover land. This night, about ten, we discovered a light on the larboard bow, at which time the Tryal's prize, about a mile-a-head of us, made a signal for seeing a sail. As we did not doubt but this was the Manilla galeon, we immediately cast off the Carmelo, and pressed forward, making a signal for the Gloucester to do the same ; but in the morning we were strangely disappointed, by finding that the light, which had occasioned all this bustle, was only a fire on the shore. After this mortifying delusion, we found ourselves about nine leagues off land. It being now near the end of January, we were in great doubt, whether the Manilla ship was arrived or not ; and on examining our prisoners about it, they told us she had been known to come in after the middle of February ; adding, that the fire we saw was a proof of her being at sea. The commodore therefore resolved to send a boat, under cover of the night, into the harbour of Acapulco, to see if the Manilla ship was there, which was executed on the 9th of February. The barge, sent on this errand, did not return till the 11th, when the officers told Mr. Anson, that there was nothing like a harbour in the place where the Spanish pilots had asserted Acapulco to lie ; and that they had coasted along shore 32 leagues, and, at the  
end

end of their run, could just see two paps, at a great distance, which they concluded to be those in the neighbourhood of Acapulco. On this intelligence, we made all the sail possible to the eastward, and, on the 12th, the barge was again dispatched for the same purpose. We waited six days, without any news of her; but on the 19th of this month, she returned, and informed the commodore, that she had discovered the harbour; thus lying upon their oars, in suspense what to do, and being ignorant where they were, they saw a small light upon the surface of the water, and found it to be a fishing canoe, with three negroes in it, who informed us, that the Acapulco ship arrived there on the 9th of February, having delivered her cargo; and that the Viceroy had, by proclamation, fixed her departure for the third of March N. S. This news was joyfully received, as the species for which she had sold her cargo would be to us of greater value than the cargo itself. Thus were we a second time in eager expectation of soon getting possession of the celebrated galleon. The commodore therefore now resolved to continue the greatest part of the intermediate time in his present station, where there was little danger of his being seen from the shore.

During this interval, we were employed in putting our ship into the most advantageous trim, and in regulating the orders, signals, &c. when we should arrive off Acapulco. The distribution of our squadron, on this occasion, both for intercepting the galleon, and preventing a discovery, was so very judicious, that it well merits to be distinctly described. The Centurion brought the paps over the harbour to bear N. N. E. at 15 leagues distance. To the westward of the Centurion was stationed the Carmelo, and to the eastward the Tryal's prize, the Gloucester and the Carmin. These were all ranged in a circular line, each ship three leagues distant from the next; so that the two extremes were twelve leagues asunder. To render this disposition still more complete, the two cutters belonging to the Centurion were both manned and sent in shore,

and ordered to lie all day four leagues distant from the entrance of the port, but in the night to stand nearer in.

Being thus prepared for the reception of the galleon, we waited, with the utmost impatience, for the third of March; but, both this day, and the succeeding night, passed over, without any tidings of her. March 15, the cutters were again dispatched to their old station, and our hopes were once more indulged with as pleasing prepossessions as before; but in a week's time our eagerness was much abated, for now we began to be persuaded that the enemy had, by some means, discovered us, and had therefore laid an embargo on her till the next year. This persuasion was too well founded, as we were afterwards informed. Our barge, when sent on the discovery, of the port of Acapulco, was seen from the shore, and no embarkations but canoes ever frequenting that coast, was a sufficient sign of our squadron's being in that neighbourhood. Nevertheless, as the cutters did not change their stations till the twenty-third, the commodore thought it prudent to continue cruising on his present station till that time, or till the convenient season for his future passage to China would give him leave. On the 24th, in the morning, our cutters returned to the leeward of the squadron, when we bore down to them, and took them up, who informed us, they had seen nothing of the galleon.

Now, all the ships being joined, the commodore made a signal to speak with their captain, to enquire of the fresh water remaining on board the squadron. It was found so very slender, that we were under a necessity of leaving our station for a supply, and it was agreed that Seguataneio, or Chequetan, were the properest places for this purpose. Accordingly we ply'd to the westward, and, on the 5th of April, were about seven miles to the west of the rocks of Seguataneio, when we sent out our boats to sound the harbour and its entrance, who reported the place to be free from danger; so that we stood in for it on the 7th; and came

came to an anchor, in eleven fathom, the same evening, with the Gloucester. The Carmelo and the Carmin having fallen to the leeward, the Tryal's prize was ordered to join them, and to bring them up. This is called the harbour of Chequetan, and lies in 17 deg. 36 min. north latitude, about thirty leagues to the west of Acapulco, which is easy to be discovered by the following tokens. There is a beach of sand that extends 18 leagues from the harbour of Acapulco to the west, against which the sea breaks, with such violence, that it would be impossible for our boats to land on any part of it: and yet the ground is so clean, that, during the fair weather, ships may anchor with great safety, a mile or two from the shore. The land adjacent to this beach is, for the most part, low, full of villages, planted with trees, and, on the tops of some eminencies, there are several look-out-towers. The cultivated part is bounded by a chain of mountains, which stretch to a great length on both sides of Acapulco. It is very remarkable, that in this whole extent, which seems the most populous, and best planted district of the whole coast, there should be neither boat nor canoe, or other embarkations, for fishing, coasting, or pleasure; which, as we supposed, the government, to avoid smuggling, prohibited. The beach, here described, is the surest guide to those who are desirous to find the harbour of Chequetan. For five miles to the west of this, off the extremity of the beach, there appears a hummock, not unlike the hill of Petaplan, but smaller; to the west of which is a white rock, that cannot easily be passed by unobserved. The fore-mentioned hill may be at first mistaken for an island, tho', in reality, it is a peninsula, joined to the continent, by a narrow istmus, covered over with shrubs and small trees.

The bay of Seguataneio extends from this hill a great way to the west, and opposite to the entrance of it there are rocks which appear white, from the excrements of boobies and tropical birds. Four of these rocks are high and large, amongst some smaller, and are called

the white Friars. These rocks bear west by north from Petaplan; and about seven miles to west lies the harbour of Chequetan, which is still more remarkably distinguished by a large and single rock, rising out of the sea, a mile and half distant from the entrance, and bears south  $\frac{1}{2}$  west from the middle of it. To these directions, we may add, that the coast is by no means to be dreaded from the middle of October to the beginning of May; tho' in the other part of the year, here are violent tornadoes, heavy rains, and hard gales, from all points of the compass. The entrance is about half a mile broad; but the passage very safe on either side the rock that lies off the mouth of it; tho' we both in going out and coming in, left it to the eastward. The watering-place has the appearance of a large standing lake, without any visible out-let into the sea; from which it is separated by the strand. Its origin is a spring, and the nearer we advanced to the head of it, the softer was the water.

Sometime after our arrival at Chequetan, lieutenant Brett was sent with two of our boats to examine the coasts to the east, and particularly to observe the bay and watering-place of Petaplan. As he was going ashore, he saw three small squadrons of horse advance to the place where he proposed to land. On this sight, he instantly stood over the bay towards them, tho' he had but 16 men. They fired several distant shot, as he drew near; but at last the boat arriving within a reasonable distance of the most advanced squadron, Mr. Brett and his people fired at them; upon which this resolute cavalry instantly ran with great precipitation. In this flight one of their horses fell down and threw his rider; whether he was wounded or not he could not tell; for both man and horse soon got up and followed the rest into the wood. Hereupon, seeing that he could not engage the people of the country to furnish him with the necessaries he wanted; we were obliged to content ourselves with such as we could procure without their assistance. In this harbour we caught fish of several kinds, with sea-eggs, and lobsters;



lobsters; and we here, but in no other place, met with that wonderful fish called the torpedo; which is a flat fish like a thornback. It is of a very singular nature; and productive of strange effects on the human body; for whoever handles it, or even sets his foot on it, is seized with a numbness all over. The same effect will also be produced by touching the fish with any thing held in your hand. I myself, says our author, had a considerable numbness conveyed to my right hand, thro' a walking cane, which I rested upon the body of the fish for some time; nor did it go off on a sudden, but gradually; so that I had some sensation of it the next day; yet this influence ceases as soon as the fish is dead.

Towards the latter end of April we finished wooding and watering, had also cleared the three prizes, and completed all we proposed to do in the harbour of Chequetan; so that on the 27th, the Tryal's prize, the Carmin, and the Carmelo were burnt. After this, a canoe was left fixed to a grapnel in the harbour, with a bottle in it, well corked, inclosing a letter to Mr. Hughes, who commanded the cutter that had been ordered to cruise before the port of Acapulco, when we left that station; which letter directed him to go back immediately to his former station, where he would find Mr. Anson. In the mean time we got clear of the harbour of Chequetan, and stood to the eastward in search of her. While we were standing in for the port of Acapulco, the centinel at the mast-head called out, that he saw a boat to the south east, at a considerable distance, which, to our unspeakable joy, proved the cutter; tho' when they drew nearer, the meagre looks of the crew, the length of their beards, and the hollow tone of their voices, convinced us, they had suffered extremely; having kept the sea above six weeks. They were obliged to be helped on board, and were instantly put to bed, and supplied with provisions from the commodore's table, till they recovered. They had been driven above 80 leagues to the east, without being able to land, and had not a heavy rain providentially fell, of which, by spreading their sails horizontally,

horizontally, and putting bullets into the centers of them, to make them bag, they caught enough to fill the casks, or they must inevitably have perished.

Having now recovered our cutter, the sole object of our coming before Acapulco a second time, the commodore determined to leave the coast immediately. However, he resolved not to deprive the prisoners of their liberty; and therefore, in the first place he ordered two launches to be well fitted, with masts, sails, oars, and a stock of water to be put into them, with provisions for fourteen days. Into these he put 57 persons, most of them Spaniards, who all soon after arrived safe at Acapulco, extolling the humanity with which they had been treated. No sooner had we parted with our prisoners, than we and the Gloucester sailed to the south west, and on the 6th of May lost sight of the mountains of Mexico; but did not get into the true trade wind till seven weeks afterwards; during this time, our ships suffered greatly in their masts; and the scurvy began again to make havock amongst our people. The Gloucester, by the loss of her main-mast, failed so very heavily, that we were frequently obliged to lie-to for her, which, we conceive, occasioned the loss of a month in our passage to the Ladrões.

July 26, being, as we judged, about 300 leagues from the Ladrões, we met with a westerly wind, which did not come about to the east in four days. In one of these days, the wind flatted to a calm; and the ships rolled so deep, that the Gloucester's fore-cap splitting, her fore-top-mast came by the board, broke her fore-yard directly in the slings, and we were forced to take her in tow. Scarce had our people finished their business in the Gloucester, before a violent storm arose, which obliged us to lie-to; now the Centurion sprung a leak, and all our people, officers included, were employed at the pumps. The next day we saw the Gloucester's fore-top-mast once more by the board, and soon after her main-top-mast shared the same fate; at the same time the number of sick in both ships was greatly increased. When the storm abated, the Gloucester  
came

came under our stern, and captain Mitchell informed the commodore, that, besides the loss of his masts, the ship had then seven feet water in her hold, altho' both officers and men had kept the pumps continually going the last 24 hours; and that he required the most speedy and vigorous assistance. The only means that could be prosecuted in the present emergency, (our people being all in a feeble state) both for her security, and our own; were, first to get out of her all we could, take the hands on board the *Centurion*, and then destroy her; accordingly, we sent captain Mitchell what hands we could spare, to assist in clearing his ship, whilst she kept above water.

The bringing her people on board, and removing such effects as could most easily be come at, employed all our hands for two days. The commodore had a great desire to save her anchors and cables; but she rolled so much, and the men were so excessively fatigued, that he found it impracticable; so that it was with the utmost difficulty the prize-money, which the *Gloucester* had taken in the South Seas, was secured on board the *Centurion*. However, the prize-goods on board her, amounting to 7000*l.* in value, which were principally the *Centurion's* property, were entirely lost; nor could any more provisions be got out of her than five casks of flour; three of which were spoiled by the salt water.

August 15, in the evening, it was resolved she should be burnt, as we knew not how near we were to the island of Guam; which we well considered was in the hands of our enemies, to whom the wreck of such a ship would prove a considerable acquisition. We were about four leagues distant when she blew up, and the report she made on this occasion was but small.

The late storm, which had proved so fatal to the *Gloucester*, had driven us to the northward of our intended course, and the current setting the same way, we were now in 17 deg. north latitude, instead of 13 deg. which was the parallel we intended to keep. We were ignorant how near we might be to the Meridian

dian of the Ladrone, and apprehended, we might be driven to the leeward of them by currents, without discovering them. On this supposition, we stood for the eastern parts of Asia; but on the 23d, at break of day, we saw two islands to the west, and stood in for the nearest, the winds being variable all that day. Next morning we were in sight of a third island, called Paxaros, which is very small, and the land low. At noon, being not four miles from that which lay nearest, called Anatacan, the boat was sent off to discover the anchoring, and the produce of the place. In the evening the boat returned, and informed us, there was no anchoring, which occasioned a general melancholy. What secured the few that remained alive from perishing, was, the accidental meeting with some of the Ladrone-islands.

August 26, in the morning, we lost sight of Anatacan, and the next morning discovered three islands to the east, about 14 leagues distant. These, as we afterwards learnt, were Saypan, Tinian, and Aquigan. We immediately made for Tinian, and the next morning kept on our course till about ten o'clock, when we saw a proe under sail; hereupon, we ordered all hands that were capable of bearing arms upon deck; then loaded our quarter-deck guns with grape-shot, and hoisted Spanish colours. Thus prepared, we stood towards the land, and in the afternoon sent the cutter in shore, to find out a proper birth for the ship, and soon after saw a proe put off to meet her, whose people, we found, were fully persuaded that ours was the Manilla ship. As we saw the cutter returning with the proe in row, we sent the pinnace to bring the prisoners on board. She came back with a Spaniard and four Indians. The former being examined as to the state and produce of Tinian, his account far surpassed our most sanguine hopes. He informed us, that tho' it was uninhabited, yet it wanted but few of the accommodations that were to be found in the best cultivated countries; that in particular, it abounded with fresh water, cattle, and hogs; with poultry running wild, excellent in their kind;

kind; oranges, limes, lemons, and cocoa-nuts, and a peculiar fruit, which served instead of bread; he told us also, from the quantity of provisions produced here, the Spaniards used it as a store, for supplying the garrison at Guam, in which he was a serjeant, sent thither with 22 Indians to jerk beef, and load it for that port, in a bark of 15 tons, which rode at anchor near the shore.

We therefore immediately dispatched the pinnace armed, to secure the bark, and about eight in the evening let go our anchor in twenty-two fathom; and were full five hours in furling the sails, all the hands we could muster amounting to no more than 71, tho' the united crews of the *Centurion*, the *Gloucester*, and the *Tryal*, when we left England, consisted of 1000 men. Next morning a party was sent on shore, who landed without difficulty. The Indians, on our seizure of their bark, fled into the woody parts of the island, saving us the trouble of erecting tents; for we found many huts, which they inhabited, one of them twenty yards long, and fifteen broad; this we cleared of some bales of jerked beef, and made it an hospital for our sick; many of whom we were obliged to carry into it on our shoulders; in this truly humane employment, the commodore himself, and all his officers, were engaged. It is incredible, how soon these poor wretches began to feel the salutary influence of the land; for tho' we buried 21 men, on this and the preceding day, we did not lose above ten more during the whole two months we staid here; therefore, we shall, in this place, throw together the most interesting particulars which came to our knowledge, as to the situation, soil, and produce of the island of *Tinian*, for the service of future circumnavigators.

It lies in 15 deg. 8 min. north latitude, is about 12 miles in length, and about six in breadth; its soil is a sandy loam, dry, and healthy, rising in a gentle slope, from the beach to the middle of the island. The whole diversified with woods and lawns. In the woods are tall spreading trees, free from bushes and underwood;  
no

no shrubs nor weeds were to be seen, but only timber and fruit trees. The lawns are usually of a considerable breadth; their turf composed of a fine trefoil, intermixed with a variety of natural flowers. Nor is it uncommon to see herds of cattle, the lords of this happy soil! feeding by thousands together in a large meadow. They are all milk white, excepting their ears, which are, in common, brown or black. We computed the cattle at 10,000 head; we had no difficulty in getting near them, for they were not at all shy. We at first shot them, but, to save ammunition, we found afterwards that our men could run them down with ease. Their flesh is extremely well tasted. The fowls also were exceeding good, and, not being able to fly above 100 yards at a flight, were easily run down.

We found here also abundance of wild hogs, which were excellent food; but so fierce, that we were obliged to shoot them, or hunt them down with dogs, that we found upon the place on landing, and which belonged to the people who were detached from the garrison of Guam. In the woods were unconceivable quantities of cocoa-nuts, with cabbages growing on the same tree; there were besides, guavos, limes, sweet and sour oranges, and a fruit peculiar to this country, called by the Indians Rhymay, but, by us, bread-fruit, as we made use of it for such, during the time we staid. It grows upon a tall tree, whose top divides into large spreading branches; its leaves are of a deep green, and notched at the edges, from 12 to 18 inches long. The fruit is found among these branches, rather elliptical than round, and covered with a rough rind, being about seven or eight inches long, and grows single. Here were also other vegetables, very good for the scurvy; such as water melons, dandelion, purslain, sorrel, mint, and scurvy-grass. In the center of the island were two large pieces of fresh water, which abounded with ducks, teal, curlew, and whistling-plover.

This island, it seems, has not been depopulated above 50 years. The Indians in our custody assured us, it

it contained 30,000 souls; about which time an epidemical distemper raged among the neighbouring islands, and carried off a vast number of people, particularly at Guam; in order to recruit them, the Spaniards brought all the inhabitants of Tinian thither, most of whom, in a few years, died of grief. As to the residence upon that island, the chief inconvenience attending it, is, the vast number of muskitos, and other kinds of flies, together with an insect called a tick, which, tho' principally found among the cattle, yet would often fix upon our limbs and bodies, and if not perceived in time would bury its head under the skin, and raise a painful inflammation. Here are also centipides, and scorpions; which we supposed were venomous, tho' we received no harm by them: but the most important exception, is, the inconvenience of the road, and the little security there is, at some seasons, for ships to anchor. The only proper place, for ships of burden, is, at the south west end of the island, where the peak of Saypan, is seen over the northern part of Tinian, bearing N. N. E.

Having now refitted our ship, as well as possible, till we had an opportunity of heaving her down, and all those who were so far relieved, since their arrival, as to be capable of doing duty, being sent on board; the commodore, who himself was ill of the scurvy, had a tent erected for him on shore, where he went for a few days to establish his health. As the crew was now reinforced by the recovered people, we began to send our casks ashore, the coopers being in a condition to work. We now also weighed our anchors, to examine our cables, and the commodore, for our farther security, ordered, that part of the cables next the anchors should be armed with the chains of the fire-grapnels; besides which, they were cackled 25 fathom from the anchors, with a good rounding of a 4  $\frac{1}{2}$  inch-hauler; and at the same time, being willing to guard against the dangers of this road, we lowered the main and top-sail quite down.

N a

Thus

Thus effectually prepared, as we presumed, we waited till the new-moon, which was on the 18th of September, when riding safe on that, and the next three following days, we flattered ourselves, (for I was on board, says our author) that our prudence had secured us from all accidents. But on the 22d the wind blew from the eastward, with such violence, that we despaired to ride out the storm, and should have been extremely glad, if the commodore, with the rest of our people, who were the major part of our hands, had been on board also; for, in our present situation, we were necessitated to ride the storm out till our cables parted; as the small bower did, at five in the afternoon, and the ship sprung to the best bower. Night coming on, the violence of the wind increased with inexpressible fury; and the tide ran with such rapidity as to prevail over it. Soon after the sea broke very surprisngly, and the long-boat, moored astern, was on a sudden canted so high, that it broke the transom of the commodore's gallery, and was stove to pieces; yet the poor boat-keeper, tho' very much bruised, was miraculously saved. About 8 o'clock the tide slackened; but the wind raged with greater violence, and the best bower cable, by which alone we rode, parted at 11. Our sheet anchor, which was the only one we had left, was immediately cut from the bow; but before it reached the bottom, we were forced from 22 into 35 fathom water; where, after veering away one whole cable and two thirds of another, we could not find ground with 60 fathom line. In this extremity, Mr. Saumarez, our first lieutenant, ordered several guns to be fired, and lights to be put out, as signals of distress. In a short time after, at one o'clock in the morning; a strong gulf, with rain and lightening, drove us out to sea in the night, which was excessively dark. What gave us the greatest uneasiness, was, our being obliged to leave behind us Mr. Anson, and many more of our officers, with the rest of our crew, who were in the whole 113 persons; all whom, both at sea and on ashore, were reduced



duced to the utmost despair; those on shore thinking they should never depart from the island; and we on board being unprepared to struggle with the raging winds and boisterous sea.

During these melancholy reflections, Mr. Anson projected a scheme for extricating himself and his men from their present uneasinesses, which he thought very practicable. This was, to hale the Spanish bark ashore which we took in the harbour; to saw her in two, lengthen her twelve feet, and enable her to carry them all to China. To render the probability of this enterprise more effectual, it fortunately happened, that the carpenters of both the Gloucester and the Tryal were on shore, with their chests and tools. The smith also was ashore, and had with him his forge, and several tools; but his bellows, had not been brought from on board, which, for some time, they were at a loss to supply. The chief thing wanting in the construction of the bellows was leather. They had plenty of cattle, and in rummaging the place, found some hides, and a barrel of lime, which the Indians, or Spaniards, had prepared for their own use. With this, they tanned a few hides, as well as they could; and the bellows, which had a gun-barrel for its pipe, had no inconvenience, but what arose from the nauseous smell, occasioned by the imperfection of the tanner's-work. While the smith was preparing the necessary iron-work, others were employed to fell timber, and saw it into planks. This being laborious work, the commodore wrought at it himself, for the encouragement of his men. In the mean time a dock was dug to receive the bark, and ways were laid from the sea to bring her up; a party was also ordered to kill and prepare provisions for the workmen. Their drink was the juice of the cocoa nut, which, tho' extremely pleasant, is by no means intoxicating; so that the Business went on very successfully.

The iron-work was now in great forwardness; and timber, and planks, sufficient for the purpose, were

N n 2

pre-

prepared; so that on the 6th of October, 14 days after the departure of the Centurion, they haled the bark on shore, and on the two following days she was sawn a sunder, but not thorough, so as to cut her planks: her two ports being put to a proper distance, they went on with no small dispatch, and fixed upon the 5th of November for putting her to sea; but, on the 11th of October, one of the Gloucester's men, being upon a hill in the middle of the island, saw the Centurion, and ran down, with the utmost speed, to the landing place, hallooing to one of his comrades, *the ship! the ship!* Mr. Gordon, lieutenant of the marines, hearing this, hastened to the place where the commodore was at work, and told him the unexpected news. He instantly threw down his axe, and came to the sea side, highly delighted. By five in the evening, the ship was visible to them all. Then, a boat being sent off with 18 men, to reinforce her, and provisions for the refreshment of the crew; she, the next day, cast anchor in the road, where the commodore immediately came on board, and was received with acclamations of joy: for during our 19 days absence from Tinian, and the fears, and dangers, we underwent, it may be easily conceived, that an harbour, refreshments, the joining of our commander and shipmates, were not, to us, less pleasing, than to them was our return.

After the foregoing relation given of the fatiguing employments, and distresses, of those on shore, during the interval of 19 days; it should seem necessary to give the reader a short account of the dangers to which we on board were exposed.

The turbulent weather, which forced us from Tinian, held three days, and then we swayed up our fore-yard, and began to heave up the main-yard; but the jeers broke and killed one of our men, whose name was John Horseman; which hindered our present proceeding. The 26th was a day of bodily labour, from which no officer of what rank soever was excepted.

excepted. The business was to heave up the sheet anchor, which hitherto dragged at our bows with two cables an end; it being the only anchor we had left: night approaching, we brought it in sight; the next morning hung it at our bow, and the same day got up our main-yard. Now, for the first time, we stood for the island of Tinian, not without hopes of joining the commodore in a few days; but were driven out at least 44 leagues to the west. However we were soon delivered from our uncertainty, by having sight of the island Guam. Being now satisfied as to our course; on the 11th of October, 19 days after, we arrived in the offing; and in the evening came to an anchor in the road.

When the commodore came on board, he resolved to stay here no longer, than he could compleat his water. On the 24th of October, a sudden gust of wind drove us out to sea a second time, when we had 70 men ashore, employed in filling the water-casks and procuring provisions, who had with them our two cutters; but they being too many to come off in these; we sent the 18 oared barge to assist them. The former two soon came off to us full; but 40 of the men, who were employed in killing cattle, were left behind, with the barge for their conveyance; yet, the ship was drove to such a distance, as it was not in their power to join us. However, after the five following days we had good weather, and returned again to Tinian; where we relieved those left behind from their fear of being deserted. Here we found the Spanish bark had undergone a new metamorphosis: for they on shore, considering their small number, resolved to join her together again, and had made, in this scheme, some progress.

On our coming to the island of Tinian a second time, we were indefatigable in compleating our water. The well for this purpose, being dug in a sandy soil, gave way by the weight of the full casks rolling near it, and two of our men were suffocated; the name of one was John Cass, the other Robert Stephens. By the 10th of October we had got 50 ton on board; with a large quantity of oranges and other fruits.

This done, we set fire to the bark and proe, and got under sail, steering for the south end of the island of Formosa; and taking our leaves for the third time of the island of Tinian.

This range of isles, called the Ladrões, of which Tinian is one, were first discovered by Magellan; lying in 15 deg. 22 min. north latitude. They are reckoned 12 in number, and are said to have contained above 50,000 people; though now Guam alone is properly inhabited, being about thirty leagues in circumference; and contains, by the Spanish accounts, near 4000 inhabitants; of whom, 1000 live in the city of San Ignatio de Igana, where the governor resides. Besides this city, there are about 13 or 14 villages. The Manilla ship generally touches at Guam, for refreshments, in her passage from Acapulco to the Philippines. It is defended by two castles, one called, St. Angelo, near which the Manilla ship usually anchors; mounted with five 8 pounders: the other, called the castle of St. Lewis, lying north east from St. Angelo; but much of the same strength. In these two castles are three companies of Spanish soldiers; and these are all the force the governor has to depend on; for the Indians are all debarred the use of fire-arms and lances. Hence it appears, that the Spaniards, in the island of Guam, are but very few, compared with the Indians; who are a bold, strong, well-limbed people; nor are they any ways defective of understanding: for their flying proes are of an extraordinary invention, and if we consider their aptitude to the navigation of these islands, they well deserve a place in the mechanical productions of the most civilized nations.

We left Tinian the 21st of October, steering for Macao with our sheet anchor only, and were under some concern how to manage it on the coast of China; being there entire strangers. To remedy this grievance, we fixed two of our prize anchors in one stock, and placed between their shanks, two guns, four pounders, to serve as a best bower; and a third prize anchor, joined to our stream anchor, with guns between, made

us

us a small bower; so we furnished ourselves with two more anchors at our bows, one weighing 3900, and the other 2900 pounds. November 4, we got sight of the island of Formosa, after having passed that of Botel Tobago Xima: Now we steered west by south, in order to double its extremity, and kept a good look out for the rocks of Vele Rete, which we did not discover till two in the afternoon; they then bearing from us W. N. W. about a league distant. We immediately haled up south by west, and left them between us and land. The south end of Formosa, off which these rocks lie, is in 21 deg. 50 min. north latitude. From Formosa we steered W. N. W. to fall in with the coast of China, to the east of Pedro Blanco, as that rock is esteemed an excellent direction for ships bound to Macao. November 5, about midnight, we got sight of the main land of China, bearing north by west four leagues distant. We then brought the ship to, till morning; but before sun-rise, we were surprised to find ourselves among 5, if not 6000 fishing boats, most of them carrying five or six hands, and none less than three. As we ran to the west, we found them as abundant on every part of the coast; but we could not tempt any of them to come on board, or make them understand us.

On the 6th about two o'clock we perceived a boat ahead of us, which waved a red flag; and heard some one in it blow a horn. We immediately sent our cutter to know their intentions; when we soon found the boat was the commodore of the fishery, and that this signal was to call them ashore, whom they all instantly obeyed. The next morning we discovered Pedro Blanco. It is a rock of a small circumference, and of a moderate height, resembling a sugar-loaf, both in form and colour. We passed within less than two miles of it, and left it between us and the land, keeping our course to the west. On the 8th we were a breast of 15 or 16 rocky and barren islands, called Lema, still surrounded with fishing boats. We once more sent the cutter to procure a pilot amongst them; but

but could not prevail; however, one of the Chinese, directed us by signs to sail round the westernmost of the islands of Lema, and then hale up. We left Pedro Blanco on the starboard side, about half a mile distant; and then steered north by west for the channel, between the islands of Cabouce and Bamboo, which lie to the north of the Grand Ladrone, off Macao. On the 9th a Chinese pilot came on board the Centurion, and told us, in broken Portuguese, he would carry the ship to Macao for 30 dollars, which we immediately paid. By him we learnt, that we were not far distant from it; and that there were in the river of Canton eleven European ships, five of which were English. On the 12th in the evening we anchored, not far from the island of Canton, the largest of all the range; weighed again, at seven next morning, and came to an anchor at ten in Macao road at five fathom; the city bearing west by north, three leagues distant; the peak of Lanton east by north, the Grand Ladrone south by east, each about five leagues off.

The commodore no sooner came to an anchor here, than he dispatched a messenger to the Portuguese governor, requesting his excellency to inform him in what manner he should act, to avoid offending the Chinese. The difficulty related to the duty usually paid by ships in the river of Canton, according to their tonnage. For as men of war are exempted in every foreign harbour from all manner of port charges, the commodore thought it would be derogatory from the honour of his country to submit to any duty in China. In the evening the boat returned with two officers sent by the governor to inform the commodore, that if the Centurion ventured into the river of Canton, the duty would certainly be expected: but, if he pleased, he would send him a pilot, who should conduct him into another safe port, called the Typa, which was very commodious for careening the ship. The commodore agreed to this proposal; and in the morning we weighed anchor, under the direction of the Portuguese pilot. This harbour is formed by a number of islands, and  
about

about six miles from Macao. Here we saluted the castle of Macao with eleven guns, which were returned by the same number.

The following day, Mr. Anson paid the governor a visit, to solicit a supply of provisions, and such naval stores as were necessary to refit the ship. He assured the commodore, in a friendly manner, that he would privately assist him all he could; and freely owned, he dared not openly furnish us with any thing, unless we produced an order from the viceroy of Canton; since he himself neither received provisions for his garrison, nor any other necessaries, but by his permission. On this declaration, Mr. Anson resolved to go himself to Canton, to procure a licence from the viceroy, and, accordingly hired a Chinese boat for himself, and his attendants; but the moment he was ready to embark, a Chinese hoppo, or custom-house officer of Macao, refused to grant a permit to the boat. Mr. Anson and the governor intreated him to withdraw this injunction, but the officer continuing inflexible, the commodore told him, that if the permit was refused any longer than the next day, he would man and arm the *Centurion's* boat, asking the hoppo, at the same time, if he would dare to oppose them? by this threat the permit was granted, and Mr. Anson went to Canton. On his arrival, he consulted with the officers and super-cargoes of the English ships, how to procure an order from the viceroy, for the necessaries he wanted: but he had reason to think that their advice, however well intended, was not the most prudent; for these gentlemen never apply to the supreme magistrate himself; but transact all matters by the mediation of the principal Chinese merchants; and Mr. Anson pursued the same method on this occasion. The Chinese merchants readily undertook the management of this business, and promised to answer for its success; but after a month's delay, being very hard pressed, and measures taken for procuring a letter to be delivered to the viceroy; they threw off the mask, and owned, that they had neither made application to the viceroy, nor could

could they, as he was too great a man for them to approach; and, not contented with thus deceiving the commodore, they now used all their persuasion with the English at Canton, to prevent them from meddling in the affair; saying, it might in all probability embroil them with the government. These groundless insinuations had but too much influence!

Mr. Anson being now fully satisfied, that nothing was to be done by the interposition of the merchants, told them, that he would proceed to Batavia, if they would supply him with provisions sufficient for his passage. The merchants, on this, proposed to procure them; but said it must be done in a clandestine manner, and therefore put a quantity of bread, flour, &c. on board of the English ships, who were to stop at the mouth of the Typha, where the Centurion's boats might receive them. When this affair was settled, the commodore returned from Canton, and came on board the Centurion the 16th of December, seemingly, determined to proceed to Batavia to visit; but this was what he never intended.

On his coming aboard, he saw the main-mast was sprung in two places, and that the leak was considerably increased, Finding it therefore impossible for the ship to proceed to sea, in her present condition, he resolved at all events to have her hove down in this place; being now fully convinced, that his great caution not to injure the East India company's affairs, with the regard had to the advice of their officers, were the cause of all his perplexity; since had he carried his ship immediately into the river of Canton, and addressed himself to the Mandarins, instead of the merchants, all his requests would have been granted, and soon dispatched. Having now lost a month, by taking wrong measures, he resolved to lose as little time more as possible. Accordingly, on the 17th of December, he wrote a letter to the viceroy of Canton, acquainting him who he was, what business he had been upon, by the order of his Britannic Majesty, the condition of his ship, his want of provisions, &c. and therefore desired



desired his excellency to give orders for his being permitted to employ carpenters, with proper workmen, to refit his ship; also to furnish him with provisions and stores, that he might be enabled to pursue his voyage to Great Britain.

This letter was translated into the Chinese language, and the commodore himself delivered it to the chief officer of the Emperor's customs at Macao. In answer to which, on the 19th in the morning, a Mandarin of the first rank, who was governor of the city of Janfon, with two Mandarins of a lower class, and a considerable number of officers and servants, in eighteen half galleys, furnished with musick, and a great number of streamers, came to grapnel ahead of the Centurion; whence the Mandarin sent a message to the commodore, telling him, that he was ordered, by the viceroy, to examine the condition of the ship, desiring the boat might be sent to fetch him on board. The Centurion's boat immediately put off, and 100 of the most lightly of the crew, dressed in the regimentals of the marines, were all drawn up under arms on the main-deck to receive him. When he came on board, he was saluted by all the military music we had in the ship; then passing thro' the guard, he was met by the commodore on the quarter deck, who led him into the great cabin. Here he opened and explained his commission, adding, that he was ordered to inspect the articles mentioned in the commodore's letter; all which he put down in a paper, with his remarks thereon.

The Mandarin was a person endowed with more freedom and honesty, than is found in the generality of the Chinese. After he had inspected the ship very carefully, particularly the leak; which the Chinese carpenters represented to be full as dangerous as had been described, and that she could not go to sea till she was refitted; the Mandarin expressed himself satisfied with the account given in the commodore's letter. He then viewed each part of the ship; and seemed greatly surprised at the bigness of the lower deck guns, and the weight of the shot. Mr. Anson took this opportunity

portunity to let him know that he was able to have done himself justice, with regard to the behaviour of the custom-house officers at Macao; who, tho' he had always paid for provisions to their full satisfaction, forbid the people from bringing him any more; and he hoped that they, the Mandarins, who had been eye-witnesses of his distress, would now gain him from the government a permission to purchase what provisions he stood in need of; and which he was able to procure by force, notwithstanding the whole navigation of Canton, or any other port in China. The first Mandarin acquiesced in this reasoning, and promised the commodore to be his advocate at the council-board, which was to be held that night, when he returned home.

This weighty affair being in some measure regulated, Mr. Anson invited him and his two attendant Mandarins to dinner. One of the dishes was beef, which all the Chinese dislike, from a piece of Indian superstition; however the three Mandarins compleatly finished the white of four large fowls. They were indeed much at a loss how to use their knives and forks; so that one of the attendants cut their meat in small pieces. But how great soever their difficulty was in complying with the European manner of eating, they seemed to be no novices in drinking; for after emptying five bottles of frontinac, and a bottle of citron-water, they seemingly went off sober and unruffled.

But, notwithstanding the favourable disposition of the chief Madarin, governor of Janfon, on his leaving the commodore; several days were elapsed before any advice came from him; and Mr. Anson was privately informed, there were great debates in council upon this affair, partly, perhaps, owing to its being so unusual a case, and in part to the influence of the intrigues of the French at Canton: for they had a countryman residing on the spot, who spoke the language well, and was not unacquainted with the venality of the government. However, notwithstanding all these difficulties, it should seem, that the representation of the commodore to the Mandarins, of  
the

the ease with which he could right himself, if justice was denied him, had at last its effect: for on the 6th of January, 1743, the governor of Janfon, sent down the viceroy's warrant for the refitment of the Centurion, and for supplying her people with all they wanted. Now also, a number of Chinese smiths and carpenters came on board, to treat with Mr. Anson about the work to be done, which, they proposed to take by the great. They at first demanded 1000 l. for the whole, which the commodore thought unreasonable; and therefore endeavoured to persuade them to work by the day, but they would not come into this method: so it was at last agreed, that the carpenters should have 600 l. for their work, and the smiths should be paid for the iron-work by weight, after the rate of 3 l. per hundred for the small work, and 2 l. 6 s. for the large.

As soon as the price was regulated, Mr. Anson ordered the Centurion to be hove down, and the state of her bottom examined. For this purpose, the first lieutenant was dispatched to Canton, to hire two country vessels; one of them to heave down by; the other, to serve as a magazine for the powder and ammunition: it was the 26th before these vessels arrived, and the materials, which were to be purchased at Canton, came down very slowly, from the backwardness of the Chinese merchants: In this interval Mr. Anson had the mortification to discover that his fore-mast was broken asunder above the upper-deck partners, and was only held together by the fishes, which had been clapt upon it formerly. Now the ship being cleared, the carpenters were enabled to come at the leak, and took care to secure that effectually. It was found to be below the fifteen-foot mark, and occasioned by the bolts being bore away, and loose in the joining of the stern, where it was scarfed.

All things prepared, they hove out the first course of the Centurion's starboard side, and found her bottom sound and good: the next day, having compleated the new sheating of the first course, they righted her again

O o

continua

continuing this employment till the third of March, when the bottom was, to their great joy, compleated. As soon as she was righted, they took on board her powder and gunner's stores, then got in the guns as fast as possible.

In the beginning of April, they had new rigged the ship, stowed their provisions and water, and fitted her for sea: but before this time the Chinese grew uneasy, and about three days after, two Mandarin boats came on board from Macao, to press the commodore to leave the port, tho' there had been no pretence to suspect any affected delays. At this message therefore, Mr. Anson answered, he would not go till he thought proper. This rebuke immediately prohibited all provisions from being carried on board him; so that on the 6th of April, they weighed from Typa, and by the 15th she got into Macao road, compleating her water as she passed along; and her whole business being finished by the 19th, she stood to sea, they giving out at Macao, that she was bound to Batavia, and thence to England: but the commodore's design was of a different nature. For he supposed, that, instead of one ship from Acapulco to Manilla, there probably would be two this year, since he had prevented one of them from putting to sea the preceding season: he therefore resolved to cruise for these two ships off Espiritu Santo on the island of Samal; which is the first land they usually make at the Philippine islands; and as they generally arrive there in the month of June, he hoped to be at his station time enough to intercept them. It was incumbent on the commodore to keep this project extremely secret at Macao; but being now got clear of that coast, he summoned all his people on the quarter deck, and told them his resolution; adding, that though they were stout ships, and well manned, yet if his own people behaved with their usual courage, he was certain, he should prove too hard for them both; and that one of them at least could not fail of becoming his prize,

No sooner had the commodore done speaking, than the people expressed their approbation of the project, by three cheers, and determined to succeed or perish in the undertaking: their hopes also now began to revive again, and they persuaded themselves they should yet be repaid the price of all their fatigues: that they should certainly meet the galleons, and should as certainly take them. This confidence was spread thro' all the ship's company; insomuch that the commodore enquiring one day of his butcher, why he had lately seen no mutton on his table, and if all the Chinese sheep were killed? the fellow very seriously replied, that there were two left, indeed; but if his honour would give him leave, he proposed to keep them for the entertainment of the general of the galleons.

May 4, being in the latitude of the Bashee-islands, as laid down by Dampier, we kept a good look-out, and about seven in the evening, saw from the mast-head five small islands, which we judged to be them. Here we found an opportunity of correcting the position of the Bashee-islands, which have hitherto been laid down 25 leagues too far to the west. For by our observations, the middle-most of them lies in 21 deg. 4 min. north latitude, and bears from Botel Tobago Xima 20 leagues.

The 20th of May, at noon, they discovered Cape Espiritu Santo, which, about 4 o'clock, they brought to bear S. S. W. near 11 leagues distant. The Centurion's people were now waiting each hour, with the utmost impatience, for the happy crisis; and the commodore now began to make all necessary preparations for the reception of the enemy; hoisting out his long-boat, and lashing her along side, that the ship might be ready for engaging, if they fell in with the galleons during the night. June 20, at sun rise, they discovered a sail to the south east. The commodore instantly stood towards her, and, at half an hour after seven, the galleon fired a gun to the leeward, and took in her top-gallant sails, which was supposed to be a signal to her consort to bring her up, and therefore the Cen-  
O O 2
turion

turion fired a gun to leeward to amuse her. The commodore, notwithstanding, was a little surprised, to find her continuing all this time to bear down upon him. About one o'clock the galleon haled up her fore-sails, and brought to under her top sails, with her head to the north, having the standard of Spain flying at the top-gallant-mast-head. Mr. Anson at the same time prepared all things for an engagement. He picked out 30 of his best marksmen, and placed them in his tops, who fully answered his expectation. As he had not hands enough remaining to quarter a sufficient number to each gun, he therefore, on his lower tire, fixed only two men to each gun, to be solely employed in loading them; while the rest of the people were divided in different gangs, of ten or twelve each, to be continually moving about to fire the guns that were loaded. By this means, he kept a constant fire, without intermission.

The Centurion being thus prepared, and nearing the galleon apace, hoisted her broad pendant and colours. Mr. Anson, now within gun-shot of the enemies, whom he saw busied in throwing over-board their cattle and lumber, gave orders to fire upon them with the chase-guns, to disturb them at their work. The galleon returned their fire with two of their stern-chace guns. Soon after the Centurion came a-breast of the enemy, within pistol shot, keeping to the leeward of them. And now the engagement began in earnest. For the first half hour, Mr. Anson over-reached the galleon, and lay on her bow, where, by the wideness of her ports, he could traverse all his guns upon the galleon. Immediately, on the commencement of the action, the mats, with which the galleon had stuffed her netting, took fire, blazing up half as high as the mizen top. This accident threw the enemy into great terror, and, not a little alarmed the commodore, lest she should be burnt, and he might suffer by her driving to board him. However, the Spaniards at length extinguished the flames, by cutting away the netting, and tumbling it into the sea.

All

All this while, the Centurion kept her advantageous situation, and continued firing, with great regularity; while the galleon's decks lay open to her top-men, who were drove off at the first volley; they also made prodigious havock with their small arms, killing or maiming every officer, that appeared on the quarter-deck, and wounding even the general himself. Now the Centurion was close along side of the galleon, and swept their decks so effectually with her grape shot, that they began to fall into great disorder, the general being no longer capable of exerting himself. Their confusion was visible from on board the commodore, and after having fired five or six guns, with more judgement than usual, they yielded up the contest.

When the action was over the commodore determin'd within himself to make the best of his way with his prize to Canton. In the mean time his deeper thoughts were employed in securing the prisoners, and removing the treasure into the Centurion, which ship was doubtless better provided against all the casualties of winds and seas than the galleon. The securing the prisoners was a matter of the utmost importance, they being double the number of his own people; and some of them having observed how slenderly he was manned, could not forbear expressing themselves with great indignation, to be thus beaten by boys. The commodore therefore placing all but the officers and wounded in the hold, made a square partition of thick planks, in the form of a funnel, to communicate as much air to them as possible; and four swivel-guns loaded with musquet balls were fixed at the mouth of each funnel, and a centinel, with a lighted match, to fire into the hold amongst them, in case of any disturbance. The officers were all accommodated in the first lieutenant's cabin, under a guard of six men; and the general, being wounded, lay in the commodore's cabin, with a centinel always over him; while every prisoner was apprised that the least commotion would be punished with immediate death.

June 30, at six in the evening, the commodore got sight of Cape Delangano, the next day he made the Bashee islands, and stood thorough, between Grafton and Monmouth islands, where the passage seemed clear. July 8, they discovered the island of Supata, the westernmost of the Lema islands; and on the 11th, having taken on board two Chinese pilots, one in the *Centurion*, the other in the prize, they came to an anchor off the city of Macao.

By this time the particulars of the prize were well ascertained, which amounted to 1,313,843 pieces of eight, 35,682 oz. of virgin silver; some cochineal, and other commodities; which, with the damage done to the enemy, and their other captures, at Payta, did doubtless exceed a million sterling, excluding the expence of Pizarro's squadron; all which articles make an exorbitant sum, and are the strongest proofs of the utility of such expeditions in case of a rupture with Spain.

July 14, the commodore, with his prize, cast anchor short of the Bocca Tygris, which is a narrow passage forming the mouth of the river of Canton; when a boat with an officer was sent off from the Mandarin, to examine what the ships were, and from whence they came. After he had finished his enquiries, he desired to leave two custom-house officers behind him; on which, the commodore told him, that tho' as a man of war, he had nothing to do with customs or duties of any kind, yet he would permit two of his people to be left on board, who might be witnesses how punctually he should comply with their instructions. The commodore weighed from hence on the 5th, ordering the pilot to carry him by the forts of Bocca Tygris, threatening him, that if the ship ran a ground, he would instantly hang him up at the yard-arm. The pilot, carried the ships safely through; the forts not attempting to dispute the passage. July 16, the commodore sent his second lieutenant to Canton, with a letter for the viceroy, informing him the reason of his putting into that port; and that he himself soon proposed to pay a visit to his excellency. The lieutenant  
was



was civilly received, and promised, that an answer should be sent to Mr. Anson the next day.

In the mean time, the commodore gave leave to several of the Spanish officers, his prisoners, to go to Canton upon parole; where the regency examined them, asking by what means they came into Mr. Anson's power. To this they answered, that the kings of Great Britain and Spain were at war, and they were conquered in an engagement. Being questioned as to their usage on board, they frankly confessed, it was better than they expected. This confession from an enemy, and the vast treasure in the prize, contributed greatly to the esteem and reverence of the Chinese nation, with respect to Mr. Anson.

July 20, three Mandarins came on board, and delivered to the commodore the viceroy's order for a daily supply of provisions, and for pilots to carry his ship up the river as far as the second bar; and at the same time delivered him an answer to his letter sent to Canton; wherein his excellency desired to be excused from the commodore's visit during the hot season; but that in September, when the weather was more temperate, he should be glad to see Mr. Anson, with the English captain of the other ship. The Mandarins now began to talk about the duties to be paid by his ships; when the commodore plainly told them, he would never submit to any demand of that kind, as he neither brought any merchandize thither, nor intended to carry any away; and that his master expressly forbade him from paying any acknowledgement for his ship's anchoring in any port whatever. Being thus cut short on this subject; they added, there was another thing remaining, the only one they had in charge. This was a request to the commodore, that he would release the prisoners he had taken on board the galleon. Mr. Anson, though very desirous to get rid of them, at first raised some difficulties, to enhance the favour; but at last told the Mandarins, that, to show his readiness to oblige the viceroy, he would set them all at liberty, whenever the Chinese would order boats to fetch them off. July 28,

two junks were sent from Canton to carry them to Macao ; and the commodore dismissed them all, pursuant to his promise ; directing his purser to give them eight days provisions for their subsistence.

The ships now, by virtue of the viceroy's permit, found no difficulty in procuring their daily provisions ; yet they could not proceed to England without laying in a large quantity both of these, and naval stores for the voyage ; which occasioned great perplexity. The commodore, indeed, had agreed with people at Canton, to furnish him with biscuit, and whatever else he wanted, and his linguist assured him, from day to day, that all was ready. But a fortnight was elapsed and nothing brought ; Mr. Anson, therefore had soon the vexation to be informed, that no order had been procured from the viceroy, and the whole was an illusion. It were endless to recount all the frauds and extortions, which were practised on the commodore and his crew, by these faithless and interested people. The method of buying provision here, being only by weight, a large parcel of fowls and ducks were bought for the ships's store, the greatest part of which presently died, and it was thought they were poisoned ; but, on examination, it appeared, they had been crammed with stones and gravel, to encrease their weight ; which, in most of the ducks amounted to ten ounces. The hogs too, which were bought ready killed of the Chinese butchers, had water injected into them, for the same purpose ; so that when a carcase was hung up all night for the water to drain out, it generally lost half a stone of its weight before morning. If we bought them alive, they gave them salt to encrease their thirst, which excited them to drink great quantities of water. These few instances, out of a number more of the like nature, may serve as a specimen of the manners of this celebrated nation, which is too often recommended to the rest of the world as an example of all laudable qualities.

Towards the end of September, the commodore having found out, that they who had agreed to supply him

him with provisions and naval stores, deceived him; and that the viceroy had not invited him to an interview; he sent a message to the Mandarin, who attended the ship, to inform him, that he was resolved to proceed in his boat to Canton on the first of October, and notify his arrival to the viceroy, the day he got there. The Mandarin returned for answer, that he would acquaint the viceroy with his design. The boat's crew, which Mr. Anson proposed to take with him, were clothed all alike in a dress resembling that of the watermen on the Thames. They were in number 18, and a coxswain, dressed in scarlet jackets and blue silk waistcoats, the whole trimmed with silver buttons, and silver badges on their jackets and caps. And as it was asserted the customary duties would be demanded by the regency, for the Centurion and her prize, before they granted a permission for victualling the ship; the commodore resolving not to establish so dishonourable a precedent, took all possible precaution to prevent these unreasonable pretensions, by having him in their power at Canton. He, therefore, the better to secure his ship and treasure, appointed Mr. Brett to be captain of the Centurion under him, directing him if he, the commodore, should be detained, to take out the men from the galleon, and destroy her; then to proceed down the river thro' the Bocca Tygris, with the Centurion alone, and there remain till further orders from Mr. Anson. The Bocca Tygris is a narrow passage, little more than 200 miles over, formed by two points of land, on each of which is a fort; that on the starboard being a battery on the water's edge, with twelve iron cannon mounted, seeming to be four or six pounders: the fort on the larboard, is a large castle, situated on a high rock, and furnished with ten cannon, none of which exceed six pounders. These are all the defences which secure the river of Canton, and which they think are sufficient to prevent any enemy from forcing his way thorough.

The necessary orders above-mentioned being given, which the Chinese were apprised of; it should seem as

P p

if

if their deliberations, in some sort, had been ruffled thereby: and yet they could not depart at once from their evasive conduct. For when the commodore, in the morning of the 1st of October, was ready to set out for Canton, his linguist came to him, from the Mandarin that attended the ship, to tell him, that a letter had been received from the viceroy of Canton, desiring Mr. Anson to postpone his going thither for two or three days; but in the afternoon of the same day, another Linguist came on board, who, with seeming fright, told Mr. Anson, the viceroy had expected him that day; that the council was assembled; that the troops were under arms to receive him; and that the viceroy was highly offended at the disappointment. This plausible story gave the commodore great concern, as he imagined there was some treachery forming against him, which he could not fathom. And though the whole afterwards appeared a fiction, and not a single article had the least foundation; this artifice was so well supported by the Chinese merchants, that in three days afterwards, the commodore received a letter, signed by all the supercargoes of the English ships, intimating their fears, that some insult would be offered to his boat, if he should come thither, before the viceroy was fully satisfied of the mistake. To this Mr. Anson replied, that he did not believe there had been any mistake; but that all was a mere forgery, of the Chinese, to prevent his visiting the viceroy; that therefore he would certainly come soon up to Canton, being confident they would not dare to insult him, well knowing he wanted neither power nor inclination to make them a suitable return.

October 13, all the supercargoes of the English, Danish, and Swedish ships came on board the *Centurion*, to accompany him to Canton, for which place he set out the same day, in his barge, attended by his own boats, and by those of the trading ships. As he passed by Wampo, where the European vessels lay, he was saluted by all of them, except the French. In the evening he arrived safely at Canton, and was visited by the

the principal merchants, who affected to be much pleased he had met with no obstruction in coming up, and took care to insinuate, that as soon as the viceroy was informed of his arrival, a time would be immediately appointed for the visit. The next day the merchants returned to Mr. Anson, and told him, that the viceroy was so busy, there was no getting admittance to him at present; but though the commodore well knew that this was a falsehood, propagated by the Chinese among the supercargoes; he resolved to continue passive, as long as it should appear that he lost no time. In pursuance of this resolution, he proposed to the English, that he would not take any immediate step for getting admittance to the viceroy, provided the Chinese, who contracted to furnish his provisions, would let him see his bread was baked, his meat salted, and his stores prepared with the utmost dispatch: but if it was not ready to be shipped off in forty days, then he was determined to apply to the viceroy himself. These were the terms Mr. Anson thought proper to offer to quiet the uneasiness of the supercargoes; accordingly these preparations were now going on, and the commodore being on the spot, took care to hasten them as much as possible.

November 24, when all was compleated, Mr. Anson sent one of his officers to the Mandarin, who commanded the guard of the principal gate of the city, with a letter directed to the vice-roy. The Mandarin received the messenger civilly, took down the contents in Chinese, and promised the viceroy should be immediately acquainted with them; also to send his answer to the commodore.

Two days after this, a fire broke out in the suburbs of Canton. On the first alarm, Mr. Anson went thither, with his officers and boat's crew, to assist the Chinese; where he perceived, that, by pulling down some of the adjacent sheds, it might be easily extinguished. Hereupon he ordered his people to begin with tearing them down, which was presently attempted; and had been soon executed; but, in the mean time, Mr. Anson

was told, that the Mandarin alone had power to direct on these Occasions, and that he, the commodore, would be answerable for all that was pulled down by his command : hereupon all his people immediately desisted ; and he sent them to the English factory, to help secure the company's treasure and effects ; while the Chinese contented themselves with viewing the flames, and now and then holding one of their idols before them, which they seemed to expect would stop the progress. The Mandarin, indeed, came at last, attended by 4 or 500 fire-men, who, wanting both skill and spirit, were incapable of checking the violence of the fire ; so that the whole city was in danger. In this confusion the viceroy himself came thither, and the commodore was sent for to afford his assistance, being told he might take what measures he should think most prudent in the present emergency. He, upon this message, went a second time, taking with him about 40 people, who in sight of the whole city, exerted themselves after so extraordinary a manner, as was, in that country, without example. By their activity and resolution the fire was soon extinguished, to the amazement of the Chinese : and the seamen, notwithstanding their daring behaviour, escaped with no other injuries, than some bruises.

In this fire were consumed 100 shops and eleven streets, full of warehouses ; so that the loss amounted to an immense sum. One of the Chinese merchants, well known to the English, whose name was Succoy, for his own share lost 200,000 l. While the fire was in its height, some of the most considerable merchants came to Mr. Anson, to desire he would let each of them have one of his soldiers, as they called them, to guard their warehouses, which, from the known dishonesty of the populace, they feared would be pillaged in the tumult. Mr. Anson granted their request ; and the men thus employed, behaved so well, that the merchants highly applauded their diligence and fidelity.

Next morning, many of the principal inhabitants waited upon the commodore ; to thank him for his assistance,

assistance, and frankly owned, that he had preserved their city from being totally consumed. Soon after a message came to the commodore from the viceroy, appointing the 30th of November for his audience. This was a circumstance, with which Mr. Anson was much pleased, since he was satisfied, they had agreed to give up their pretensions to the duties claimed, and were willing to grant him all he could reasonably expect.

At ten in the morning, on the day appointed, a Mandarin came to the commodore, to let him know that the viceroy was prepared: on which, he and his retinue set out immediately. At the outer gate of the city he found a guard of 200 soldiers ready to receive him; these attended him to the great parade before the emperor's palace, where the viceroy resided. In this place a body of 10,000 troops were drawn up under arms, and new clothed. The commodore, with his retinue passed thro' the middle of them; and then was conducted to the great hall of audience, where the viceroy sat under a rich canopy, in the emperor's chair of state, with all his council of Mandarins attending. The commodore was placed in a vacant seat, the third in order from the viceroy; there being only two chiefs of the law, and of the treasury, who had the precedence.

When the commodore was seated, he addressed himself to the viceroy by his interpreter \*, and began with the various methods he had formerly taken to

---

\* *This person, who, upon the present occasion, and many others, was of singular service to the commodore, had been left at Canton, when a youth, by the late captain Rigby. The leaving him there, to learn the Chinese language, was a step taken by that commander, merely from a persuasion of the considerable advantages, which the East India company might one day receive from an English interpreter. They called him Mr. Flint; and he repeated before the viceroy what was given in charge by Mr. Anson, with great boldness, and, doubtless, with exactness.*

procure an audience. On mentioning this, the viceroy interrupted the interpreter; bidding him tell Mr. Anson, that the first intelligence he received was from his last letter. Mr. Anson then told him, that the subjects of Great Britain, trading to China, had complained to him of the vexations and impositions, both of the merchants and inferior officers, to which they were obliged to submit, by reason of the difficulty of getting access to the Mandarins, who alone could grant them redress; and that it was his duty, as an officer of the king of Great Britain, to lay before his excellency the grievances of the British subjects; which he hoped the viceroy would take into consideration, and give orders, that hereafter there should be no just reason for complaint. Here Mr. Anson stopped, in expectation of an answer: but nothing being said, the commodore asked the interpreter, if the viceroy understood what he had urged. The interpreter replied, he was certain he did; and believed no answer would be made. Mr. Anson then represented to the viceroy the case of the ship *Hasslingfield*, which, having lost her masts on the coast of China, had arrived in the river of Canton a little time before; complaining that the people on board her had been great sufferers by the fire; and that the captain, in particular, had all his goods burnt; having also lost, in the confusion, a chest of treasure, containing 4500 tael, which were supposed to be stolen by the Chinese boat-men. To this the viceroy made answer, that in settling the emperor's customs for that ship, some abatement should be made for his losses.

The commodore having now dispatched the business with which the officers of the East India company had intrusted him; he acquainted the viceroy, that the proper season was now set, for his returning to Europe, and that he wanted a licence to ship off his provisions and stores, which were all ready; adding, that as soon as they should be got on board, he would leave Canton, and make the best of his way to England. The viceroy replied, his licence should be immediately granted,



granted, and every thing ordered on board the next day. After this, the viceroy, in civil terms, acknowledged how much the Chinese were obliged to him for his signal services at the fire, and owned that he had saved the city from destruction; closing his discourse with wishing the commodore a prosperous voyage.

As soon as the commodore was out of the hall, he was strongly importuned to go into another apartment, where an entertainment was provided; and being informed that the viceroy was not present, he did not accept the invitation, but returned; being attended in the same manner as at his arrival, and was saluted with three guns, which are as many as, in that country, are ever fired on any ceremony. Thus, Mr. Anson, at last, finished this troublesome affair, to his entire satisfaction: but, tho' this was a point of importance, he was more particularly attentive to the precedent established on this occasion; by which his majesty's ships of war are, for the future, exempted from all demands of duty in any of the ports of China.

Pursuant to the viceroy's promise, the provisions, &c. begun to be sent on board the next day, and were so soon compleated, that, on the 7th of December, the Centurion with her prize unmoored, and passed thro' the Bocca Tygris on the 10th; when the garrison affected to shew themselves as much as possible; which we supposed was to induce us to think more reverently of their military power; tho' some of our observers, from the appearance of their armour, affirmed, that instead of steel, it was composed only of a sort of glittering paper.

On the 12th we anchored before Macao, where the commodore sold the prize to some merchants there, for 6000 dollars; and having before learnt from the English merchant-ships at Canton, that the war with Spain was still continued, he resolved to make all possible expedition in getting home. On the 3d of January they anchored at Prince's island, in the streights of Sunda, to wood and water; and on the 11th of March arrived at the Cape of Good Hope. Here the  
commo-

commodore entered about forty new men, and on the 3d of April put again to sea. By the 12th of June they got sight of the Lizzard, and on the 15th came safe to an anchor at Spithead. Thus was this voyage finished, which lasted three years and nine months.

We are now at the close of this chapter, in which our history of the circumnavigators will be completed; but before we conclude, it must be observed, that, notwithstanding this expedition was not attended with so great success as might be expected; yet, it plainly appears, that, if the commodore's whole squadron had got round with him into the South Seas, he would have been able to have done much greater things than any of our commanders have hitherto in those parts performed. It is sufficiently obvious how different an aspect this expedition bore at its first appointment in the beginning of January, from what it had when the squadron left the channel in the end of September following, by the various incidents which occurred in that interval. Instead of having young and able seamen, which the commodore was at first promised, he was obliged to retain those who were old and infirm: and a deficiency of 300 men in the numbers of his crews, was no otherwise made up to him, than by sending on board 170, the greatest part of whom were discharged from hospitals, or new-raised marines, who had never been at sea before. The land forces allotted him were still more disadvantageous to his purpose; for instead of three independent companies, he was forced to put up with 470 invalids and marines, part wore out with age and infirmities, and the other part rendered useless by their ignorance of duty. Nor was the diminution of the strength of his squadron the greatest inconvenience that attended these alterations: for the difficulties which they daily produced, occasioned a delay, and waste of time that was the cause of all the disasters, to which this enterprize was afterwards made liable; for by this means they were obliged to make the passage round Cape Horn in the most tempestuous season of the year. To this delay also, may be justly attributed the

the separation of the squadron; the great loss of the men, and the imminent danger of the commodore's own destruction.

Upon the whole, therefore, we would have the reader remark, that, if the commodore was disappointed, on his first setting out, of the force he expected; of the proper season to put out to sea; and was afterwards ruined by storms and diseases; what shall we say to his taking several valuable prizes, in the South Seas, and to his sacking Payta, when he was incapable of making any vigorous resistance? Again, if after their long cruise in the South Seas their distresses obliged them to take shelter in the island of Tinian; if the lying at Macao was attended with inconveniencies; if the taking the Spanish galleon be a thing almost incredible, considering the small number of men the commodore had in the *Centurion*, and the condition they were in; if the difficulties they met with in the river of Canton, and the danger he run in visiting the viceroy; if the glorious struggle he there made to exempt British men of war from paying duty on the coast of China, and the care he took of the East India company's affairs, are circumstances worthy of regard; who can be displeased with his proceedings? But farther, was not his perilous navigation from Canton to Portsmouth, with a company of men, or rather boys, composed of different nations, and in the midst of a French war, still more amazing? What does all this prove? Why as all this was, next under God, owing to the wise conduct of the commanding officer, it certainly proves, that if a right choice be made of commanders, there are no dangers, no difficulties, but what may be overcome.

*For a more full and particular account of the uncommon incidents, and very singular naval achievements, which attended the operations of commodore Anson, now lord Anson's squadron; we shall refer the reader to the narrative written by the reverend Mr. R. WALTER, chaplain of his Majesty's ship the Centurion, which appears to be taken from his lordship's own papers, and is*

Qq

printed

*printed for Mess. John and Paul Knapton's, in Ludgate Street, to which work, as well as to those of Dr. Harris, Bulkley, Pascoe Thomas, Cummins, Campbel, &c. &c. this abstract of his voyage may serve for a proper index or summary of the whole.*

Having therefore been obliged to consult a multiplicity of authors, in compiling this little history; and at the same time, taken particular care to omit nothing material, nor to insert any thing superfluous; it may be requisite to add a few reflections on a matter very nearly connected with these voyages, and, as we conceive, not unworthy the attention of the public; as they tend to facilitate the passage round Cape Horn; which to us truly appears an enterprize, by no means so difficult, or dangerous, as, by some, is represented. The principal source of all the misfortunes which our adventurers have encountered in this navigation; has been entirely owing to their unseasonable departure from England. To prevent these disasters for the future, we would advise the commanders of all ships which are bound to the Pacific Ocean, never to attempt doubling Cape Horn, but in December and January; that is, the height of summer, and even then, to run into 61, or 62 degrees south latitude, before they stand to the westward.

Another great embarrassment, with which our navigations to the South Seas are incumbered, is, there being scarcely any other place for our cruisers to refresh at, on their first entrance into that immense ocean at present, than the islands of Juan Fernandez; and whilst we are obliged to touch on the coast of Brasil, all our expeditions of that nature must be in danger of proving ineffectual; as evidently appears from the treatment commodore Anson met with at St. Catharines; notwithstanding this place has been more than once recommended in the course of this history, as the most convenient for the purpose. The finding another port, therefore, to the south, where our cruisers might take in necessary stores for their voyages round Cape Horn, surely ought to be considered as an affair of the utmost

utmost importance to Great Britain: for as the Spaniards derive all that wealth, which makes them and their allies so formidable in Europe, from these parts; it is our business to distress them here, in case of a rupture; tho' these kind of enterprizes can never be so successfully executed, as they would by such a discovery.

We already have a blind account of two places, extremely well situated for the purpose aforementioned. One of which is called Pepy's island, which was discovered by captain Cowley, in the year 1686; the other is the Falkland isles, which have been seen both by French and English ships. Nay, captain Woodes Rogers tells us, he run along the north east coast of these islands in the year 1708, and that they stretched two degrees in length; seemed to be good land, full of easy descents; were interspersed with woods, and afforded some convenient harbours. To this account it may not be improper to remark, that the duke and dutchess were but thirty five days from losing sight of these islands, to their arrival at Juan Fernandez. Now, as small vessels in times of peace are the most proper to be employed in discoveries of this nature, it is greatly to be wished, that those right honourable noblemen, and gentlemen, to whom the management of our naval affairs is committed, would order one or both these places to be carefully examined, and the whole coast of Patagonia, Staten-land, and Terra del Fuego, to be surveyed. This work would render all our southern navigations infinitely more secure; be of great consequence to this nation in time of war; and in all probability, we might thereby establish a commerce, and lasting correspondence with the Chilian Indians.

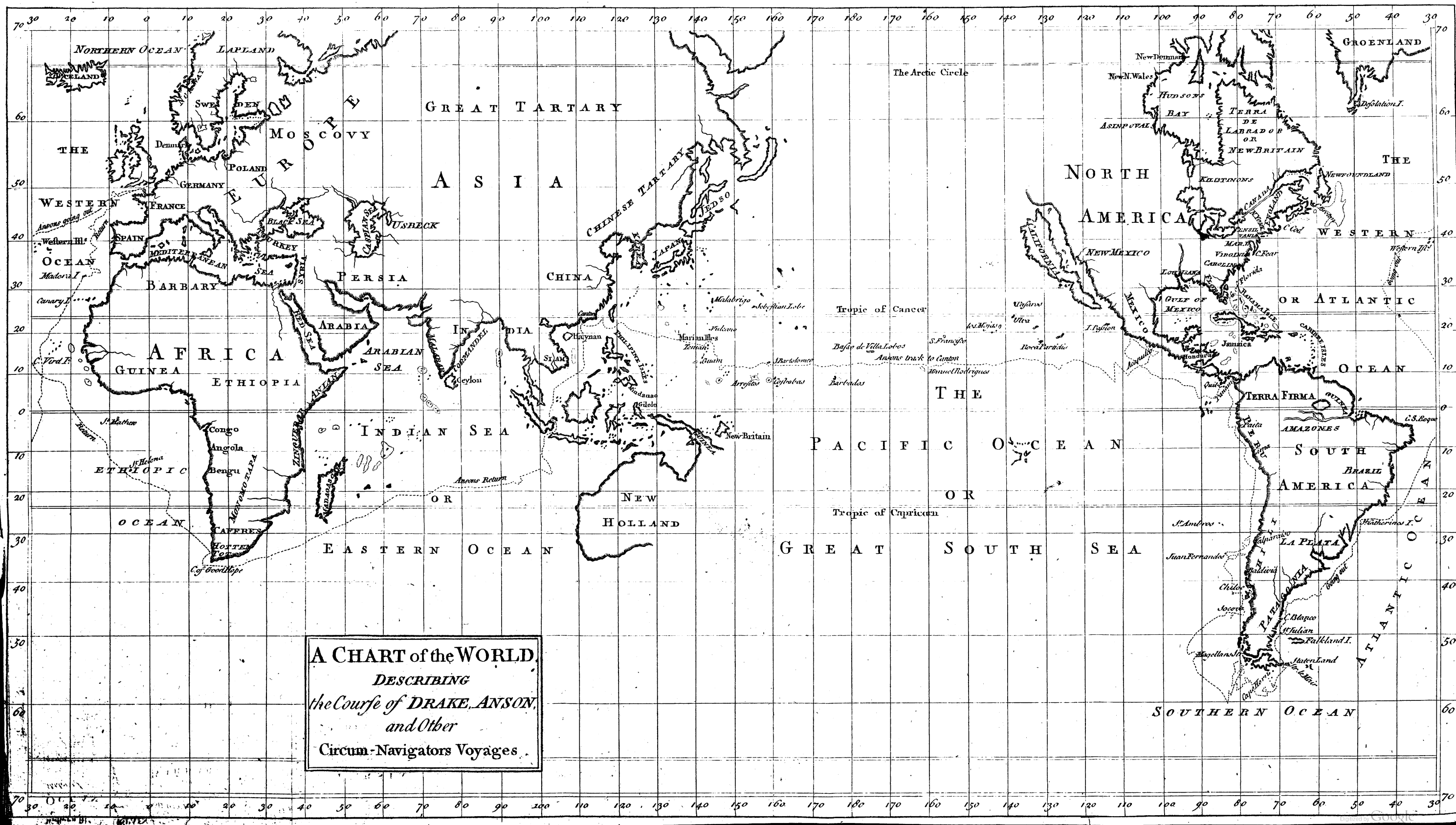
*The END of the first Volume.*



To make this volume as complete as possible, we have here joined the following table, that the reader may, at one view, behold this series of voyages, in the order of time in which they were performed.

**The NAMES of all the CIRCUM-NAVIGATORS.**

	<i>The Ports from whence and Times when they sailed.</i>		<i>The Dates of their respective Returns.</i>
Ferdinand Magellan	—	—	September 6, 1522.
Sir Francis Drake	—	—	September 16, 1586.
Sir Thomas Cavendish	—	—	September 9, 1588.
Oliver Van Noort	—	—	August 26, 1601.
George Spilbergen	—	—	July the 1st, 1617.
William Schovten and James Le Maire	—	—	July the 1st, 1617.
The Naffau Fleet.	—	—	January 21, 1626.
Captain Cowley	—	—	October 12, 1686.
Captain William Dampier	—	—	September 16, 1691.
Captain Dampier and Mr. Funnell	—	—	August 26, 1706.
Captains Rogers and Courtney	—	—	October 1, 1711.
Captain John Clipperton	—	—	June ——— 1722.
Captain George Shelvocke	—	—	August the 1st, 1722.
Commodore Roggewein	—	—	July the 11th, 1744.
Commodore Anfon, now Lord Anfon	—	—	June the 15th, 1744.
	Seville, in Spain,	— August 10,	1519.
	Plymouth Sound,	December 30,	1577.
	Plymouth,	— July 10,	1586.
	Goeree,	— September 13,	1598.
	Texel,	— August 8,	1614.
	Texel,	— June 24,	1615.
	Goeree,	— April 9,	1623.
	Achamack, in Virginia,	Aug. 23,	1683.
	Achamack,	— August 23,	1683.
	Downs,	— April 30,	1703.
	Bristol,	— June 15,	1708.
	Plymouth,	— February 15,	1719.
	Plymouth,	— February 15,	1719.
	Texel,	— July 16,	1721.
	St. Helen's,	— September 18,	1740.



A CHART of the WORLD.  
DESCRIBING  
the Course of DRAKE, ANSON,  
and Other  
Circum-Navigators Voyages.





**BOOKS** Printed for and Sold by **W. OWEN,**  
at **Homer's Head, Fleet-Street.**

(With his **MAJESTY'S** Royal Licence and Protection)

In Large **OCTAVO;**

Each Number containing Three Sheets of Letter-Press,  
beautifully printed on a new Letter and fine Paper,  
with four Copper Plates finely engraved, Price only  
Six Pence each Number,

**A**

**NEW and COMPLETE  
DICTIONARY  
OF**

**ARTS and SCIENCES;**

Comprehending all the Branches of Useful Knowledge;

By a Society of **GENTLEMEN.**

In this Work will be contained accurate Descriptions of Mathematical and Philosophical Instruments in general, according to the latest Improvements, with exact Drawings of them on Copper-plates, not to be found in any other Book extant.

The whole to be comprized in 74 Numbers; if more, they shall be delivered gratis to the Subscribers, with all the Copper-Plates in this Work, containing upwards of three Hundred.

As the utmost Care has been taken to make this Dictionary quite complete, the public may be assured they will never be burdened with any Supplement to it.

**W. OWEN,**

**BOOKS** Printed for and Sold by **W. OWEN,**  
at **Homer's Head, Fleet-Street.**

**A** Dissertation on the Use of **SEA-WATER** in the Diseases of the Glands; particularly, the Scurvy, Jaundice, King's-Evil, Leprosy, and the Glandular Consumption. Translated from the Latin of **R. Ruffel, M. D.** The second Edition, revised, and carefully corrected by an eminent Physician. Price bound 2s. 6d.

**A New History of FRANCE,** by Question and Answer, compiled from the most eminent French Historians, for the Instruction of the Children of a Noble Family. By **Richard Rolt,** Author of the History of the late War, &c. Giving a particular and accurate Account of the ancient and present State of that Monarchy, and the several Alterations in its Polity; with the Rise and Consequences of the Wars and Revolutions which have happened in that kingdom; likewise a particular History of each King from **Pharamond,** in the Year 420, to his present Majesty **Lewis XV.** and an Account of the most eminent Men who flourished in each Reign. Being a proper Supplement to the History of England, by Question and Answer, which has been so well received by the Public, and very necessary to be read by every Person who is desirous of understanding the Nature of the Constitution, Power and Interest of France, as also its Connexions with other Nations, and particularly with Great-Britain. Beautifully printed in a neat Pocket Volume. Price bound 3s.

**The Life of Patty Saunders,** written by Herself. Price bound 3s.

**The Edinburgh History of the Rebellion, 1744, and 1745,** with **Dr. Cameron's Papers.** 12mo. bound 3s.

**A General History of the STAGE,** from its Origin. Dedicated to **Mr. Garrick.** 8vo. Price bound 4s.

**MANNERS :**

*Books Printed for and Sold by W. Owen.*

**MANNERS:** A correct and elegant Translation of *Les Moeurs*; with the original Frontispiece, neatly printed in a Pocket Volume. Price bound 3s.

**The English Pleader;** being a select Collection of various Precedents of Declarations on Actions brought in the Court of King's Bench and Common-Pleas at Westminster, in Case, Debt, Covenant, Trespass, Trespass and Assault, Ejectment, Replevin, Prohibition, &c. Taken from the Rolls of the Treasury in the said Courts, and Forms settled by Counsel and Special Pleaders, since the Commencement of the Act of Parliament for the Laws being in the English Language. By a Gentleman of Lincoln's-Inn. The second Edition, in one Volume, 8vo. Price bound 5s.

**A Lady's Religion;** in two Letters to the Hon. Lady Howard. The third Edition. By a Divine of the Church of England. Price 1s. 6d.

**The Theory of Agreeable Sensations.** Price bound, 2s.

**The DREAMER.** Beautifully printed in one Vol. Octavo. Price bound 5s.

**Life and Adventures of Owen Tudor, Prince of Wales.** Price 2s.

Just Publish'd, (Price only 2s. 6d. bound) earnestly recommended to all Families, (being very proper to be read at this Time, as so many of late Years have been tempted to commit this horrid Crime, upon the supposition of their being able to do it so secretly, that it should never come to Light.)

**A WARNING-PIECE** against the Crime of Murder; or, an Account of many extraordinary and most providential Discoveries of secret Murders. From whence it will appear, that however secretly they are committed,

*Books Printed for and Sold by W. Owen.*

committed, Providence will interpose, and bring them to Light and Punishment.

The Rudiments of **PHYSIC**, described and explained in the most easy and familiar Manner, by way of Dialogue between a Physician and his Pupil: Compiled for the Use of young Students in Physic, and those who are put to Apothecaries either in Town or Country; to give them a thorough Insight into the Grounds of the Art. By the celebrated John Groenvelt, M. D. Price 5s.

The Remarkable and Entertaining History of the twenty-three Years Captivity and Adventures among the Moors in Barbary, of Thomas Pellow, of Penryn in the County of Cornwall, who was taken by the Sallee Rovers, and carried into Slavery to Mequinez, at eleven Years of age. Price 3s.

**WINTER-EVENINGS ENTERTAINMENT**: Consisting of the best Novels and Histories that could be collected from the best Writers of various Countries; among which is the celebrated History of Theagenes and Chariclea, allowed by all good Judges, to be the most entertaining and best calculated Novel ever published. In Two Pocket Volumes. Price bound 6s,

**MOTIVES and INCENTIVES** to the Love of God, pathetically discoursed of in such a Manner, as may excite the warmest Devotion, and most fervent Love towards God. In a Letter from the Hon. Robert Boyle, to a young Gentleman for whom he had a great Value. Price 2s 6d.

The **VERMIN-KILLER**, being a necessary Family Book, shewing a ready Way to destroy all sorts of Vermin. Price 6d.

The **GARDENER'S POCKET-BOOK**. Price 6d.







